

独一无二的天赋觉醒，逆天改命
校园争霸，商场角逐，武功高下，异能比拼，逆天改命
最强妖孽的崛起之路

ARCHFIEND

BOOK 03

Uncanny Night Visitor

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Archfiend

(最强妖孽)

by

Uncanny Night Visitor

(厄夜怪客)

Synopsis

Qi Condensation. Foundation Establishment. Core Formation. In the current world, only these three realms are known to be achievable. Nascent Soul is but a legend and the realms above it lost to the the long river of time. The modern era is known as Cultivation Civilization, a balance of power and civility, excess and moderation. While cultivation remains a secret practice, it has long since exposed itself to the mundane world, quietly intertwined with each facet of society. While the world appears to be at peace, what lies underneath is a conflict between human, cultivator, and demon, brewing for ages and waiting to implode. Yet in the wake of humanity's rapid industrialization, qi—and consequently cultivation—is dying.

Besieged on all sides by demon and human, Xu Yangyi, our protagonist, strives to reach the apex, armed only with esoteric knowledge and his cool pragmatism, and to avenge the unjust deaths of both his parents. Embroiled in conspiracy and with adversity waiting at each turn, he is undeterred in his conquest to seek the Grand Dao and break free of this world's shackles, claiming his title as the pioneer of an era!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by XTB @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Danxia Temple (20)

After a full hour, the qi vortex completely entered Xu Yangyi's body. He then opened his eyes. Late-stage Qi Condensation! The foundation platform had appeared! Already, he had touched the the border truly leading into cultivation. At the moment, that which he had to do was sprint towards Foundation Establish with maximum strength.

However, how challenging was that?

A scale of one among a hundred, that was the rarity of cultivators bound for Foundation Establishment. If said that Core Formation ancestors were China's apex military strength, then it wouldn't be an exaggeration to say that Foundation Establishment was the cornerstone.

There were less than 20,000 Foundation Establishment cultivators keeping watch on all sides, only existing due to the solid system of Cultivation Civilization nowadays. Once Foundation Establishment was achieved, all parties' olive branches simply couldn't be finished taken. Even lousier Foundation Establishment would be given heavy responsibility!

The Featherwood Guard's position of regional chancellor could only be taken charge of by a Foundation Establishment cultivator. The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion's position of regional director further required that one be a Foundation Establishment cultivator. Each provincial deputy branch master of Heavens Law and every one of the CSIB's VIPs needed to be at the Foundation Establishment realm! At Foundation Establishment, one could already establish a sect. An initial-stage Foundation Establishment senior was enough to support an upper second-rate clan!

"Is this the late stage of Qi Condensation...?" Xu Yangyi collected his thoughts and clenched his fists. He felt inside his body a kind of sensation that was at least a fold greater than in the past. It was

supremely gratifying.

Such a feeling originated from the firmness that he could feel from his fleshly body. It laid with the degree of vigorousness that he could sense of the qi inside his body. Furthermore, his spiritual sense was already able to extend over 300 meters in distance!

Without engaging someone in arcane combat, spiritual sense was the most direct method of reflection. These 300 meters could be said to be Xu Yangyi's absolute domain! So long as he willed it, the wind would blow and the grass would stir within this 300 meter radius. He was able to be clearly aware of everything!

"Is this also the Eternal Alchemy Canon's merit...?" His gaze slightly flickered because he had read through many teaching materials. In the late stage of Qi Condensation, the currently known peak spiritual sense was 298 meters. As for this record, it came from Sunnihilator. This was humanity's once-in-a-century genius!

Unexpectedly, his spiritual sense had surpassed the other's by two meters! Yet his qualifications back then weren't enough to make Sunnihilator's stone stele shatter into pieces at all. All that was left behind was a deep scar.

"Ten Cardinals Red Lotus..." A pride towards strength welled up in his heart. He didn't face upwards and cry out loudly but rather inhaled deeply, using his first divine ability.

ROAR! A fierce roar rang out. From his hand, a fire dragon, a full ten-plus meters bigger than from the past, screamed and came forth from! It seemed as if it wanted to burn up this fog sea! However... it wasn't limited in only this way!

"The color changed?" Xu Yangyi studied it carefully for a few seconds, believing himself to be mistaken. Nonetheless, he now confirmed... that he wasn't wrong! Indeed, the color had changed... The Ten Cardinals Red Lotus had originally been a deep-red fire dragon. However, he understood quite well that a

deep-red represented a temperature around 700 °C.

But now... it was a golden-orange color! This represented... that the fire dragon had attained a temperature of 1200 °C!!!

And what concept was this?

Quite simply, a volcano. When an active volcano erupted, the magma was no more than 1200 °C!! Already, this fire dragon was enough to compare with a portion of nature's might! It was equivalent to a lava channel that was several tens of meters long!

With such an outstanding transformation, even he couldn't help but to fiercely clench his fists. The sound of his cracking knuckles rang out. It appeared... if he found someone to test it out on... wouldn't they perhaps turn into roasted dog meat?

A certain husky's body was rather huge. Yes... it was worthy of being roasted.

Waving his hand, the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus vanished with a rumble. He restrained his excitement and lowly cried out: "Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron!"

Swoosh! In an instant, a red brilliance swiftly crept over his entire fist. The increase in strength was secondary. Xu Yangyi shockingly discovered that this divine ability... unexpectedly didn't need power to be stored any longer!

Perhaps to say it like so wasn't appropriate. Each of his four divine abilities had their own merits. The Ten Cardinals Red Lotus was a ranged area-of-effect, and Pill Cauldron Builds Spirit and the Spiritcleaver Pulse were blades in the darkness. Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron... was dedicated to attack! It was a killing move with the greatest surface power.

In the middle stage, he could only stand motionlessly in place and store power when he used this move. But now... he could move as he stored power. He could unleash this move whenever he fancied!

As for the the strange talismans that emerged in the wake of

Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron, they were at first only up to his elbow. Now, they climbed up to cover his entire right arm. It looked like an awesome tattoo.

“Worthy of being a divine ability of the Eternal Alchemy Canon.” Xu Yangyi pulled his fist back, fairly satisfied. Likewise, there was good and bad among divine abilities. In the Qi Condensation realm, some divine abilities could exhibit their full might. Usually, the power of these kind of divine abilities were impressive. However, there was a chance that they simply wouldn’t grow with advancement.

In any case, his four presently obtained divine abilities weren’t just absolute in power but varied in application. Furthermore, following the increase of his realm, his divine abilities were akin to slowly unearthed hidden treasures, evidently revealing even more wonder!

“If I reach Foundation Establishment one day, what kind of styles will these divine abilities probably have...? But since that’s how it is, I’ll have to be consider the Smelting God’s Treasure Mirror even more carefully.”

It was unknown how many Qi Condensation cultivators would even sell their bodies to seek a good divine ability. That moreover wasn’t to mention if they had the Smelting God’s Treasure Mirror, a secret Core Formation text. Perhaps they would sell a kidney to buy several divine abilities and immediately fuse them together. His vexation laid with his divine abilities being too strong, not knowing how to easily merge them together.

Calming his excitement for a good moment, he then continued. Presently, he was worried about how to leave. If he couldn’t exit, he would possibly live here until he died of old age. Despite this, how was such a place different from living in a cage?

He had promised so many things, but hadn’t accomplished a single one of them. Would he carelessly die here in such a way?

He was a twenty-seven-year-old at the late stage of Qi Condensation. Placed within the entire nation's eye, he was a peak talent. How could he be willing to die in a nearly undiscoverable place with such gifts?

"Besides... there's still it..." Xu Yangyi moved his hand towards the sword point. He hadn't placed it within his storage ring but rather took it and placed it at his side.

In the end, what secrets were concealed in the sword point that been used by an ancient cultivator who was able to make restrictions with the Godseal Dao? In order to hide it away... an independent space had been specifically established in one of the Eight Great Deadlands?

His finger stroked the ground a few times, yet his brows began to furrow.

Nothing? Where's the sword point? He turned his head in shock and looked, but discovered that the sword point had disappeared! Without a moment's delay, he stood up and vigilantly looked all around him. Could it be... that someone else had entered?

No, he immediately rejected this idea. Leaving this aside, he entered on account of the Animus Armament being spilled with some blood. This action had only then awakened this secret space. Nobody else could even possess the mysterious, ancient pelt scroll.

In that case... was there something else inside this place? He began to narrow his eyes. At first, this was extremely likely. This location was pitch-black, so dark that one couldn't even see their fingers if they stuck out their hand. It wouldn't be unusual at all if there were a few things. However, why hadn't the other party taken advantage of his breakthrough to take his life?

Swoosh... At this time, a red brilliance emerged in the sky. He lifted his head and glanced, but immediately looked at the sky in shock.

As if someone was writing... the sword point was actually in the sky and had already drawn out the wall carvings that twinkled with red light from before! Compared to the original design... it was almost the same! The main focus was that these areas of flickering red light were equally glimmering!

Xu Yangyi tightly locked his eyes on the sky. This place was too weird. Why was the Animus Armament and Danxia Temple related? Why did he originally have the sensation akin to that of a natural predator? Why did he reject the sword point? Yet who had established this place? Why was it established? First, Jiang Shang; later, Sun Bin. Five centuries prior, Zhuge Liang; five centuries later, Liu Bowen. The Legend of the White Snake... As the final bell tolled, what secret was hidden among this?

Countless suspicious followed the emergence of these designs in the sky, flaring once again. However, the present him wasn't of mind to look at these things at all. Secretly, he held a kind of dark feeling. These secrets included the secret of his entry and exit. All was hidden in those wall carvings.

Swoosh swoosh swoosh... The sword point finished carving out all the designs. With a swoosh, it transformed into ordinary iron once more and dropped at the side of his foot. Xu Yangyi mumbled to himself as he picked it up. In his heart, he had a conjecture. For this sword to portray so familiarly... were these wall carvings in themselves carved out from someone wielding this sword?

This person... wanted to tell him something through these wall carvings? He lifted his gaze and attentively studied the strange designs in the air. All the regions twinkling with red light weren't the same. It wasn't that they weren't engraved differently from their wall carvings but rather the regions in themselves were different!

There were some hooks and there were some bends... It seemed fantastically bizarre by every measure and pace, but Xu Yangyi looked at them for merely less than a minute and immediately

drew a sharp breath: “These... are character strokes! They’re assembling a sentence!”

Yes... all Chinese people were familiar with these things. They were the strokes of Chinese characters, accessed by Chinese people everyday! Even he hadn’t expected that these images were unexpectedly from someone wanting to tell a few things!

However, this person’s situation was absolutely dangerous back then. There was an even greater chance that they were being monitored. Already, they were unable to use normal methods to even tell people a vague bit! It HAD to be rather vague, just like...

They were afraid being discovered by something!

Xu Yangyi sat down with his legs crossed and calmed his mind. Perhaps these characters were concealing Danxia Temple’s titanic secret. No matter what, if he wanted to continue, he had to gather this information that wasn’t easily obtained in any way!

The character strokes weren’t many, and his work of piecing them together couldn’t be regarded as especially strenuous. Yet even like so, wanting to find suitable and completely matching words from this boundless sea of Chinese characters was of no ordinary difficulty! Moreover, it was to even form a sentence!

At this moment, the gift of his eidetic memory displayed itself to the peak. If he didn’t have this pill spirit, perhaps his effort and time spent would be explosively increased by over a fold.

Even like this, a full three hours passed. He then lifted his head and surprisingly looked at the marks he had carved out on the ground with his finger. In three hours, the surrounding few tens of meters around him had already been carved full of scars. It was like the process of a tangram being put together.

At this moment, he studied the characters that had appeared before him in shock. He almost dared not believe in his eyes!

This was it!

Among countless characters, there was only this explanation. To say it clearly, not a single stroke had been left out! Xu Yangyi dared to confirm that this person... wanted to leave behind this sentence!

However... this sentence caused him to turn terribly grave!

“I, am, at, the, bottom, of, Dan, Xia, Temple, save, me!”

He suddenly stood up and cautiously surveyed each character. This... was a message coming from centuries to even a thousand years ago! As for this person, it was quite possible that he was the one who established this space!

Such a might figure had actually been imprisoned at the bottom of Danxia Temple! If the bottom of Danxia Temple was truly like what he knew... then what kind of monster was that fish? To say that it was a demon that could burn through the heavens wasn't an exaggeration!

Who was imprisoned at the bottom of Danxia Temple?! After the honeycomb wall, what kind of secrets were concealed?

What kind of demon could force a cultivator, who was at the very least Nascent Soul, to leave this desperate cry? Xu Yangyi's premonition of a mortal nemesis... did it originate from the giant demon?

“Huff...” Xu Yangyi took a deep breath, his heartbeat increasingly getting faster.

“Behind the honeycomb wall... is it heaven or hell...?”

Chapter 202: Danxia Temple (21)

At this twinkling, all the red lights flickered again. Before Xu Yangyi even reacted, a giant Transference Formation suddenly appeared before him.

There was no room for any resistance. The front of Xu Yangyi's eyes became fuzzy again, and after a spell of dizziness, he opened his eyes. To his astonishment, he discovered that he wasn't within the Yellow Springs path. As for the pelt scroll, it had already restored itself to its original state at some unknown time and was in his hand.

"I was forcibly transferred?" Although his dizziness had already passed, he still felt a little faint. Pressing his temples, he placed the pelt scroll into his storage ring. When he shut his eyes again, the spiritual sense of late-stage Qi Condensation erupted with a rumble!

This spiritual sense was like the stretching of his hand, encompassing everything within 300 meters. Everything was taken into his brain. His first perception of something wasn't from the front but from behind!

This location... It was unknown where it was. As far as he could see was an extremely large space, even surpassing the livyatan's territory. Yet now, there were already at the minimum a hundred people stationed and resting here.

At the least, this was a space around 4000 to 5000 meters in size. The surroundings were all rocky caverns. Moreover, there were up to a hundred of them. In all likelihood, the others had entered from these caves.

Xu Yangyi inwardly nodded. As expected... the final destination was the honeycomb wall. At the moment, everyone's gazes were concentrated on his person. It seemed like he had appeared in front of everyone.

Xu Yangyi “caught sight” of a young monk. Based on this monk’s age, it wasn’t an understatement to say that he was an apprentice Buddhist. However, he wore a kasaya and had a six-ringed staff in his hand. On his chest, a string of bodhi seeds emitted a faint azure radiance.

The monk’s appearance was extremely delicate and refined, his expression ever calm. Even if he was already covered from head to toe with blood at this moment, and his left arm had vanished without a trace, his face was without sliver’s expression. Apart from indifference, there was nothing else.

Behind him, there were ten men wearing short-sleeved monk dress, their skin from head to toe presenting a golden color. They were like ten bronze statues. Quite a few of them already beared wounds on their bodies, yet presently, both their hands were joined in prayer, and they chanted sutras. They didn’t utter a single word.

“The three apex powers...” Xu Yangyi’s eyelids faintly stirred. The three schools of Buddhism, Daoism, and Confucianism were apex powers that hardly ever came into the world in China. He firmly remembered everyone’s reminders: If Nascent Soul exists, then they are bound to be within the three schools!

This monk, seemingly not that different from himself, was likewise... at the late stage of Qi Condensation!

Bump... Five meters in front of the monk, it appeared as if an invisible barrier had been touched upon. The monk’s lake-like eyes slightly raised up, motionlessly glancing at him.

This was the other’s defensive spiritual sense... Xu Yangyi was letting his spiritual sense display that it was without the slightest bit of attack and it winded past the other. Although he passed by, the monk’s eyes didn’t shift away. The monk studied him for a full four seconds and then lightly shook his staff and lowered his head.

“Junior brother Fahui?” A monk dimly inquired, his appearance

like that of a bronze man.

“Nothing.” The monk called Fahui said serenely: “Just... that a strong person has arrived...”

“He’s very strong?” Another copper monk opened his mouth slow-wittedly.

“Very strong.” Fahui said without hardly any hesitation. Afterwards, he supplemented firmly, his voice chopping nail and slicing iron: “No weaker than the Four Mountain-Protector Sword Inheritors of Greenwall’s First Mountain... If there’s no conflict, we shouldn’t provoke this benefactor by any means. Amitabha.”

“Him?” The gaze of the monk who had spoke before suddenly flashed: “He can match the Four Swords of Greenwall’s First Mountain?”

“Amitabha...” Fahui recited a prayer and said gravely: “Perhaps... he is even beyond them...”

“Up to now, this poor monk considers this person to be one of the people I am most unwilling take as an opponent.”

Xu Yangyi pulled back his spiritual sense and looked towards the other side. Over yonder, there were young Daoists. Evidently, they weren’t very well-disposed towards the monks, sitting somewhat far away from them. On their backs, they each carried a longsword.

The people weren’t unusual, three late-stage Qi Condensation. However, as Xu Yangyi’s spiritual sense brushed over the three swords, he suddenly felt a stabbing pain as if his spiritual sense had been pricked by a needle!

“This is...” He sucked in deeply: “A magik treasure...”

The Three Great Sects actually provided late-stage Qi Condensation with magik treasures they could use! It didn’t need to be asked to be known. These three young Daoists were absolutely outstanding talents within their sect! It was only a

mystery as to which mountain they originated from. Greenwall? Cranecry? Or Dragon-Tiger?

“Even people from the Three Great Ancestral Halls have actually come.” Xu Yangyi calmed his mind. Just as he was about to leave, a young Daoist calmly raised his head at the same time and glanced deeply at him. Simultaneously, a spiritual sense harboring a terrible murderous aura suddenly charged at Xu Yangyi’s departing spiritual sense!

“This is...” Xu Yangyi’s closed eyes fiercely jumped: “A divine ability that attacks spiritual sense?”

Apart from himself, he had never witnessed someone use a divine ability that attacked spiritual sense! This was the first time! Moreover... this spiritual sense was rather odd. It wasn’t strong, but... its offensive nature was clearly formidable! If it had to be described, it was like an unsheathed sharp sword, bringing forth a sky filled with sword rain!

Perhaps this sword didn’t kill, but the battle formation was enough to cause one to suffocate. After his astonishment passed, Xu Yangyi’s heart immediately cooled down. In the midst of withdrawing, his spiritual sense turned back and counterattacked without the slightest hesitation!

You want to meet with force? Probe my foundation? Good... my spiritual sense isn’t afraid of anyone! I wasn’t originally planning for much of a disturbance, but since you’re taking the lead to make trouble, I’m no coward either.

The young Daoist raised his head, the wisp of a faint smile likewise revealed at the crook of his mouth. In the same manner, he held ample confidence towards himself! The other’s spiritual sense coiled around and even actually dared to counterattack. Daoism never believed in setting down the butcher’s blade and become a Buddha on the spot. Especially... in this place!

BANG! The two spiritual senses slammed together without the

slightest fanfare. In the next second, the young Daoist knitted his brows, and his eyes suddenly opened. He looked at Xu Yangyi incredulously. However, his expression didn't last for three seconds. Shortly afterwards, he firmly pressed his head and fiercely turned to the side, vomiting!

Xu Yangyi faintly smiled. His spiritual sense moved away once more.

“Ling Xiaozi?” A young Daoist turned his head in shock, looking at the frantically puking Ling Xiaozi in disbelief. He then looked towards the silhouette ahead in amazement: “Just now... you used the Seated Forgetful Anatta?” [\[1\]](#)

Ling Xiaozi vomited to the extent that his face turned green. This was a basic indication of receiving light trauma to the spiritual sense. He didn't say anything, only vomiting as he firmly nodded.

The faces of the other two Daoists became completely solemn. Ling Xiaozi, Wu Weizi, Qing Jingzi, and Xuan Chengzi were this generation's Four Swords of Greenwall Mountain's First Mountain among Daoism's Three Great Ancestral Halls. Although Wu Weizi had already passed on into immortality, it could absolutely be said that they were striking talents within the same generation. Furthermore... others weren't aware, but they understood very well! The Seated Forgetful Anatta could increase the intensity of spiritual sense by a fifth! [\[2\]](#)

In particular... they were even sword cultivators! Sword cultivators, almost extinct in the modern age! Sword cultivators carefully studied how to attack the best defenses and skills to reap lives. A spiritual-sense attack even more so! It could be said that while those who were able to triumph over them within the same generation existed, those able to best them in spiritual sense were absolutely rare!

Unexpectedly... in this place, they had encountered such a person! In a collision of spiritual sense, Ling Xiaozi was forced to

suffer an immediate defeat!

“What’s his identity?” Xuan Chengzi was a short, thin Daoist. He looked at Xu Yangyi’s back and furrowed his brows: “A fresh face... Ling Xiaozi, you want us to slay him here?”

Just as he finished speaking, he felt his arm being pulled. He turned his head and glanced. Ling Xiaozi had finally gained hold of himself, gritting his teeth as he shook his head.

“Don’t provoke him.” He took a deep breath and looked seriously at Xu Yangyi’s back: “This person is very strong. For him to be capable of arriving here, how is he an easily handled fellow? At the beginning, over a thousand people entered. Now, only a tenth made it... This person can’t be provoked. Not as much as we can. To reach late-stage Qi Condensation at such an age, his aptitude in itself isn’t weaker than ours at all.”

Xu Yangyi’s spiritual sense continued to sweep forward. He saw a man that was also wearing camouflage. The man’s haughty expression concealed a tiredness, and his entourage beside him all beared wounds. However, two dead-looking, old men followed from behind him. Their bodily fluctuations made it hard for one to find them in contempt!

Half-step... Foundation Establishment!

And yet, the emblem on the man’s chest illustrated his identity. The Nangong Clan, one of demonkind’s five great clans! Among the Five Great Demon Clans, the others all had two-character surnames apart from the Ming Clan. The Nangong... If they called themselves second, those that dared proclaim themselves as first were absolutely few!

Just as Xu Yangyi’s spiritual sense brushed past, one of the old men raised his head and furrowed his brows as he looked towards Xu Yangyi’s back.

“Qiao Wu?” The camouflaged man raised a brow: “Is there...

something off about him?

Qiao Wu thought it over and then bowed: "Sixth Young Master, this person's spiritual sense... is dreadfully strong, almost the same as this old servant's. The qi on his body is unsteady. He should've just advanced to the late stage. On one hand, to have this level of spiritual sense upon just entering the late stage, this person definitely can't be considered weak. On the other, to be capable of advancing to the late stage in such a place, his fortune is deep. Young master, if you want to vie for the clan master's position in several decades, you'll have to be mindful of many things."

"Him?" The camouflaged man raised a brow: "How are his talents compared to eldest and second eldest?"

Solemn-faced, Qiao Wu seemed to ponder this and said: "I'm not exactly certain, but I can determine that this person would be quite a thorn."

"And if you made a move?"

"I have the confidence to beat him, but I'd still need a fair amount of time."

"And if you and Quan Liu engaged at the same time?"

Qiao Wu laughed confidently: "I would be certain to suppress him within twenty moves."

"Then, all right." The camouflaged man glanced deeply at Xu Yangyi and sneered: "After we go in, find a chance to question him. If he doesn't answer, I'll have to trouble you two sirs with giving him a one-way ticket to hell."

"I shall do as you bid." The two old men said respectfully at the same time.

Xu Yangyi was none the wiser to this. His spiritual sense willfully diverged, and he saw a man in martial attire with the Xuanyuan Clan's emblem dazzling brightly on his chest. Accompanying him were seven people. Each person was in no way a character easily

provoked.

Xu Yangyi looked over one by one... All the present people were silent and uncommunicative. However, all of them carried wounds on their bodies. The atmosphere was rather grave.

Suddenly, his brows faintly knitted. He saw a coffin... A coffin being carried by four living people! Inside the coffin, an extremely bizarre aura was felt. Half-step Foundation Establishment, yet it gave off an abnormally terrible sensation. It was as if... once the person lying inside the coffin appeared, he was able to immediately crush all of them! Yet from time to time, it was shockingly feeble, seemingly not even at the initial stage of Qi Condensation.

“That’s Senior Bloodblade.” At Xu Yangyi’s side, a familiar voice rang out: “He’s savage by nature... He makes no distinction between good and evil and has already been wanted by the cultivation world for thirty years. I didn’t expect that he would show up here.”

Xu Yangyi opened his eyes. Presently, he still hadn’t seen the Xingtian Legion, but because he appeared in front of everyone, they all saw him. This voice belonged to Yao Xintan.

“How long have you guys been here?” This was Xu Yangyi’s first question.

“Three days.”

Three days, huh... Xu Yangyi’s brows slightly furrowed. It happened again... The time in this place and the outside world wasn’t equal. This event had happened again.

Back then... he had lost himself in a coma for three years. At the moment, he had stayed in the space for several hours, but three days had already passed on the outside. He opened his eyes, yet just as he was planning to ask a question, everything before him caused him to swallow his words into his belly!

Spiritual sense was a radar. Moments ago, he only had this radar

scan the back but not the front. Right now, as he opened his eyes, everything in front of him caused all his blood to start boiling!

Facing him, an odd landform had appeared. There was a giant cave here, unknown as to how many times greater it was than the livyatan's lair! Perhaps... it was full 3000 meters long! Over a 1000 meters tall!

Originally, it should've been a giant rock wall, but now, countless holes had split open on it. Each hole was three to four meters in size and the inside was a black expanse, a typical honeycomb geography!

[1] This required a decent amount of time to wrap my head around. As always, the names of these moves aren't short and pretty and contain a lot of meaning. Might go back and change some names in the past depending how I feel (Pill Cauldron Spiritbuilder L U L). The "Seated Forgetful Anatta" is a skill found in video games, but is based on an actual Daoist text called the Zuowanglun. The term anatta is a Buddhist term for "non-self". It feels weird using a Buddhist term used to describe a "Daoist move", but it feels the best, and there is history between the two. Said to be a skill of the Pure Yang Sect.

[2] "Passed onto immortality" Another euphemism in Daoism that one has died.

Chapter 203: Danxia Temple (22)

“This place is...” Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply: “The honeycomb wall!” Unexpectedly, he had already arrived in front of the honeycomb wall! From the Yellow Springs path, he had been directly transferred over! “A forced transference...” He narrowed his eyes and sized up the wall. Yet at this moment, he felt a kind of... thirst. And also... a kind of crisis as if he was facing a great enemy.

In the surroundings, nothing seemed to exist. Perhaps this instant was merely a hundredth of a second, but he truly felt that apart from himself, everything in the surroundings appeared to be stirred up by a giant hand. It started to turn vague, and the entire scenery was pulled. But in a fleeting moment, things returned to their original state.

Buuuuuzzzz... The Animus Armament on his chest was trembling incessantly like an addict seeing a drug that they hadn't taken in a long time. This feeling of excitement and expectation silently extended up to his brain, influencing Xu Yangyi at the same time. Like it came from ancient times, a summons was sincerely calling out to him from these holes.

“I finally made it...” He took a deep breath. The alligator gars, livyatan, and Yellow Springs path had been overcome one obstacle at a time. At last... he had arrived before the suspected entrance of Danxia Temple!

Since time immemorial, how many people had laid eyes on this door? How many people had entered in the past? However, not a single person left! Now, he and the Xingtian Legion were substituted in. And yet... he was still unsure.

“Commander?” Yao Xintan looked at Xu Yangyi in shock. Even if he was unaware of Xu Yangyi's mental stirrings, he still realized in a flash that his commander's current aura and strength were

frightening.

“Nothing.” Xu Yangyi smiled as he lifted up his left hand and his right hand stroked the Animus Armament. After a brief moment, the lifelike excitement settled down. From caution, his gaze arrived at resoluteness. In the end, he surprisingly laughed.

What is this? I came here just to calm my heart. Regardless... the Animus Armament chose me. If I don't go take a look, it'll be hard to calm my heart and soothe my thoughts.

Besides, there was the sword point. However, the feeling that it carried was extremely difficult to explain, that of rejection and expectation. Likewise, it was gently shaking.

Taking a heavy breath, Xu Yangyi collected his mind and carefully looked at Yao Xintan. Yao Xintan's face carried a deep exhaustion. Xu Yangyi understood. Sleep didn't come easy for those who were able to come out from that path. He said softly: “The others... are they fine?”

Yao Xintan sighed deeply: “Fellow Daoist Yang... Fellow Daoist Gao... didn't make it...”

Xu Yangyi shut his eyes somewhat painfully. Perhaps at the start he didn't believe too much in these people... but over the course of two combat engagements, he understood. Humans weren't grass; who could be without emotion?

Before entering the door, Yang Xueqing, Gao Wuguo, Zhou Tingting, and Cheng Jianfeng were all people who had originally vowed to return on the rooftop. However, they were already separated by the two realms of heaven and man.

“Do you regret it?” In silence, Xu Yangyi suddenly spoke.

Dazed, Yao Xintan staunchly answered: “I'm scared, but I don't regret it. We said... that only in the defiance of the heavens is a cultivator's true nature revealed.”

Xu Yangyi opened his eyes and forcefully shook the other's hand:

“By rising straight up to azure skies can a great hero’s aspirations be rewarded.”

Yao Xintan had said Xu Yangyi’s words from back then, the speech that Xu Yangyi had given to him at that time. Nevertheless, the wisp of graveness that arose in the duo’s hearts was replaced again by firm conviction.

A million cultivators... Twenty Thousand Foundation Establishment. How many people had been frightened of unknown dangers ahead in cultivation? From here on, if they bound their feet and didn’t advance into the future, they would become a handful of yellow earth in a century. The hundred years of time only set aside for a Qi Condensation cultivator’s life... wasn’t a lot.

Xu Yangyi turned his body and deeply studied the giant honeycomb wall in front. It resembled a titan, separating all secrets.

“I’ll take this and record it all on a jade slip.” He fished out a cigarette and lit it, breathing in deeply: “This is the best present I can give to these four Fellow Daoists.”

Yao Xintan suddenly jumped and pursed his lips. He observed Xu Yangyi and nodded powerfully.

Xu Yangyi didn’t take another drag but rather inserted the cigarette in the ground. After he left, he bowed deeply: “I have no wine or offerings, so I’ll have to rely on this cigarette. An offering to all cultivators who devote themselves wholeheartedly to advancing bravely on this searching path and cutting their way through thistle and thorn.” [\[1\]](#)

Yao Xintan felt his eyes become a little damp and forcefully blinked. It wasn’t the stir of emotion, yet it was. These emotions weren’t from Xu Yangyi’s attitude towards the four legionnaires who has passed away. Instead, these words spoke of what was in his heart.

Who wasn't searching about on this path? Who wasn't using their lives to obtain destiny?

The dead had already passed and the living were as such. At this moment, all the cultivators who arrived here, regardless of good and evil, felt the heaviness of the two-symbolled character for cultivation.

After a few seconds, Xu Yangyi straightened his figure and lifted his chin towards the coffin: "What's his cultivation?"

Yao Xintan answered without the slightest hesitation: "Initial-stage Foundation Establishment."

"How did he get in?" Xu Yangyi seemed pensive: "Master said that only Qi Condensation can enter this secret realm. Half-step Foundation Establishment is already peak battle strength inside this place."

"He suppressed his cultivation." Yao Xintan glanced all around and said lowly: "It's not that there aren't these kinds of secret arts or magik treasures. Also... he isn't the only Foundation Establishment senior that snuck into this place!" His finger pointed to the other side: "Although our Yao Clan isn't as good as it was in the past, I've still seen many seniors. If I haven't remembered incorrectly, that woman should be the majordomo of Nanhe's Zheng Clan. Senior Zheng Miaoxin."

Xu Yangyi's gaze followed over. Exhaustion coloring her face, a woman around thirty-something years old was closing her eyes in rest. She indifferently petted a persian cat in her hand.

"And on that side, that old man really isn't half-step Foundation Establishment. I once saw him fifteen years ago. He's a regional director of one of the Bountiful Treasure Pavilion's regions, initial-stage Foundation establishment. I don't definitely remember where, but it should be the Pearl River Delta. I didn't expect... that he would also come..."

Xu Yangyi gently nodded, his gaze seriously memorizing the appearance of these three people in his heart. He leaned his head and asked lowly: “Are their lifespans about to end?”

Yao Xintan nodded: “If it weren’t for this, there’s no way that they would willing to rush into such a terrible place.”

Xu Yangyi mumbled for a brief moment: “How many cultivators are still left here?”

“123 people still remain, altogether twenty powers. Humanity’s Seven Great Lineages have all entered and the Five Great Demon Clans have, as well. The Three Great Sects aren’t an exception, too. There’s also a CSIB expedition team. Lastly... there’s Beijing’s well-known Gao Clan, Shanghai’s new first-rate Huang Clan, Shanghai’s Zhao Clan, and Xichuan’s Baili Clan.”

“Where are the other clans?”

Yao Xintan faintly shook his head. His expression was somewhat dejected.

Xu Yangyi firmly kept these names in mind. He didn’t forget a single one. Contrary to expectation, there was reason in this. The giant door’s final path converged to this place. Although he didn’t wish for this, it didn’t surprise him at all.

At the beginning... over a thousand people had entered that gate. The door was akin to sparkling pearls and gleaming treasures, endless in its amount of auspicious qi. Yet as for those who arrived before this door... only a tenth remained!

Next... apart from from the demons that still might’ve survived, the Xingtian Legion’s greatest and most dreadful opponent... were these people! Down below, it was unknown what kind of dangers and destinies existed. However... it was a paradise where all cultivators would murder and plunder, a return to ancient cultivation! In a secret realm, life and death wasn’t discussed!

“How did you guys get in?” Xu Yangyi asked as he walked with

Yao Xintan.

Yao Xintan said: “We walked the Yellow Springs path and another 300-plus meters to get here. There are no less than a hundred entrances here. We were the first. The day afterwards, the others came one after another.”

Xu Yangyi nodded and patted Yao Xintan’s shoulder: “Walk. Let’s get back to our territory.”

Xu Yangyi and Yao Xintan returned to the squad together. Each person wore incredible heaviness on each of their faces. Nonetheless, they didn’t cower back. They had already come here; how could they possibly even return?!

“Commander. We even thought that you had disappeared. You’ve come out after so long.” Qin Xueluan laughed and placed two items in his hand: “For you. What do you plan to do?”

The items... were two magik artifacts. One was a small exquisite wooden sword and the other was a pair of gloves wrapped in silver thread. These... were Gao Wuguo’s and Yang Xueqing’s remnants.

The gazes of all the legionnaires silently looked towards him. Xu Yangyi bowed prudently. In accordance to the highest respect for the departed, he took the items with both hands.

“How did they die?”

Qin Xueluan sighed deeply: “Badly mangled corpses... walked out by themselves... when they reached the end of the Yellow Springs path, they fell over...”

Xu Yangyi nodded: “After we return, we’ll give them a grand burial ceremony. I’ll personally go to their clans and look for talented cultivators to bring into the Xingtian Legion.”

His voice was gloomy, but after he said these words, the light of everyone’s eyes was no longer so grave. Even a few people gently sighed. The most dreadful feeling that nothing could surpass was to leave nothing behind after having walked the world. They

heaved out a sigh of relief because of Xu Yangyi's handling methods. At the same time, they sighed for the value of their own existences, as well.

Where are the Zhao Clan's people?" Xu Yangyi glanced at the group of somber-mooded people and asked.

"We're here." Zhao Wuye's voice was somewhat hoarse. Perhaps he had screeched too much in the Yellow Springs path. He squeezed out a smile and said: "I am lucky to see Fellow Daoist."

Surprisingly, not a single one of them had died. All of them had walked out. Even the several remaining people were the same. It was just... that right now, each person's complexion and spirit was rather poor.

Xu Yangyi looked at everyone, walked to center, and nodded. After two seconds of silence, he said calmly: "Cultivation in itself is to defy the heavens. Originally, I didn't want to say these words, but I have no choice to speak now."

"Before coming, everyone made preparations, preparations of sacrifice. But everyone further understands that in the same time of danger, enormous opportunity is concealed." He paused, and his gaze brushed over each person's body: "The Rootless Nine Bends Aqua, the ambergris, and the demon core. Which one of these things can be ordinarily gained without spending all of one's heart?"

"Now that you've seen someone's sacrifice, so what? Are you afraid?"

He looked into everyone's eyes, his entire body's spiritual pressure suddenly erupting! Like the autumn wind sweeping away fallen leaves, it sailed through the surrounding space! The berserkness of this aura even caused a few people to brush an eye over.

"You... advanced to the late stage?!" Mo Yeyu's eyes quickly

saucered, and he said incredulously.

“I’ve had my own opportunity, as well. I’ve gained a lot in this place.” Xu Yangyi said indifferently, yet his voice gradually became louder: “What I want is a firm shield and a sharp spear. Not gold and jade, but to break apart sand castles in one strike. With your attitudes right now, how many of you will be able to make it out alive after going in?”

[1] The imagery of a cigarette on the ground comes from traditional Chinese custom of incense sticks stuck into the ground for death services.

Chapter 204: Danxia Temple (23)

“Don’t tell me that none of you don’t want to see what’s inside?!” Xu Yangyi abruptly turned around and pointed towards the tremendous and silent honeycomb wall, and his voice became louder: “On this journey, four Fellow Daoists died to get here. All of you don’t want to know what the hell is hidden inside?!”

“Could it be... that none of you have the seeking heart to explore what that great door is for?! Why the government blocked news off from Longsu Province?! What is my master keeping watch over in the sky for?!”

“Do all of you...” He took a step forward: “Not want to do anything because of the four Fellow Daoists who passed away? There’s never any reaping without sowing. If you want gain something, then you have to pay something. Do all of you... dare not enter to look?”

Nobody spoke, however, the somber and mournful mood vanished off everyone’s faces little by little. It was replaced by a kind of wordless resolution that slowly climbed up their faces instead.

Xu Yangyi measured everyone’s expressions, nonchalant. There were some words that he HAD to say. Apart from himself... no one knew whatsoever that following this was the true Danxia Temple! But with their present states, there would only be death after entering! Absent of any hope for life!

Sorrow and frustration were a kind of sickness that would infect emotional people. As the commander, Xu Yangyi ordinarily didn’t care for any of these matters, only acting for the legion’s productivity. However, in such times, he had to stand out!

He would take the barely remaining hot blood within everyone’s hearts to completely wipe away the shadow left behind by the Yellow Springs path. All of their blood and power would be united

to form a rope! Only like THIS would they have the chance to leave Danxia Temple!

Otherwise, if they died here, not only was this a failure of his duty, he would moreover be everyone's murderer! Xu Yangyi wouldn't give too much of a great, long speech. This was already the peak of what he could accomplish.

"I'm taking the first step." Xu Yangyi confidently turned around in ease. With a single step and footprint, he advanced under the contrast of the titan-like honeycomb wall: "Even if the inside is hell, I still must look!" He halted and slightly tilted his head: "For those Fellow Daoists and furthermore for myself."

"Why does a real man not bear the saber and reclaim the borderlands? My legion only needs bolting lions, not cowering lambs!" Under the illumination of light, his back drew a long curve. As his back passed and his body ventured, he couldn't see the traces of pride that were already slowly climbing up everyone's faces. [\[1\]](#)

"Who said it?!" Xu Yangyi's voice yet to fall, Jun Man was the first to stand up and laugh grimly: "Commander, you don't need kick us into gear with negative remarks. I admit that I was just being unreasonable. Although Danxia Temple is terrible and mighty, it can't stop me!"

Jun Man's gaze had already transformed from the heavy dusk of moments ago into a flourishing heroic spirit. This heroism beared a sliver of pride. This wasn't his pride but rather a cultivator's pride, a cultivator's self-esteem! Those willing to take a step even further wouldn't stop at all, so that their names might be engraved into memory.

"Hehe, although I'm a woman, since I've come, there's never been a reason not to enter a door that I've never gone through. I've got a line to for Commander Xu, as well. Since time immemorial, who has not died? A burning heart left and taken illuminates the

bamboo scrolls. I don't know about others, but a simple woman like me truly isn't scared of this Danxia Temple." Qin Xueluan suddenly stood up, raising her neck up and laughing. [\[2\]](#)

"If a woman isn't even scared, then what am I scared for?" Yao Xintan's dim spirits flushed away entirely, and he chuckled: "I gotta say, what's the point of us being all gloom and doom here? We'll definitely present Danxia Temple's secret to the graves of the four Fellow Daoists!"

"I hope it's not you that's going to keep them company." Mo Yeyu yawned, seemingly lazy, yet his eyes glimmered with spirited light: "Commander Xu, you're looking down on us too much. C'mon, let's go take a look! Let's see who can make it out alive. I'm confident that even if my cultivation isn't as good as everyone else's, I'm still the best expert in survival skills."

Voices began to ring out. Xu Yangyi walked at the forefront, and the crook of his mouth curved up. This feeling of companionship... truly wasn't bad.

Whatever attitude you guys treat me with, I, Xu Yangyi, will be sure to use the same towards all of you. If you follow me in finishing this journey, we'll still have a next time, and then another... A true cultivator that seeks the Dao won't stop at all in Danxia Temple! They won't even stop at the ominous name of the Eight Great Deadlands!

"Hehehe..." At this time, sarcastic laughter rang out. A white-shirted and black-suited figure squarely obstructed Xu Yangyi ahead: "And I said who was it that was being so noisy? So it's actually you flock of spring chickens. Commander Xu, long time no see... You've really made me miss you so urgently..."

God Ming Twelve seemed stand gracefully in front, but in fact, his white shirt was covered with many bloodstains. His jacket had vanished without a trace and even the whereabouts of the folding fan in his hand was unknown. His hair was originally run through

by a unique hair ornament, but presently, it hung down loosely. It spilled somewhat messily over his shoulders.

Xu Yangyi studied him for three seconds and then smiled: “Looks like your group of old birds aren’t doing any better.”

“Hahaha!” Hearing Xu Yangyi’s words, God Ming Twelve faced upwards and laughed heartily. He finished laughing and closely studied Xu Yangyi: “I entered the door and sought out your aura, yet you truly hid so nervously. I really didn’t expect that you would be able to come here, but... that’s fine too.”

His expression suddenly turned cold, and his finger gently pulled at a white thread of silk connected to the seam of his fingernail. Straight afterwards, a coffin no less than three meters tall suddenly flew out from the Ming Clan encampment. With a rumble, it fell between the two of them, scattering dust and sand all over the ground.

“The Eighth Coffin... Nine-Apertures Jiangshi. To be able to die beneath its hand, you can consider yourself not to have lived in vain...” God Ming Twelve’s eyes gradually reddened. Already, he was unable to restrain the killing intent in his heart.

This killing intent wasn’t in fact aimed towards Xu Yangyi but rather this path. It was too bitter. The Ming Clan had entered with thirty-seven people, but only eight remained now! All twenty-nine people had been buried underneath!

This killing intent originated from the tension in his heart. It came from the heart devil secretly born from this journey’s ambiguity. From him being so fatigued and embarrassed. It was a fierce injustice that Xu Yangyi had actually come out in good condition and unwounded!

Only by giving vent to his frustrations could he assuage his mood. Therefore, he selected Xu Yangyi without hardly any hesitation. In the present scene, everyone merely lifted their gazes. Not a single person stuck their head out.

Xu Yangyi calmly observed him and suddenly laughed: “Are you sure that you want to raise a hand against me?”

“Scared?” God Ming Twelve revealed a perfect smile, and his hair diverged. All of a sudden, his hair moved freely, absent of the wind. It entered the coffin into tiny unseen holes. In a flash, an indescribable stench pervaded the air from the coffin.

“Little brother Twelve.” At this moment, a voice like a warm sun rang out: “Why are you being like this?”

Xu Yangyi and God Ming Twelve looked over. The Ming Clan’s encampment couldn’t be regarded as distant from the Xingtian Legion. It was a stone platform over thirty meters in size. At the head, there was surprisingly a woman with a smile akin to a spring sun. Her hair slanted over her shoulders to cover half of her face. The remaining half absolutely wasn’t that of a beauty, yet it was by no means unsightly.

The edged silhouette of her face seemed to be carved by a blade and chiseled with a hatchet. On a man, perhaps many people would say that it was rather masculine. Yet on a woman’s face, and on this woman, it cut out a kind of outline that could be called ruthless.

God Ming Twelve was dazed and soon after came to his wits: “It seems that it still isn’t Sister Nine’s turn to take charge of what I do.”

“Of course I wouldn’t care if you wanted to kill.” Sister Nine leisurely took out a cigarette, and a spiritual pressure not the faintest bit inferior to Xu Yangyi’s spread rapidly through the grounds. Furthermore... this spiritual pressure was rather odd. It was because... this was the first time Xu Yangyi sensed a spiritual pressure that possessed a temperature!

Ice-cold! The same cultivation of late-stage Qi Condensation! Wherever it passed, white frost appeared on the surface!

“But if you’re killed, I have but no choice to take control.” The woman took a gentle drag of her cigarette, slightly furrowing her brows as she flicked cigarette ash: “Come back.”

“Killed?” God Ming Twelve was stunned and suddenly roared in laughter: “By just him?”

Xu Yangyi smiled as he also looked at God Ming Twelve, as if this in itself was a joke.

“He’s the same realm as I am. Apart from this generation’s clan master’s, the next clan master’s, and clan elder’s, the other Ming Clan corpses are all fake. At most, ours can be regarded as high-quality imitations. The power falls short to even a ten-thousandth of the genuine article.” Sister Nine crossed her legs at the stone platform’s edge and sketched an alluring curve, laughing gently: “With your manipulation abilities, the current him can kill the current you in less than thirty moves.”

God Ming Twelve’s smile froze. He blanked out for a couple seconds and clenched his teeth: “Late-stage Qi Condensation? That’s impossible! Before he entered, he was only at the middle stage!”

“Destiny possess its own determination of the heavens.” The woman was still laughing. Her warm smile and ice-cold appearance formed a severe conflict: “Furthermore, there’s no joke about a true late-stage Qi Condensation.”

“You actually reached late-stage Qi Condensation?!” God Ming Twelve was rendered foolish for a couple seconds. He turned his head back and glared at Xu Yangyi incredulously.

How could this be? Before entering... he had even said that he wanted kill the other with his own hands. Unexpectedly... in these several days... he was no longer Xu Yangyi’s opponent? Countless thoughts interweaved in his heart. Ultimately, after a few seconds, he fiercely gnashed his teeth. Not uttering a single word about his own position, he walked away.

“Slow down.” At this time, a tranquil voice echoed: “Did I allow you to leave?”

Sister Nine didn't laugh.

God Ming Twelve suddenly turned around, his eyes carrying a terrible insidiousness. A frightening smile blossomed at the corner of his mouth: “Xu, If I want to leave, is there still margin for your lowly mouth to offer comment?”

Xu Yangyi looked at God Ming Twelve like he was looking at a dead man. In the next second, without another word, a golden-orange fire dragon rumbled from his hand! Its great stretched-out maw was completely locked onto God Ming Twelve!

“Not good!” The divine ability yet to arrive, God Ming Twelve was already incredibly solemn! This move... was still ten-plus meters apart from him, but even like so, he felt his hair all over twisting! As if... he was facing a giant dragon formed from magma!

“Late-stage Qi Condensation... This is absolutely late-stage Qi Condensation!” Swiftly, cold sweat emanated from his back. His heart was shaking in chaos! His first thought wasn't to receive this move... but rather escape!

Intuition told him that he was unable to welcome this ability! Surpassing ranks to counter kill wasn't an impossibility. God Ming Twelve had done so an untold number of times. Nonetheless, this seemingly beautiful word held a compulsory prerequisite.

That was a genius facing a normal cultivator. Right now, to be able to come to this place and be protected by everyone like stars cupping the moon, who wasn't a genius picked out from among ten thousand?

Fahui, Greenwall's Four Swords, the Baili Clan's third noble son, the Nangong Clan's sixth young master... If such people overtook him by a single rank, all that awaited him was devastation!

“Since it's like that, you can die by my lowly hand, alright?” The

light of Xu Yangyi's eyes was ice-cold, devoid of a shred of mercy. He laughed sinisterly.

[1] "Why does a real man not bear the saber and reclaim the borderlands?" Poem from Tang Poet Li He (790-816 CE). The other part of the poem goes on to create an idea of rousing the self to achieve great feats.

[2] "Since time immemorial, who has not died? A burning heart left and taken illuminates the bamboo scrolls." Poem from Song Poet Wen Tianxiang (1236-1283). Meaning: those who burn brightly leave their mark on history.

Chapter 205: Danxia Temple (24)

In the area, everyone's gazes seriously cast over. In the past, they merely sensed it. Now, upon seeing Xu Yangyi take action with their own eyes, they knew that their feelings weren't off by a bit!

This fire dragon... was very troublesome! Especially the other's nature. In no way was he a timid and submissive character. Instead, he dared to attack and stake his life. A single nonconforming word in a secret realm, and there was no doubt that he would immediately use his murderous heart to slay his foes off horseback!

"Amitabha..." There were finally a few ripples in Fahui's gaze: "This poor monk remembers... on that day, God Ming Eighteen was slain at the Four Great Joint Pools. It can be assumed that the cultivator who the Ming Clan put a high bounty on is this Fellow Daoist surnamed Xu."

"But right now, except for a single-digit-ranked God Ming successor, I'm afraid that the others..." Ling Xiaozi's gaze flashed, and he muttered: "Aren't Fellow Daoist Xu's opponent at all."

In the Nangong Clan's garrison, the sixth young master stopped smiling. Narrowing his eyes, he carefully studied the roaring fire dragon that was charging directly at God Ming Twelve.

"The other party is the Ming Clan... one of the Five Great Demon Clans..." The young master murmured: "He's actually taking action when God Ming Nine is around... That girl is even a constant headache for me..."

"Young master." The expression of an old man behind was also incomparably solemn: "This person is not easily subdued."

"Arrogance is in his bones and a murderous aura in his heart." Another old man said lowly.

The sixth young master faintly nodded yet began to laugh

strangely: “If he was normal, what fun would there be in suppressing him?”

The people of the Ming Clan encampment were completely dumbfounded. How long... How long had it been since someone dared to move against the Five Great Demon Clans?! Even in the secret realm, could it be that Xu Yangyi wasn't considering their revenge after exiting?!

“That's not right!” A cultivator seemed to recall something, his voice warbling: “He... He's a Daomaster disciple!”

A quick word reminded everyone. The crowd then thought of this. Daomaster Ancientpine had accepted this disciple in low-profile. Xu Yangyi himself was also low-profile, but he was indeed a Daomaster disciple! It was natural... that he had no misgivings in killing the people of the Ming Clan!

The speed of these developments occurred in a twinkling. Just as this thought occurred to everyone, in the next second, the fire dragon raged towards God Ming Twelve. The temperature seemed to cause the air to ignite. God Ming Twelve was merely dazed for half a second and cried out with a screech that tore at his heart and split open his lungs: “SISTER NINE SAVE ME!!!”

At the same time, his hair transformed into countless silken threads, entirely wrapping himself. It was like a giant cocoon.

“Spinning a cocoon around yourself?” Xu Yangyi sneered as he saw this divine ability. At the Four Great Joint Pools, he had once encountered this absolute defense. However...

That was back then!

Now... his left hand had already condensed rays of red brilliance.

If you want to kill me, then you better make preparations to be killed instead!

But shortly following, the fire dragon halted. Countless golden threads binded the fire dragon, not burned by the Ten Cardinals

Red Lotus. On the contrary, both sides struggled endlessly in the sky! The golden threads were all coming from Sister Nine's mouth. In the air, her gaze locked together with Xu Yangyi's for the first time.

"Fellow Daoist has a very heavy murderous heart." At some unknown time, Sister Nine had already stood up. Her stance was strange, like giant spider lying on the stone platform. Even her entire body was making a kind of light trembling sound. Her voice grave, she said: "I can't disregard Fellow Daoist killing one of my Ming Clan's God Ming echelon in front of me. How about we temporarily set aside everything from before in this place and discard our hostilities for the time being?"

Everyone's gazes flashed. Xu Yangyi's strength... really was powerful, a clear exhibition of not giving face to the Ming Clan. Sister Nine... actually wasn't planning on looking further into this?

Xu Yangyi didn't reply and sneered, his left fist suddenly waving out. An extremely slender red light, carrying a heart-shaking qi, fiercely rumbled towards the soul-stricken God Ming Twelve!

The people present sucked in even more gently. This person... wasn't intending to give the Ming Clan the slightest fraction of respect!

"God Ming's Supreme Dao..." Sister Nine cautiously took a deep breath, endless jade light suddenly flaring out from her seven apertures: "Jade Congeals Viridian!!"

Swoosh swoosh swoosh! Seven green light beams flew out from her seven apertures. In the air, they condensed into a large green net with a speed invisible to the naked eye. A loud explosion rumbled, and it collided together with Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron.

A crash seemed to blast a huge typhoon inside this area. A meter deep and seven to eight meters in radius, an enormous chasm

suddenly exploded open. The surroundings could even be said to be flying with sand and stone. In the place where the two divine abilities were, everything faded away!

Xu Yangyi looked at Sister Nine, cool and collected. After ages, he nodded: "I'll give you this respect." Afterwards, he turned his head towards God Ming Twelve whose complexion was already snow-white. Xu Yangyi looked at him like he was looking at a dead man. All of a sudden, he laughed: "Don't find yourself alone." A finger wagged in front of the other's face: "And don't come provoking me."

In an instant, God Ming Twelve's pale face bubbled into a deep-red. It was fury congealed to the peak, yet he could only tightly choke down on this extreme awkwardness! This... mongrel that he had threatened to crush into bones and scatter into ash before... had now... actually dared to speak to him with such an attitude in everyone's presence!

As for himself... he was like a child, unable to put up the least bit resistance!

"You..." "Twelve!"

Two voices rang out at almost the same time. God Ming Twelve was planning on releasing a harsh word, but Sister Nine's angry bellow suddenly interrupted him. He clenched his teeth, turned his head back, and walked back. In his heart, he was terribly sullen. Such a slap of crushing strength was blunt and resounding. It caused the fury in the core of his being to nearly burn the heavens!

Moreover... his release of harsh words had even been stopped by Sister Nine! In his throat, he choked back on a mouthful of blood, close to spitting it out due to anger! However, just as he turned his head, he stared blankly.

Sister Nine... was still in that spider stance, yet her hair had already extended four to five meters, flying all around!

“This is... a battle stance...” He gasped coldly and glanced at Xu Yangyi, not daring to believe: “He... is actually able to bring a single-digit successor of the God Ming echelon... to adopt a full-powered battle stance?!”

“Although Sister Nine ranks ninth in the top ten... she’s the only successor to awaken three elysial divine abilities... Her level of difficulty... isn’t even inferior to brother God Ming Two. H-He can actually...”

God Ming Twelve no longer dared to think of anything else and returned to his encampment with quick steps. He didn’t utter a word.

Only then did Sister Nine completely stand up. Her hair had also started to pull back and returned to its original position. Icily gazing at Xu Yangyi, she cupped her fist: “Perhaps Fellow Daoist’s strength may be regarded as number one in this place. I admire that.”

Xu Yangyi laughed grimly. Sowing dissension, eh... In this place, it was impossible for there not to be hidden dragons and crouching tigers. He didn’t have the confidence to defeat the three Foundation Establishment seniors who had suppressed their realms and also the two half-step Foundation Establishment... This maneuver was to cause everyone to pay attention to him. Upon entering the honeycomb wall, the strongest would also be the most conspicuous after going in!

In the unknown world that followed, the more conspicuous one was, the more likely one was to suffer targeting!

“Fellow Daoist’s strength is above mine. What’s there to be modest about?” Xu Yangyi sneered, cupped his hands, and returned to his encampment.

The Xingtian Legion’s encampment was a stretch of silence. After a long period, Mao Ba’er said incredulously: “I really dared not believe... that you actually reached late-stage Qi Condensation!”

An unknown number of eyes looked at him, red as fire. Xu Yangyi laughed: “I did say that I had a stroke of luck.”

“Damn, I want this stroke of luck, too!” Mao Ba’er was hard-pressed to give vent to his tension: “Do you know who that is? One of the five great geniuses of this generation’s God Ming, God Ming Nine! She’s known as Sister Nine! Among the five great geniuses, there are three who have comprehended elysial divine abilities! She’s one of them! You killed God Ming Eighteen, and the Ming Clan only put you on the wanted list. If you moved against her, the Ming Clang might not rest until you’re dead!”

“Since she’s cultivated, I’ve heard that she’s never tasted defeat in the same realm.” Jun Man glanced deeply at Sister Nine: “I’ve also heard... she’s strong. Scary strong...”

“She’s a monster...” Mo Yeyu had also heard of the other’s name and sighed emotionally. Soon after, he looked towards Xu Yangyi: “But... you’re a monster too, commander.”

“Alright.” Xu Yangyi waved his hand. His voice serious, he said to everyone: “No matter what, entering the honeycomb wall is our first order of business right now.” He turned his head and looked at the group of the Zhao Clan who still hadn’t regained their wits from amidst shock: “Zhao Wuye, Fellow Daoist Fenglai. Next is your time to reveal your methods.”

Zhao Wuye seemed to awaken from his reverie. His eyes looking towards Xu Yangyi already carried fear and respect. He coughed dryly: “Naturally... Brightness falls to the Death Gate. Fellow Daoist, I’ll speak out of turn again, are you certain?”

“Affirmative.” Xu Yangyi nodded.

“Okay...” Zhao Fenglai took a deep breath, not saying a second word. He took out the box loaded with the effigy and formed a Dao-seal, a wave of white light suddenly flashing. Rubbing his eyes, Zhao Ziqi emerged in front of everyone.

Xu Yangyi waved his hand, and the entire outside world was isolated. He then cautiously nodded towards the Zhao Clan's people.

Zhao Wuye pursed his lips, his complexion grave. Looking at the sleepy Zhao Ziqi, he gritted his teeth and both his hands swiftly formed Dao-seals. In the same vein, Zhao Fenglai at the side made a Dao-seal.

Unexpectedly, their speed was exceptionally fast, so fast that only afterimages remained. The both of them formed a seal!

After ten-odd seconds, both of their heads were actually secreting beads of cold sweat. Suddenly, one of them extended their left fist and the other extended their right fist, bumping together. They shouted loudly: "Yin-Yang reincarnation, bend and straighten to pierce through the nether!"

Swoosh... In each of their hands, a half of the Eight Trigrams shockingly appeared, one of them black and one of them white. In the wake of this alternating black-white radiance, the Eight Trigrams immediately condensed together. Shortly afterwards, it disappeared from the duo's hands, but appeared behind Zhao Ziqi's body, slowly rotating.

Rustle... Rustle... Silent yet more touching than sound, after the Eight Trigrams rotated forty-nine times, Zhao Ziqi opened his eyes. The current him wasn't like a living person, and his expression was rather calm. Instead, the pupils in his eyes had already transformed into black-white symbols of the Eight Trigrams, quietly spinning!

Zhao Fenglai didn't have the time to wipe his sweat and yelled softly. A plate of Fuxi's Eight Trigrams were struck out and happened to rotate in front of Zhao Ziqi. In a twinkling, a projection of the honeycomb wall immediately cast onto the Eight Trigrams plate. At the same time, the image turned into a light screen and appeared before the entire Xingtian Legion. [\[1\]](#)

“The Netherpierce Eye... leads directly to the netherworld, the location of the Ten Heavenly Stems and Twelve Earthly Branches, the Five Phases and Eight Trigrams, and the Eight Desolaces and Six Essences. It cannot be found once among the myriad masses!” Zhao Wuye panted heavily. The seal just formed seemed to waste an endless amount of his physical strength. However, his gaze carried a limitless expectation as he looked at Zhao Ziqi: “All questions related to the Eight Trigrams and Fengshui... The Netherpierce Eye cleaves through every illusion to directly reach the heart!” [\[2\]](#)

No one spoke. Xu Yangyi studied the roughly meter-wide light screen in front of him with rapt attention. As expected... It really was the same as he thought!

The seemingly irregularly arranged honeycomb wall disturbed one’s line of sight because of countless holes, but...

It was an octagon!

An orderly octagon!

[1] Fuxi is an ancient Chinese god. He is said to have created the Eight Trigrams to understand and master the world. Brother to Nüwa. Also credited with helping create humanity, fishing, hunting, cooking, and Chinese characters.

[2] Ten Heavenly Stems and Twelve Earthly Branches - concepts used in ancient Chinese times to calculate date/time via cosmology.

Chapter 206: Danxia Temple (25)

At the same time, everyone looked at the portrait “cast” through the Netherpierce Eye. It was completely different from what their own eyes saw! As before... the honeycomb wall was in the Netherpierce Eye, yet there was color and depth to it! Altogether... there were four kinds of colors!

The center was deep and shallow, a streamlined figure. However, it formed the most primal taiji. As for the exterior, there were completely different dark-colored lines. A tremendous manifestation of the Eight Trigrams was formed! An image of the Eight Trigrams that was several thousand meters in size!

“It’s really awesome...” Li Zongyuan looked at all of this in shock and lifted his head to look at the exterior of the honeycomb wall. However, just as he raised his head, he discovered that it couldn’t be clearly discerned at all!

“If it weren’t for the Netherpierce Eye, everything would interfere with your vision.” Zhao Wuye laughed: “Fellow Daoists, please look.” He took a deep breath, and his complexion suddenly turned ruddy. Immediately afterwards, a mouthful of blood spurted onto the light screen. Both of his hands swiftly formed a seal: “Azure Dragon Opens Eye!”

Buzz... In the air, a strange fluctuation spread forth. Everyone raised a brow. This was because each person felt that there seemed to be a pair of eyes opening in the darkness. Passing through endless space and time, this gaze watched them.

“Interesting.” Xu Yangyi laughed: “As expected of specialized methods and techniques. The Xingtian Legion is unable to produce this level of incredible divine ability.”

“A majority of secret realms are the remnants of ancestors and Dao sanctums of seniors... Allow this old man to tell the truth, but the Xingtian Legion lacks talent in this aspect.” Zhao Fenglai

immediately followed up, calm and peaceful.

“Relax.” Xu Yangyi laughed: “I said that if we got out, I would allow Zhao Ziqi into the Xingtian Legion. I don’t go back on my promises.”

Zhao Fenglai barked twice in wry laughter, focusing his attention as he studied the light screen. After Zhao Wuye’s mouthful of blood sprayed out, it appeared to have spurted onto a solid object, similar to water rinsing glass. The entire Eight Trigrams... immediately moved!

“The Bright Gate...” Zhao Wuye’s entire face was flushed red, and he yelled softly, forcefully turning his hand. Without a moment’s delay, in the wake of the Eight Trigrams plate’s cracking noise, a pointer was indicated above the Death Gate! However, this region just happened to correspond with the Eight Trigrams’ Bright Gate on the light screen! At the same time, all the bloodstains on the light screen that had been dyed red with blood fell away. All that remained was a red dot that produced a flashing red light.

“Its here!” Zhao Fenglai’s gaze flashed, and he quickly closed his eyes and formed a Dao-seal. After a while, he opened his eyes and said: “The 272nd row... The 532nd column! This is it! No... hold on!”

His voice yet to fall, he shockingly discovered that the Eight Trigrams plate began to madly spin. The surface pointer swung about in disarray and didn’t even stop after a full ten minutes!

It was silent. After ages, Xu Yangyi asked lowly: “What’s going on?”

“I understand...” Zhao Fenglai opened both of his eyes. His eyes were entirely bloodshot, and he clenched his teeth: “This passage... isn’t fixed. It’s based on a specific time. There’s a power in the darkness that’s controlling all the entrance changes here!”

“How long?” Peony asked, her throat rasping.

“Can’t say for sure.” Zhao Wuye pondered and said: “I’ll have to examine it again... The time to enter the honeycomb wall is within this period. After we exceed it, we’ll be treading into the true Death Gate!”

No one spoke. Special issues were best handled by experts. In the present area, all the clans were at peace. Xu Yangyi and the rest had walked a separate path, but the other paths had massacred no less than several hundred people. Passing through the tempering of this path added onto the terrible and mighty name of Danxia Temple. Without absolute certainty in entering the honeycomb wall, no one would act rashly.

After an hour, the red dot twinkled again. Zhao Fenglai took a deep breath: “No... even the time isn’t fixed... Within this hour, this entrance changed location four times. The longest is twenty minutes, the shortest... is only three!”

Xu Yangyi mumbled as he studied the light screen and compass. After an extended period, he said seriously: “Examine it for another day. If there’s no change... the Xingtian Legion will enter the honeycomb wall.”

Another hour passed... Two hours... After a full eighteen hours, everyone’s faces had become terribly grave. There wasn’t any rule that could be followed! Regardless of region emergence or time, there absolutely wasn’t a hint of a rule! In the last second, the entrance was still at the very most east. In the next second, it was quite possibly at the furthest north!

They clearly understood that if a single misstep was made into one of the countless caves here, there would only be death! At this moment, an upheaval of qi passed through from the outside.

Someone’s gone in! This thought flashed in everyone’s minds. Xu Yangyi promptly removed the seal and formation that was encircling the Xingtian Legion, and everyone looked outside.

Under the guide of an extremely weird mecharune demon beast, five people gravely advanced towards the honeycomb wall, their faces heavy like water. With each of their steps, endless golden light appeared beneath their feet. On the ground, it formed the image of a strange old man. It was evidently a supremely awesome protective formation. In the sky, there was a black-clothed woman at the center. Both her eyes were shut and her ten fingers formed Dao-seals at lightning speed. An azure qi blade, roughly ten meters long, bobbed up and down in the air. [\[1\]](#)

“The Seven Great Lineages... The Mo Clan’s main clan...” After getting a clear look, everyone’s gazes looked towards Mo Yeyu. Soon after, they looked at the Eight Trigrams’ red dot.

“They’re... walking the wrong path...” Zhao Fenglai took a long sigh, yet didn’t have the slightest intention of going to dissuade them. The Mo Clan’s chosen path and the light screen’s marker were at odds, polar opposites of north and south.

“You’re not going to try to persuade them?” Qin Xueluan looked at Mo Yeyu and said: “Those are your clansmen.”

“Only the main clan. We’re just a branch.” Not only did Mo Yeyu not advise them, a smile of schadenfreude was exposed on his face instead: “Each and everyone of them ordinarily walks with their noses up to the sky. For them to die here is a natural matter of course.”

The Mo Clan’s five people were all seated on a flying magik artifact, and they chose a cave in the eightieth-something row. However, the present marker was the 400th row!

“Go on.” Xu Yangyi stowed his gaze and said calmly: “In another six hours... we have to enter.”

The people outside were all of China’s apex clans of the light. They were able to enter... but others couldn’t necessarily NOT enter!

Xu Yangyi could accept being late a day, but this was his bottom line! No one knew... whether behind the honeycomb wall there was mortal danger at every step or... a cultivation treasury!

Six hours passed quickly. The outside echoed with another several qi waves. Obviously, there were also some clans unable to endure and took the initiative to enter the honeycomb wall.

Swoosh... As the seal was undone again, all of the Xingtian Legion's personnel walked out. On the outside, there were still over forty people who hadn't entered.

"They..." Fahui's gaze faintly glimmered, but he said nothing.

Xu Yangyi beckoned. Zhao Ziqi and the light screen had long since vanished. Presently, all that remained was the Eight Trigrams compass held in Zhao Fenglai's hand.

In everyone's sight, the Xingtian Legion walked in front of the honeycomb wall a step at a time. Xu Yangyi nodded towards Mo Yeyu. Suddenly, both of Mo Yeyu's hands shook, and ten-plus hawk puppets emerged again. As for every person of the Xingtian Legion, they all jumped onto a hawk puppet. Each person held onto a medium-grade spirit stone in their hand, and they carried onwards to the middle of the honeycomb wall.

Looking down, everything appeared so tiny. Looking at the front... only the largeness of this honeycomb wall was felt below, so large that it was intimidating. Right now, as they approached, they felt... a kind of immense spiritual force! The pitch-blackness inside the endless caverns seemed to be the soul-devouring Nine Nether Hells! [\[2\]](#)

However, no one said anything. Even their breathing was so minute that it couldn't be heard.

"The last light point has gone dark." Zhao Fenglai stared fixedly at the compass, seemingly tranquil but his palm was in fact slick with cold sweat: "Based on today's observations, in at most ten

seconds... a path will appeared.”

No one spoke. Everyone was biding their time before the battle, heads rested on spears as they waited for dawn.

“Sister Nine! They’re going in!” God Ming Twelve watched the Xingtian Legion’s rear view in front of the honeycomb wall and gritted his teeth.

Sister Nine didn’t say a word. No one saw, but her hair had currently long since transformed into countless silken threads, unseen in their limits. Every ten threads entered a cave! And yet... half of her hair had already vanished without a trace.

“What’re you worried about?” Sister Nine’s gaze was frosty, and she clenched her teeth: “Damn... All of them are death paths... I don’t believe that my Heavenworm Weaves Silk Formation can’t scout out a survival path!”

One second... two seconds... On the tenth second, another vivid red dot suddenly emerged on the Eight Trigrams plate!

“703rd row! 532nd column!” Zhao Fenglai’s pupils swiftly needed!

In the next second, Xu Yangyi’s low cry was heard: “Go!”

Swoosh swoosh swoosh! The spirit stones in everyone’s hands were all squeezed into the hawk puppets’ mouths. The eyes of the puppets immediately emitted about a foot of red light. With blazing speed, they launched towards a cavern shortly afterwards!

Whoosh whoosh whoosh... As if they were soaring on a giant whale’s back, countless caverns swiftly flitted past at their sides. Ten seconds later, everyone stood in front of the cavern’s entrance!

“Inside here... is the honeycomb wall’s true passage...” Zhao Fenglai shivered all over in excitement, looking at the bottomless cavern: “W-We finally made it! I-I’m already itching to know what the heck is behind this!”

Xu Yangyi didn't say anything else but instead released several tens of three-eyed spirit ape puppets into the pitch-back cave in a single breath. After entering Danxia Temple, all his prior preparations were being assigned a use.

No one spoke. Through a thousand difficulties and ten thousand dangers, they had arrived here. Everyone wanted to know where this place lead and what secret was concealed!

After a full ten-odd minutes, Xu Yangyi's expression faintly changed. He turned his head and said: "Everyone... there's a Transference Formation inside."

"A Transference Formation?!" Everyone was dazed.

"Yes, my puppets have already went in. In addition..." He sucked in deeply: "There's qi on the other side!"

Nobody whatsoever had saw, but his hands held at his back were somewhat trembling! He didn't cultivate the Dao of Machine Puppets, and puppets couldn't share visual at all. However... whatever object that a puppet touched, he could vaguely feel it!

Moments ago... as the puppet trod into the Transference Formation, it had indeed touched something on the other side! It... was a flower.

A nine-petaled lotus! A lotus flower's traits were too distinct; he simply couldn't have made a mistake! Nonetheless, he hadn't "felt" water!

Lotus sea... Lotus sea! In his heart, these two words surged and raged endlessly. The Transference Formation... was quite possibly the end point of Danxia Temple's outer gate. The inside... was the true Danxia Temple!

Danxia Temple's... inner temple!

The final secret of the one of the Eight Great Deadlands! The secret of "first was Jiang Shang and later was Sun Bin; five centuries prior was Zhuge Liang and five centuries later was Liu

Bowen"! The secret of who in the end was the "me" in "save me"!

And also... what he looked forward to the most, the secret of the Animus Armament!

[1] "Mecharune" - Something I came up to use instead of always typing out "Machine Talisman Demon Beast Puppet".

[2] Nine Nether Hells - if you're familiar with the Chinese concept of "hell", you know that there are many different names. This particular one can also be translated "Nine Serenities"

Chapter 207: Danxia Temple (26)

“Let’s go, commander!” Quan Ningyue abruptly thumped the hammer in her hand: “Secret realm... This is Danxia Temple’s true secret realm! The things from before... were nothing more than just its appetizers!”

The others didn’t say much, but the expressions on their faces already betrayed their inner hearts. These expressions were eager and restless, jumping to give this secret realm a try. No one could mask this, yet none of them simply wanted to!

However, they looked over in doubt, and Xu Yangyi seriously turned around. On his serene face, his gaze was like lightning, sweeping over their faces one by one.

“There’s something that I haven’t told everyone.” Xu Yangyi lit a cigarette and leaned against the side of the cavern. He said insipidly: “All of you have to decide whether or not to walk the following path.”

“You...” Zhao Wuye looked at him in confusion. Before he even finished speaking, he was interrupted by Xu Yangyi’s raised hand.

“This here.” Xu Yangyi used his foot to stamp the ground: “Is Danxia Temple’s true door.”

Silence, but after three seconds, it was broken.

“Are you saying!? B-b-behind this is... is...” Peony covered her mouth in astonishment and fell back three steps: “D-D-D-Danxia Temple’s central region?!”

Everyone was stupefied. No one knew what Danxia Temple looked like and furthermore didn’t know where Danxia Temple’s outer temple and inner temple was located. Traveling throughout this journey was terribly dangerous, but from the beginning to the end, they still believed the distance apart from Danxia Temple was quite far. Nonetheless, Xu Yangyi was now telling them: You all

thought wrong. Just now was only the appetizer. We're already standing in front of Danxia Temple's door!

"You... Fellow Daoist, how do you know?" Zhao Fenglai asked incredulously.

"That's my business." Xu Yangyi stamped out the cigarette butt: "I'll only inform you of this fact. After this Transference Formation is the true Danxia Temple. As for myself, I'm going to go."

No one followed up with a word. None of them dared to.

The ominous name of the Eight Great Deadlands was too terrible and mighty. As the personnel of the Xingtian Legion pondered this, they realized this was the place where their commander had resolved to test his blade since the very beginning. He had long since taken aim at Danxia Temple's central region! Talking about exploring the surroundings was nothing more than a pretense!

Xu Yangyi didn't speak as well. From the start, he had indeed planned on exploring the surroundings. However... as he truly walked before the honeycomb wall, he discovered that he couldn't do so!

The Animus Armament's summons, a path of countless secrets, the curiosity in his heart, and the blood in his veins were all screaming: Go down and look! Even if hell is below!

He chose to follow the heart. The Zhao Clan's people were also stupefied. Danxia Temple... This name could even make cultivators change color upon hearing it! They never thought that they had actually excavated Danxia Temple's front door! They moreover hadn't thought that behind this honeycomb wall... was the true Danxia Temple!

"This... back side, is Fellow Daoist certain that it's Danxia Temple?" Zhao Wuye even felt this to be too much of a fantasy. The noun "Danxia Temple" was too distant apart from Qi

Condensation cultivators. He doubted if what he just heard was merely a trick of the ear.

“I’m very certain. To the extent that I’m going to tell everyone that the danger from before compared to the next side...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze looked towards the cavern’s depth: “Is only a single hair from nine oxen. The space below is very large. Moreover... there’s a demon with an immensely huge demon form. I don’t know whether It’s good or evil. Its a living creature.”

A single sentence caused everyone to tremble. After ages, Li Zongyuan said with his voice shaking: “H-how b-big is It?”

“At least a thousand meters.” Xu Yangyi said calmly: “I saw a photo. In the area where the photo was taken, It was already over a thousand meters. How long It is specifically is unknown. Based on Its shape, It might be a fish.”

“Over... a thousand meters...” Zhao Fenglai fell back two steps. His complexion was a pale stretch, devoid of the slightest color. Cultivators realized the meaning of this.

This demon transcended the Core Formation realm!!!

“In that case...” Jun Man harshly clenched his teeth: “Are there even opportunities?”

“I don’t know.” Xu Yangyi said lowly: “Based on the account of the Fellow Daoist who accidentally entered, no opportunities were discovered. However, the time he stayed was extremely short, no more than several days. The place where the Transference Formation sent him stretched out as far as the eye could see. After he saw this demon, he immediately departed. As a result, it’s unclear.”

“In the end.” He observed everyone: “This is all from that Fellow Daoist’s statement. So, when Danxia Temple flushed out lotus petals, it wasn’t until then that I decided to test my blade here. The specifics about the area where the Transference Formation takes

you is unknown. I can only say with great assurance that it's the place that the Fellow Daoist spoke of back then, but I'm not positive."

"Everybody's mission to get here is finished. I want to go take a look underneath. After I return alive to the Xingtian Legion, the conditions that I promised to all of you will be done."

The mood was deathly silent. No one spoke. Each person's gaze twinkled as they contemplated.

Eventually, Quan Ningyue was the first to speak: "I've decided to go take a look, too." She said resolutely: "After the transference... is the true secret realm. We've arrived at this step; I don't have to heart to just leave like this. Among Qi Condensation cultivators, Foundation Establishment seniors, and even Core Formation ancestors, nobody knows what's underneath. Since I've already arrived at the door, there's no reason not to look!"

"I'll naturally go wherever master goes." Li Zongyuan declared his position, resolving his heart. In any case, if Xu Yangyi died, he would die as well. He was better off entering together. Good or bad... wouldn't he be able to see what this deadland throughout the ages was like before dying?

"Don't think you can get rid of me!" Mao Ba'er stuck out his tongue: "There's definitely a great treasury down below! And you want to hog such a great destiny all to yourself?!"

"I..."

Just as Peony was about to open her mouth, Xu Yangyi shook his head: "You don't have to go. If something happens to me, only you know how to assign my remnants. If someone must stay with the Xingtian Legion, it's you."

Peony still wanted to say something, but Xu Yangyi's brows furrowed. A streak of qi delivered her onto a hawk puppet, and the puppet flew down. But the more important reason was... that she

was too weak. She didn't have any defensive power, and even Xu Yangyi himself who was entering found it difficult to ensure his own defense.

“Declare your standings.” Xu Yangyi's gaze brushed over every person: “If you're willing to go, come with me. However, it's likely you'll lose your life. If you're not willing to go, head back first to the Xingtian Legion and recuperate. Wait for us to return.”

One by one, people silently stood at Xu Yangyi's side. All of them were legionnaires of the Xingtian Legion. Fang Cheng was the first to walk over and stand. Afterwards, it was Yao Xintan and Zhan Twelve. Gritting his teeth, Zhao Wuye also stood out and walked over. In the present scene, only Mo Yeyu, Qin Xueluan, Jun Man, and Zhao Fenglai remained.

“Have you gone insane...” Zhao Fenglai locked his eyes fixedly on Zhao Wuye, his gaze incomparably complex. In his eyes, there was admiration, impulse, but even more fear: “The area behind this wall is Danxia Temple! Danxia Temple's central region!”

“I know!” Zhao Wuye was drenched in sweat as if he was making a decision between life and death. His face was somewhat twisting: “But... if I don't go after having come here... how can I find peace?!”

Zhao Fenglai's eyes reddened. After ages, he firmly grinded his teeth: “You've really gone insane...” He cupped his hands towards Xu Yangyi: “In that case... we'll take out leave from this point on... Fellow Daoist Xu, I sincerely admire you. At the same time... I also hope you come out alive...”

“I'll bear your lucky words.” Xu Yangyi was like an old well without ripples. Smiling, he faced Zhao Fenglai and cupped his hands: “Have a safe journey. Be careful, everyone.”

Zhao Fenglai nodded and said nothing. He sat on the hawk puppet and flew down.

“Commander.” Jun Man took the initiative to speak: “Being fearless isn’t ignorance of what’s at stake. I can’t go this place. At the same time, I want to urge you not to go too, commander.”

“Thanks.” Xu Yangyi sighed: “I don’t want to go as well. It’s just that I have a reason that I must go.”

Mo Yeyu pursed his lips: Even if you lose your life?”

Xu Yangyi staunchly answered: “If I don’t go, the consequences will be even more terrifying than losing my life.”

The Animus Armament... Its true secret and what it wanted to tell him was down underneath! He HAD to go. He couldn’t turn back once he cultivated this path. In the same vein, it was moreover impossible... to cultivate something that he didn’t even clearly understand.

Starting from moments ago... the Animus Armament... was already making a kind of snarling noise. In his head, it reverberated boundlessly! From inside it, he heard excitement, expectation, hunger and thirst, and moreover... a hatred that crossed over a millennium!

Mo Yeyu sighed deeply: “In that case, take care of yourself, commander.”

“Thanks.” Xu Yangyi looked towards Qin Xueluan: “Fellow Daoist Qin, you’re not intending on continuing, as well?”

“Yes.” Qin Xueluan shook her head: “After I entered the cave... my Blue-Eyed Heavenpede has already warned me over ten times. If I go in, I might end up digging myself an early grave. I’m in favor of Fellow Daoist Jun’s words. Being fearless isn’t ignorance of what’s at stake.”

“Okay.” Xu Yangyi swiped the storage ring on his finger, and the box with the Rootless Nine Bends Aqua fell into his hand. He passed it over: “Put it away and wait for us to return.” Pausing, he supplemented: “If we still haven’t returned in five years, the

Xingtian Legion is disbanded. Leave a portion of this item to compensate the Fellow Daoists who died in battle. All of you can do as you see fit with everything else.”

Xu Yangyi spoke gently, not like he was leaving on a life-death journey in the slightest. Fang Cheng glanced at him: “Junior brother, you’re pretty relaxed. You ain’t kidding, are you?”

“I’ve known of this matter since the beginning. I’ve mentally prepared myself. Of course I’m a lot more relaxed than everybody else.” Xu Yangyi laughed and took a deep breath afterwards: “Everybody! Move out! Let’s go... tear open Danxia Temple’s final veil!”

Their silhouettes gradually disappeared into the cavern’s darkness. Following their silhouettes with her eyes, Qin Xueluan sighed deeply after a good while: “I admire them a lot.”

“Yeah...” Mo Yeyu said, touched with deep emotion: “But... this place is too dangerous. And the opportunities are unclear, I...”

“Don’t talk.” Jun Man’s gaze rippled: “Right now... we have to take care of the Xingtian Legion and wait for commander and the others to return.”

Xu Yangyi and the rest were none the wiser to these words. This was because they had already walked to the cave’s very bottom. There inside... was a Transference Formation flickering with light.

Nobody spoke. To go in here was to enter Danxia Temple’s ultimate chapter. No one knew what things were waiting for them there. Furthermore, no one knew about what opportunities were there.

A heart vacantly unknown, searching about, and uniquely pure and innocent like a newborn babe, seeking nothing more than the Dao.

“Everybody.” Xu Yangyi took a deep breath. As he opened his eyes, the last smidgen of reverence disappeared from his eyes and

was replaced with an incredible battle intent: “I’ll take the first step.”

His voice yet to fall, he trod into the Transference Formation. A green light sparked, and his entire person vanished into thin air. Each remaining person took a few deep breaths.

“The junior brother went in, so how what the heck is the senior brother still waiting for?” Fang Cheng chuckled merrily: “I’m gonna go ahead too!”

After him, Yao Xintan and Zhan Twelve stepped in. Everyone else then followed. The opportunity was a mystery, yet such curiosity and searching mentality towards Danxia Temple, one of the Eight Great Deadlands, caused them to make this step of surmounting themselves!

This step was merely an insignificant step. A step into the Transference Formation. However, it caused their Dao hearts at this moment to be incomparably firm! Completely lacking in tears or gaps!

Chapter 208: Danxia Temple (27)

Jiang Shang first and Sun Bin last; Zhuge Liang five centuries prior and Liu Bowen five centuries later. Yet among them, the Legend of the White Snake had suddenly appeared. Moreover... the “Xiaoqing”, who always followed the white snake at her side, held a relationship of the greatest importance with the azure carp.

Xiaoqing... had no name... She was actually a supporting character, or because her name was too old and distant, it had been drowned in history’s long river.

The Animust Armament’s roar-like summons, the sword point’s trembling, and a sovereign king’s Millennium Grudge. All secrets would be solved here...

And who had carved the characters strokes in the Yellow Springs path, wanting someone to go down and save them? Xu Yangyi’s mind circled a thousand times and revolved a hundred. As he opened his eyes and took a quick glance, he immediately looked at the sky in shock.

In the sky, there was a formation... A tremendous formation! It was night, but each golden talismans engraved on it was enough to destroy Xu Yangyi ten million times!

“Where’s that mighty person...” Xu Yangyi breathed in deeply with great, stirred with emotion. The formation was boundless, enveloping the entire space. And as for this space...

His gaze flashed. Everything before his eyes caused him to feel familiarity yet confusion.

The lotus sea! This was indeed the lotus sea! The infinite lotus sea... Its limits were simply unseen! In the surroundings, there wasn’t a tree, a gust of wind, or a ray of light. There were moreover no stars in the night sky. Even if there were, they would still be covered up without a trace by the tremendous formation.

Beneath all of this, there were no mountains and borders. All that entered the eye was a vast lotus sea!

“The lotus sea... It really is here!” In Xu Yangyi’s heart, hot blood rushed. It was here that he had encountered the Eternal Alchemy Canon for the first time. It was here that he had witnessed the all-present azure carp. And it was here... that he was erased for three years of time!

All secrets... were now below his eyes, waiting for him to uncover them. How could he not be excited? Not thirsting for this?

“But...” He cautiously stood in his original position, motionless. His spiritual sense mobilized all around and observed everything in the surroundings. This was the lotus sea... but not like the lotus sea!

There was no water!

When he had come, this place was daytime, a domain of serenity. Hidden fragrances floated and drifted. The sky welcomed the boundless jade of the lotus leaves, and the sun shining on the lotus flowers struck out a different kind of red. Nonetheless, at this moment... this place was already completely dried up!

Withered lotus leaves sprouted out from the ground and covered the sun overhead. Xu Yangyi forcefully stamped the ground. It was rather solid. Even to the extent that he could see dust kicking up as his foot stamped down. This illustrated that this place had already been dried up for an awfully long time.

“No...” He mumbled and sat down cross-legged: “Looking at the area here and the amount of lotus flowers, there’s no doubt that this is the lotus sea. But if this is the lotus sea, why is it completely different from what I saw that day? There’s no water... Why did the hundred streams that formed a diagram come out? And it’s not like the earth quality completely dried up recently.”

“More importantly...” He sucked in deeply, his gaze

incomparably serious: “That giant fish... wasn’t It here? If It’s here, where did It go?”

Lotuses and lotus leaves grew out from every little cranny, yet all of them were wilted. With a pinch of the hand, they immediately became dried-up yellow scraps, falling and withering layer by layer. Likewise, they absolutely couldn’t have attained this withered state in a short time.

In particular... there wasn’t a single person in his surroundings. Everyone that he had transferred together with had been split apart! Yet the strangest thing was... that the Animus Armament, which had still been incredibly excited in the past, was now completely quiet! Even the sword point was the same!

Xu Yangyi meditated in his original position for a long time. There was qi in this place. Although the qi couldn’t be regarded as dense, it was passable. He adjusted himself to peak condition but didn’t launch a signal whatsoever.

However, it wasn’t just him... At this moment, there were countless people awakening. In the same vein, not one of them used a similar method. The reason was very simple. Perhaps those who would rush over... weren’t on their side! If the people closest to him was the Ming Clan, maybe this would be the place where he lost his life.

“If all of them really are the geniuses of every major clan, then each step has to be taken very carefully...” He smiled and licked his lips, standing up: “But... at the same time, that tells me one thing.”

Xu Yangyi settled his thoughts and looked all around. Whether or not this place was the lotus sea... there was one thing that could verify it the most accurately! The giant lotus flower... that he had first saw with the Eternal Alchemy Canon! And also the ancient pavilion on top of the lotus! As long this structure was here, then there wasn’t a shadow of a doubt that this was the lotus sea!

“Anyways... this issue is simple to talk about, but in the current

circumstances...” He knitted his brows and tore at lotus leaves at his side. He gently waved and the lotus leaves transformed into golden dust in the wind.

This... should’ve originally been the lotus sea’s bottom. To be able to hold that giant demon form, one could imagine how deep the lotus sea was. Several thousand meters... even ten thousand meters was possible! As for the lotuses back then that floated on the water’s surface and blotted out the sky... One could picture what degree that these lotus roots grew to!

Xu Yangyi’s gaze looked all around. It was like a forest of withered lotuses. The ground was piled up with the remains of lotus leaves after having wilted. The height of the remaining lotus leaves didn’t exceed two meters at all. The longest ones had dried up and withered early on. However... these two meters of height boundlessly concealed one’s line of sight!

“Such circumstances can be said to be a two-fold problem.” Both his hands formed a Dao-seal: “Pill Cauldron Builds Spirit!”

Swoosh! With him as the core, a ray of spiritual sense swept forth like a storm! Even the surrounding withered lotus leaves danced. A radar with a 300-meter diameter greatly increased his detection strength. Continuously using Pill Cauldron Builds Spirit was quite the waste of spiritual force, but his storage ring was filled up with pill elixirs that restored spiritual force. To say that the last pill master in the End of Days lacked pill elixir and what not... was a lost of face.

“I’m the only one within 300 meters...” He coolly planned on stowing his spiritual sense, but all of a sudden, he stopped. All his energy concentrated towards a single direction!

The lotus sea was too immense. North, south, east, and west were simply incapable of being distinguished. In addition, the whereabouts of the center was a mystery. However... at this moment, in a region unknown to whether or not it was the center,

he clearly sensed... an especially heavy qi!

“This is...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed. Bereft of the slightest hesitation, but with great caution, he grabbed onto a hawk puppet and flew up about seven to eight meters high. Subsequently... he laid eyes upon a marvel that one was hard-pressed to forget!

In the black night and below the wilted lotus leaves... a giant white object commanded one’s focus like the scattering of bloody meat chunks in a hunting ground! Even separated so far away, Xu Yangyi could still “see” that this object was unreasonably large. Soon after, he used both his hands and spread out his thumb and index finger in front of him. In basic mortal knowledge, this was a method to measure a distance objects size. After ages, he pulled his hands back. Ripples had already appeared in his heart.

“The length... is at least 4,500 meters... The width is unable to be measured. What the heck is this thing?”

Without any hesitation, he immediately ran towards the object. If he could discover this, then others could find it as well. That... was the place where all cultivators who survived entering Danxia Temple’s central region would gather!

He leapt over lotus flowers and walked for an unknown passage of time. One hours... perhaps two hours... Six hours... As he dashed with full strength, a fierce qi wave suddenly passed into his spiritual sense from not too far away.

There was someone fighting ahead! Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed, and he immediately restrained his aura. Using the softest movements, he slowly advanced to the area where the qi erupted.

Two late-stage Qi Condensation... Moreover, they weren’t normal late stages... As he walked while sensing the qi fluctuations, an outline gradually appeared in his mind.

The two people were indistinguishable. As for both of them... between the duo, he dared not say that he could easily defeat them!

Even if he was able to win, it wouldn't be effortless at all!

Silent, he approached the region from where the qi erupted, like a cat. In the folded layers of wilted lotus leaves, he could already make out two fighting people.

A man and a woman. The man was wearing a white long gown, simply not resembling a cultivator. Yet as he waved his hand, bamboo leaves transformed and pierced towards the woman like sharp swords.

The woman... could be considered an acquaintance.

Sister Nine!

Her face wore a cold grin. An odd ancient corpse seemed to come alive, and the man's bamboo leaves were unable to stab through it at all. They could only trap this opponent, yet Sister Nine's hair, like a spider's spun web, surprisingly wrapped up the environment into a cocoon over a gradual amount of time! A cocoon with a radius of several tens of meters!

"Why are you being like this, Fellow Daoist?" Rather than a cultivator, the white-gowned man was instead more like a doctor. His complexion was unstirred, absent of great billows: "This Li has never crossed with the Ming Clan. Why must you insist on these irreconcilable animosities? What reason is there to engage in these minor issues while there is a greater danger at hand? The mantis stalks the cicada, unaware of the oriole behind."

"CSIB hound... since you're going to die, there's no need to know more." Sister Nine cackled over and over. At her side, there was an ancient three-meter-tall corpse. Its facial features were ashen and it was donned in ancient armor from head to toe, however, its speed was incredibly nimble. At its fingertips, there were half-meter-long black nails like blades. Once they swept through, the surrounding wilted lotus leaves sprinkled down in succession: "To die by This Palace's hand can be regarded as your good fortune."

“Fellow Daoist God Ming speaks so easily.” The opposing man wasn’t colored by fear: “You dare to fight me to the death here? Although my cultivation is inferior to yours, you’ll have to waste a great amount of effort if you want to kill me. If there’s someone waiting on an opportunity right now, hehehe... The Ming Clan’s enemies don’t seem to be less than the CSIB’s, no?”

In this place... everyone had torn off their masks of hypocrisy. This was an asura ground of blood and fire. Only the truly powerful could obtain treasures and return with them. Here, only the most naked and primal law of the jungle was upheld!

As he smiled and sauntered leisurely, he raised a hand and another qi bamboo leaf flew out to the other side. He laughed faintly: “What do you say? Fellow Daoist?”

Sister Nine’s gaze suddenly jumped, and she couldn’t help but to look. At that moment, the gaze of cultivator Li slightly flickered. An azure serpent shadow quietly followed the ground and spread forth!

Xu Yangyi’s brows furrowed a little bit as well, but he immediately understood. No one had discovered him.

This cultivator Li wasn’t Sister Nine’s opponent, but he was rather crafty. This region... Indeed, before people had yet to completely gather and the appearance of benefits, killing the other was a minor issue once she took action. The greatest worry was that someone was lying in wait to reap an opportunity!

This was the other’s diversion. He wanted to split Sister Nine’s attention for an instant!

Swoosh swoosh swoosh! At this moment, a part of Sister Nine’s hair seemed to suddenly come alive. Before she herself even reacted, it fiercely ran through the azure snake shadow!

In the wake of an alarmed cry, the ground blossomed with an orb of cyan light, and the serpent shadow died away in a flash.

Cultivator Li was unable to prevent himself from hacking out a mouthful of blood. He laughed hatefully: “The Ming Clan’s Sister Nine... As expected, your great reputation isn’t unfounded.”

Yet at this time, Sister Nine’s gaze flashed. She glared daggers towards Xu Yangyi’s direction: “Which Fellow Daoist is it? Haven’t you been watching this play for a while? Hiding your tail in the shadows, can you even be considered a cultivator?”

Chapter 209: Danxia Temple (28)

Cultivator Li stared blankly. There really was someone? From the beginning of his encounter with Sister Nine, he had prepared himself to die. There was almost no chance of victory for a lone cultivator against a demon cultivator of the same stage. The Ming Clan... was the demon clan with the heaviest killing nature. Moments ago, he had only exerted all his power to fight, but to his surprise, there was truly someone present?

In the surroundings, no one answered.

Sister Nine's smile became even icier: "Do you need me to ask..."

Just as her voice fell, countless black hairs suddenly drilled out from the earth in Xu Yangyi's surroundings. They straightened out like needles, seemingly like vigilant cobras, and all targeted Xu Yangyi!

At some unknown time... Sister Nine's hair was akin to a radar-like snake, already searching out the area he was standing. Cultivator Li's voice from moments ago had completely put her on guard.

Sister Nine didn't attack. Making enemies in this place without cause wasn't rational behavior by any means. Especially... there wasn't a single person able to enter this place that was an ordinary character! Based on simply what she knew, there were a few people that weren't below her in the slightest!

Silent, cultivator Li inwardly wiped at the cold sweat on his head. He tightly pursed his lips and looked all around. If there wasn't anyone... he was bound to die!

After an unknown passage of time, a rustling noise echoed. A tall male silhouette emerged in front of the two people.

"It's a small world." Xu Yangyi smiled as he cupped his hands: "Fellow Daoist, this really is a coincidence."

“It’s you?” “It’s you!!!”

A bewildered voice and a pleasantly surprised voice rang out simultaneously!

Cultivator Li’s heart suddenly calmed down. Without a second word, he turned around and fled towards the other side of lotus leaves. As for Sister Nine, her expression changed. The light of her eyes glimmered as she watched the direction that cultivator Li left for, but she didn’t speak.

“How is Fellow Daoist here?” Sister Nine’s hair swiftly pulled back, and she narrowed her eyes and studied Xu Yangyi: “I really didn’t expect... that the Xingtian Legion would actually get here alive.”

Xu Yangyi laughed faintly: “How I got here isn’t important. If there’s nothing else, it’s better for us to think of each other rather than meet.”

Sister Nine’s face like an old well without the slightest ripple, and she smiled faintly: “Since you’ve come... why must you be so anxious to leave?”

The crook of Xu Yangyi’s mouth slightly curved, and his eyes swept all around like a knife. He said calmly: “I want to warn you of something. I don’t want to keep splitting hairs in this place. But...” His voice changed and became terribly chilly: “Just because I don’t want to cause trouble doesn’t mean that I’m afraid. If anybody dares to provoke me here, I don’t mind trading a move or two.”

Sister Nine pursed her lips. Unexpectedly, she didn’t say anything. Concerning Xu Yangyi, the two of them had once crossed hands. In the same vein, she was dreading the consequences in her heart.

Xu Yangyi faced Sister Nine and casually cupped his hands, turning around to leave. Yet at the same time, Sister Nine’s calm

voice was heard: “Hold on.”

As Xu Yangyi turned around, his smile was already quite dangerous: “Do you have pointers to give?”

Sister Nine took a deep breath: “The Ming Clan can wipe the slate for everything in the past.”

“Oh?” Xu Yangyi raised a brow, smiling yet not smiling.

“But...” Sister Nine inhaled heavily: “There is an item that you must return to the Ming Clan.”

“From here onwards about Eighteen’s matter, I’ll act as if I was never aware. The Ming clan will naturally rescind your warrant. And...” She revealed a deep smile: “In this place watched by tigers and wolves, the Ming Clan can even... work together with the Xingtian Legion.”

Xu Yangyi coldly looked at her. Eventually, he sneered: “You want that pelt scroll?”

Sister Nine’s gaze flickered. She didn’t deny it nor did she confirm it.

“You have a minute to decide whether or not you want to speak.” Xu Yangyi looked straight in the other’s eyes: “After a minute, I’ll consider any obstruction to be a provocation.”

In the end, Sister Nine laughed coldly: “Fellow Daoist sure is confident.”

The duo’s gazes collided like swords in the air. Xu Yangyi nodded: “You can come try.”

Silence. After these words, the two of them completely sunk into silence. Sister Nine’s eyes revealed consideration, and Xu Yangyi didn’t urge her. Like so, time flowed past unhurriedly. The noiseless second hand of a clock seemed to ring out in the air. Ten seconds passed. Twenty seconds. Thirty seconds. Forty seconds passed.

“If you give the pelt scroll to me, I’m willing to share its secret with you.” Once fifty-two seconds passed, Sister Nine finally hardened her heart and said: “This generation’s God Ming has altogether twenty wives. Eighteen and I were siblings from the same mother. It was I that originally found this item, but he stole it from me. Even if you didn’t kill him, I would’ve pulled out his tendons and removed his bones.”

At last, Xu Yangyi displayed a smile: “He isn’t your little brother?”

“Does that trash...” Sister Nine sneered: “Even deserve to be called younger brother and older sister with myself?”

“So how about? What have you decided?” She appeared to not want to waste a scrap of time on God Ming Eighteen’s beheaded body. With cool eyes, she gazed at Xu Yangyi and said: “Except for myself, no one can undo the seal on it. You’ll also never know about its true appearance.”

Xu Yangyi’s expression was motionless. After a short period, he swiped his storage ring, and an ancient pelt scroll flew out. It floated in the air. Sister Nine’s eyes brightened. However, Xu Yangyi didn’t hand it over to the other. He said calmly: “Proof. This is the prerequisite that we can discuss.”

“Your caution disgusts me.” Sister Nine snorted coldly. Without another spare word, she gently cut her finger, and a drop of blood immediately flew towards the pelt scroll.

The instant the blood drop and the pelt scroll touched, Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed. Right in front of him... he actually sensed the pelt scroll oddly stiffen!

Ruuuustle... A noise similar to silkworms spitting out silk was heard. The “pelt” began to peel apart sliver by sliver. Xu Yangyi watched with rapt attention for several seconds and said lowly: “This is silk?”

“Correct.” Sister Nine gazed straight into his eyes: “It’s silk... A seal magic passed down in the Ming Clan for a thousand years. Without the Ming Clan’s bloodline there’s no way it can be undone.”

Xu Yangyi turned his gaze and looked at Sister Nine, laughing: “You’re not worried that I’ll take this and leave?”

“It doesn’t matter.” Sister Nine likewise answered with a laugh: “Could it be that Fellow Daoist believes that a single drop of blood can completely undo the seal?”

Their words secretly crossed swords. Between the two young foxes, neither seized a small advantage. The blood drop caused half of the pelt scroll to “stiffen”, but stopped at that point.

Sister Nine didn’t speak, only gazing straight at Xu Yangyi. Several drops of blood revolved around her finger, but didn’t otherwise go over.

Xu Yangyi mumbled for several seconds. Spiritual force swirling at his fingertips, he cut the half-soft, half-hard pelt scroll in half and launched it high in the air. At the same time, both of them seemed to be joined in heart. Sister Nine’s gaze flashed, and her finger slightly moved. Another several blood drops sprinkled onto the pelt scroll in Xu Yangyi’s hand.

These two odd partners—sharing the same bed yet holding different dreams—silently completed the first exchange of trust. The blood pearl appeared to be ink penetrating into water. The silk on the pelt scroll in Xu Yangyi’s hand seemed to come across boiling water and started to slowly come off layer by layer. [\[1\]](#)

In a flash, the silk finished coming off. As for the object in his hand, it had already transformed into...

A shell!

It was unknown what creature’s shell this was. The shell was only a little chunk and couldn’t be considered hard. However, the

texture was rather strange. Its blackishness carried a rosy color as if... it was just about to break.

The shell was quite smooth, but its back side used the colors white, azure, and violet to sketch out a diagram with four paths. The route's end point completely used white, azure, or violet to paint dots of all different colors.

“Good...” Sister Nine took a deep breath: “I like working together with people who keep their promises... although if you're collaborating with me, those who break their promises have long since become corpses...”

“Don't use the Ming Clan's name to pressure me.” Xu Yangyi smiled indifferently, yet his smile concealed a thick killing intent: “I dared to kill a God Ming Eighteen, I don't care much more about killing a God Ming Nine at all. Do you... want to try?”

“Hehe...” The crook of Sister Nine's mouth curved upwards, yet she didn't smile. At the very least, the first step of this duo's partnership could be regarded as congenial.

Sister Nine didn't spare another word but rather swiped the storage ring on her hand. A toad statue, seemingly jade yet not jade, flew out from the inside and revolved as it fell on the ground. The top of the toad's head was lit with a foot-long incense stick, yet at this moment, the incense stick had already burned down to over half until only a third remained!

A bizarre, delicate fragrance suddenly pervaded the area. An excited flush quietly spread across Sister Nine's face. Even she, who was sophisticated and reserved, was somewhat unable to hold herself back right now.

“Wait a moment... Fellow Daoist...” She sucked in deeply and licked her lips: “In another hour... you'll see a marvel that you'll never forget for the rest of your life...”

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. His spiritual force was ready to revolve

to the peak at any time. He didn't take his eyes off the jade toad as he stared at it.

Time drifted on by the minute and second. After roughly forty minutes passed, the toad's eyes cried, suddenly flowing out with two lines of scarlet fluid! In addition, the incense on the top of its head began to fiercely ignite! It was to the extent that it made crackling noises and combusted out a chain of dazzling sparks!

Swoosh... At this time, a great blood-red formation was faintly discernible underneath the pair's feet! It seemed as if it had always existed here. In this instant, this formation had been roused!

The formation wasn't large, approximately around twenty meters. As for the place where they stood, it was shockingly located in the center!

Furthermore... this entire formation wasn't one that Xu Yangyi had ever witnessed! He didn't know how it should've been described. If it had to be insisted upon, this formation gave him a kind of desolate and ancient feeling. It was like this formation structure's calligraphy and qi construction had been engraved countless years and moons ago. The formation appeared not to be something of modern Cultivation Civilization!

"This is?" Xu Yangyi's eyes burst with spirited light, and he promptly fell back several steps. Sister Nine also seemed to have been startled, leaping outside the formation at the same time.

"You need not be anxious." The duo cautiously studied the formation, and Sister Nine clenched her teeth: "The Ming Clan is a thousand-year-old clan. Our research concerning the Eight Great Deadlands is unquestionably ranked among the best of China's hundreds of clans. This formation is a sealed array. It's not dangerous at all..."

Her voice yet to fall, the two of them jumped out of the array in the next second. An azure light pillar no less than twenty meters in diameter appeared! From the inside of the formation's entire

surface, it charged forth!

RUMBLE!!! A majestic qi erupted in a flash. The azure light pillar dragged out a resplendent brilliance in the night! It went directly to the horizon!

In the wake of this skybound light pillar shining, withered lotuses all around and countless fragments actually ascended upwards. However, in contrast to this tremendous light pillar, they seemed to merely be butterflies revolving around the side of this enormous azure tree.

The entire night had been illuminated by this azure pillar. At this moment, people everywhere all looked upon this incredibly gorgeous light pillar!

“This is...” In an expanse of wilted lotuses, Fahui’s eyes quietly opened, and he watched from an unknown distance away. The azure pillar charged straight to the horizon, and he coldly gasped: “Good fortune.”

In another lotus patch, the Nangong Clan’s sixth young master suddenly raised his head to look at the nearby azure light pillar. His gaze sparked, and he didn’t say anything. The camouflage clothing on his back crumbled apart without warning, and the muscles on his entire back seemed to come alive, madly bulging. After several seconds, a pair of black wings whooshed out and carried his figure to frantically rush towards the azure light pillar!

In the horizon, three silver stars brightened. Three rays of sword light screamed forth. On each sword, there was a solemn-faced young Daoist standing.

Everyone knew what this was. In any secret realm, their existence caused people to be immensely eager.

Arcane efforts! Medicinal pills! Secret treasures!

The use of all titles to name it was correct, but perhaps there was still a more direct term.

Fortune! Destiny!

[1] “Sharing the same bed yet holding different dreams” - Chinese idiom. An idea of “Same plan, but different agendas”

Chapter 210: Danxia Temple (29)

Xu Yangyi's and Sister Nine's breathing were both somewhat rushed. This wasn't an ordinary destiny... This was a present originating from Danxia Temple! It was their affirmation at each step for breaking through alligator gars, furiously slaying a livyatan, braving the Yellow Springs path, and finally arriving here!

Zhang Guangyao had the fortune to come out alive from the Dragon Hole, so there existed today's Ancestor Floatingcloud. In the same vein, the Dragon Hole was one of the Eight Great Deadlands. Danxia Temple wasn't necessarily incapable of producing another Ancestor Floatingcloud!

"This is what Fellow Daoist means by 'not dangerous at all'?" Xu Yangyi glanced apathetically at Sister Nine. If they were late by a second, this instantaneous explosion of qi would immediately run them into flying ash!

Sister Nine snorted coldly: "That was just a rumor from the clan. How could I know about the real situation? Besides..." Her gaze was like fire as she looked towards the light pillar: "Fellow Daoist... you think that now's... still the time to be concerned about such a question?"

Xu Yangyi spoke no further... because everyone could feel it and everyone could see it! Inside the twenty-meter-radius azure skybound pillar, there was an orb of extremely pure and boundless qi and also... a faintly visible silhouette that was bobbing up and down within.

It was unable to be compared... This azure light pillar's qi could already be considered magnificent and limitless. However, in comparison to the object inside it... it was a difference of substance! If a comparison had to be insisted on, it could be said that the exterior was covered in a gemstone's shell, and the inside

was the true icy imperial jade!

The heart-shaking, hair-raising worldly qi began to boil, seemingly returning to the supreme purity of primordial genesis. Although the object still couldn't be clearly see, it was already enough to cause duo's hearts to madly pound without end!

"So the white, azure, and violet symbols on top... represent Danxia Temple's opportunities?" Xu Yangyi locked his eyes fixedly on the object in the light pillar and said lowly.

"That's right..." Sister Nine licked her lips and hoarsely laughed: "Altogether, there are nine locations. Six... white, two azure, and one violet! This azure destiny can only be found by me."

Xu Yangyi was silent but even now he was at full alert in his heart. After an unknown passage of time... the light pillar disappeared! But now... there were already people rushing over! He could clearly sense a figure 300 meters away. It like rushing thunder and flashing lightning, its speed unfathomable! It was charging straight towards where they were!

And this were merely the first. There were still an untold number of people already hurrying over en route.

"It seems... there's going to be a fierce battle."

Swooosh... The light pillar finally showed signs of weakening. In no more than three seconds, all that remained of the skybound azure light was a beam with an arm's thickness. The item inside was shadowy and indistinct.

Nonetheless, its might didn't weaken at all! Instead... it seemed to condense within this thread of spiritual light, causing one to feel that their qi sea was trembling upon taking a glance!

No one was willing to go test out its might. Xu Yangyi's and Sister Nine's entire bodily qi cycled to the peak. They merely watched it without averting their eyes.

As all that was left of the light pillar was a thumb-thick tendril,

the object was finally rid of all veils. It completely appeared before the duo. After Sister Nine clearly saw the object within, she gasped coldly at once: “Heavens... This... How is this possible... How could it be this item?!”

“This... is a Heavenmend Stone!”

An irregular fist-sized stone was peacefully floating three to four meters off the ground. From bottom to top, it was pure and sparkling. Not a single trace of an impurity was seen. However, the opaque color it presented all over was instead a five-hued color.

Red, yellow, green, blue, and white, these five colors were rich and varied. An endless amount of qi lingered on it and wandered about incessantly. Xu Yangyi merely glanced and immediately sensed his whole body’s spiritual force begin to fluctuate, akin to one hearing a sacred hymn and receiving purification.

“Heavemend Stone?” At this unfamiliar name, Xu Yangyi asked probingly.

Sister Nine tightly gritted her teeth as she pursed her lips: “This... is a true spiritual-object... Fellow Daoist Xu, I won’t keep it away from you... it’s no exaggeration to say that this is a SSS-rank spiritual-object! Do you know... what items are above magik treasures?”

“What?” Xu Yangyi asked seriously.

“Spirit treasures!” Sister Nine’s eyes flashed: “Once a cultivator reaches late-stage Foundation Establishment, they can then use magik treasures. However... in the Dao of Artificing an absolute killing tool that surpasses magik treasures is a spirit treasure!”

“I’m unaware of a spirit treasure’s specific power, but in an ancient tome I accidentally ran across in the clan, a spirit treasure’s power can go beyond a magik treasure’s by at least ten fold! Fellow Daoist might know that regardless of magik treasure or spirit treasure, an embryo has to be looked for first. After slowly

nourishing it and supplementing all kinds of heavenly treasures, a grand artificer is finally sought to cast and complete it...”

“There are a few in our great clan that have started nourishing magik treasures since Foundation Establishment, but they’re at most B-rank embryos. Moreover, only the first-ranked successor possesses such distinction. This Heavenmend Stone...” Her gaze fervently looked at all that was left of the fingertip-thick light pillar, her voice fairly shaking.

Not waiting for her to finish speaking, Xu Yangyi said heavily: “Could it be a spirit treasure embryo?”

“How can it be just that?!” Sister Nine bit her lip, her gaze scarlet-red: “Besides... this is a legendary SSS-rank spirit treasure embryo! A supreme embryo! It’s never been recorded in history! Only a rumor left in the world!” She steadied her mood as much as she could and said shakily: “Truly deserving to be called the Eight Great Deadlands... The danger is extremely great, but the earnings... are absolutely worth the risk!”

At this time, the sliver of thumb-sized spiritual light spurted and finally came to an end. The instant that this eruption of heart-shaking spiritual force vanished, Xu Yangyi’s figure was like an arrow, seizing directly at the Heavenmend Stone without a wasted word!

Sister Nine moreover didn’t stop. In a twinkling, her full head of hair moved freely of the wind, its speed no less than Xu Yangyi’s. It wildly unfurled towards the Heavenmend Stone!

“STAY YOUR HAND!!!” At the same time, a golden qi arrow brightened a hundred meters away like an awakened star. It beared a furious shout, a murderous aura that filled the air, and supreme excitement. This arrow shot forth with the momentum of a thunderbolt dodging earcover! Even the air in the sky was divided into two sides by it!

“The Nangong Clan’s Falling Phoenix Arrow?” Sister Nine’s gaze

flashed, and she flickered towards the side without the slightest hesitation. However, at this time, she surprisingly saw from the corner of her eye that Xu Yangyi was without the least bit indecision. He charged towards the Heavenmend Stone!

“He’s not afraid?!” Sister Nine fell to the ground and rolled, watching Xu Yangyi in shock. The Falling Phoenix Arrow could be said to be one of the Nangong Clan’s special divine abilities! It followed the body like a shadow, restless until death! There was no such crude question of this arrow deviating from course!

In this second, time almost froze. Xu Yangyi’s face was without a shred of hesitation but rather brimming with absolute determination. His figure was like an arrow leaving a bow, painting a blurry and unrecognizable shadow in the air. However, in the instant that he was about to grab the Heavenmend Stone, the Falling Phoenix Arrow was bound to strike his body!

Sister Nine’s stunned pupils reflected Xu Yangyi’s silhouette. This move... Its qi was so abundant. Evidently, the other party had sent this arrow out with full power. She herself dared not forcibly welcome it, but Xu Yangyi did!

He wasn’t scared of his qi sea surging and billowing below this strike and being unable to battle in the following several tens of minutes? What difference was there between this and death? Or did he think... the name of the great lineages was merely a pretense? Did the full-powered blow of the Nangong Clan cause him to feel indifferent?

Swoosh! In a spark of flint, Xu Yangyi’s hand was already tightly clutching the Heavenmend Stone.

Boom! At the same time, the massive arrow directly bombarded Xu Yangyi, completely striking him!

A tide of golden light exploded. The ground seemed to meet with a minor storm! Countless wilted leaves were swept up and blown. The dust and sand that covered the ground actually formed a small

tornado, blowing to the degree that nothing was visible at all!

The arrow seemed not to be large, but in fact, its length reached up to several meters! Under tempestuous rage, anxiety attacked the heart of the sixth young master who was already coming from far away. This arrow was the maximum strength that he was capable of! It condensed all of his qi! Even a genius Qi Condensation cultivator was bound to receive heavy wounds!

Swoosh... After several seconds, a human figure with a pair of wings on his back stopped five meters above this space. Even his arrival brought the swishing echo of wind in the air. His crimson eyes glared at the scene that was fully covered with dust.

Creeaaak... A low and grating machine sound echoed in the area. Sister Nine's puppet had already come to stand besides her at some unknown time. Gloomy-faced, she surveyed everything on the ground.

She absolutely hadn't expected... that Xu Yangyi truly dared to throw himself forward! In this place, seizing treasures was admittedly important. However, no one had ever said that those who took the treasure first would be the ones to own it.

Although treasures were good, having the life to enjoy it was proper business.

"Get out..." The man in the air gnashed his teeth as he stared at the dust in the air: Give the Heavenmend Stone to This Sixth Master. I promise to safely protect you for a generation." [\[1\]](#)

The dust and sand in the air was scattered in the wind's wake. However, as Xu Yangyi appeared, the man's pupils suddenly needed: "You... How is this possible?!"

There were many tears on the clothes all over Xu Yangyi's body and his pants, but from head to toe, he was without the trace of a scar! His qi hadn't even weakened! At this moment, the powerful spiritual pressure of late-stage Qi Condensation was completely

radiating outwards!

Nonetheless, his hand was empty as air. The Heavenmend Stone was still in its original position.

“How could...” Sister Nine looked at Xu Yangyi in astonishment. She simply dared not believe it. There was actually someone who had come out perfectly unscathed after colliding head-on with the Falling Phoenix Arrow!

Xu Yangyi was silent, not saying a word. At the instant of collision, he had summoned the Shadowlumen Armor without the slightest hesitation. However, the greatness of this arrow’s power had exceeded his imagination!

The Shadowlumen Armor had directly crumbled apart, transforming into black tattoos. On his upper body, it formed a strange smiling demon head. It had to be continuously nourished to be used. However, it had resisted the full-powered strike of the Falling Phoenix Arrow for him!

As for the heritages of the great clans, Xu Yangyi still looked down on them somewhat. But what caused him the most pain was the Heavenmend Stone... He was unable to hold on to it!

It seemed to just be in its original position. However, when his hand approached, he only felt himself grab extremely pure qi! From his fingertips, rays of qi swiftly rose up. In the blink of an eye, they then formed the Heavenmend Stone, yet it was still in its original place!

“A spirit treasure embryo’s magicalness...” He breathed in deeply and calmed his frustration.

He understood very well. The opportunity just now was only a fleeting second. If the stone wasn’t obtained, all that remained was a clash of force!

[1] A generation. I’m not exactly how long a “generation” is considered for this specific term, but from what I found, it’s

considered a period of 30 years. However, it might mean “the rest of one’s life”.

Chapter 211: Danxia Temple (30)

“Amitabha...” At this moment, following a chant, Fahui was holding onto a khakkara. His expression was devoid of happiness and sorrow. He strolled over like he was idly sauntering in a courtyard. [\[1\]](#)

In the wake of each of his steps, all the wilted lotus leaves parted one by one. He didn't extend his hand to push aside the swath of lotus leaves, but they directly made a path. Fahui walked straight before everyone. His eyes flashed with spirited light, and he glanced deeply at the Heavenmend Stone. He recited a long chant: “Amitabha... I never expected that such a legendary item would actually exist here.”

“Did you fire that arrow?” Xu Yangyi raised his head. Calmly, he asked the man in the sky with nigh callousness.

“And what of it?” The man stared blankly and sneered: “Do you even have the qualifications to lay a finger on such a marvelous treasure as the commander of a trifling A-rank legion?”

“It is a sin to hold this delusion.” Like he was looking at a dead man, he eyed Xu Yangyi: “You should rejoice. Fortunately, you didn't get the Heavenment Stone, otherwise, you would already be dead.”

Xu Yangyi nodded, not wasting a further word. His hand moved into his pocket, and he closed his eyes and began meditate. At this moment... no one could act rashly! It was unknown how many people had come here... no one was willing to play the mantis in between the cicada and oriole.

“Nangong Xiaoran...” Sister Nine glanced at the camouflaged man with icy eyes: “I didn't expect that the Nangong Clan's dog nose would be as quick as it was in the past.”

Nangong Xiaoran snorted coldly. He simply refused to

acknowledge her.

Presently in the sky, three cold stars approached. Greenwall's Three Swords had come together. Just as they arrived, three gazes immediately looked towards the Heavenmend Stone in the middle. In a flash, they fired up. Shortly afterwards their gazes looked at everyone present, and they began to wisely meditate at the side.

No one dared to make the first move.

He's here too. Amidst his meditation, Ling Xiaozi's spiritual sense said to Xuan Chengzi: If we move later, leave him to me.

Junior brother... Xuan Chengzi was silent for brief moment: Now's not the time to let emotions affect your decisions. There's an extreme chance that this object is the legendary Heavenmend Stone. If its used to nourish a sword core, not only can we reach Core Formation... even Nascent Soul isn't impossible.

Ling Xiaozi smiled faintly and said no more.

Time passed on by the minute and second. After ten minutes, following the sound of rustling lotus leaves being pushed aside, three cultivators wearing white long-gowns wordlessly appeared in the present scene.

The CSIB's science exploration group.

Three late-stage Qi Condensation!

They were the same as the others, merely brushing an eye over the scene. They didn't say anything and sat straight down to rest.

Ten minutes passed. Half an hour passed. An hour passed... After a full four hours, everyone had arrived here. The Ye Clan's five people, the Yi Clan's four people, Buddhism's eleven people, the Ming Clan's seven people, the CSIB's group of three people, the Nangong Clan's six people, and Daoism's three people. In addition to the Xingtian Legion's six people... only forty-five people had found the true passage when over a hundred people had entered.

All without sufficient qualifications had been eliminated outside the honeycomb wall.

Quan Ningyue, Zhan Twelve, Li Zongyuan, Mao Ba'er, and Fang Cheng stood collectively behind Xu Yangyi. Fang Cheng's and Quan Ningyue's gazes as they looked at the Heavenmend Stone carried a tangible roiling heat. Their breathing was rather coarse.

"S-Spud..." Mao Ba'er's voice was trembling: "T-t-this is a destiny... A true great destiny... The Rootless Nine Bends Aqua... is totally nothing in comparison... Take it! We gotta take it!"

"That's right, commander!" Quan Ningyue's expression was also terribly grave: "In case we get it... I think master will definitely use his full strength to help you forge a true magik treasure!"

Fang Cheng was solemn-faced as well and said: "I once heard master-ancestor say... passed down to the present, there are about three items that can act as spirit treasure embryos. One of them is the Heavenmend Stone! But master-ancestor also said that even he has never seen a spirit treasure embryo."

Xu Yangyi nodded, his gaze looking at the Heavenmend Stone with passion. He was determined to win this treasure! Nonetheless, the present scene was equally dangerous! In these seemingly tranquil grounds, everyone was searching for an opportunity to take action, competing in patience.

Pondering for a long time, his face flickered with a smidgen of resolution. He said lowly to everyone in the Xingtian Legion: "After things start later, I can't look after you guys. It's very possible that each of us will be scattered. Zhan Twelve."

"Yes."

"I'm giving you a special mission." The killing intent in Xu Yangyi's eyes faintly glinted and calmly swept over Nangong Xiaoran: "Do you have a divine ability that allows you to instantly disappear and evade pursuit?"

This was an assassin-essential divine ability. As expected, Zhan Twelve nodded: “I do.”

“Do you have magik artifacts that can create a disturbance? For example, an item that can kick up smoke and dust in front of someone, and interfere with their vision and spiritual sense?”

This was also a good carried on an assassin’s person. Zhan Twelve nodded and said: “Yes.”

“Good...” Xu Yangyi laughed and quietly said a few words to Zhan Twelve. Afterwards, he faced everyone and said: “Don’t worry... Very soon, there’ll be someone who won’t be able to hold themselves back...”

Seemingly verifying his words, a voice carrying an indifferent smile suddenly rang out: “What? Could it be that all of you don’t know what this object is?”

No one spoke, but the gazes of everyone present turned bitingly cold.

The rearing of a head... represented that this chaotic battle was on the verge of having its curtains pulled wide open!

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath, and his entire body’s spiritual force revolved. Silently, he stood up from his meditation stance. His gaze was seemingly careless, yet he never relaxed over the blowing wind and stirring grass in these grounds.

In the present scene, each person was like this.

As for the person who dared rear his head at this moment... he possessed even more absolute confidence in himself and in his clan!

“If everyone keeps sitting until we’re old, what’s the point of this item? If that’s the case...” A young man was dressed in an ancient tunic suit. Even though its surface was stained with splotches of blood, his entire being was like a sharp unsheathed sword. He smiled as he stood out and cupped his hands: “It would be impolite

for this Ye to refuse.”

Just as his voice fell, his entire body abruptly transformed into azure leaves and vanished from its original position. At the same time, without any warning, the Ye Clan’s five people threw themselves forward at almost the same time. The picture in each of their hands unfolded in the wind, meeting the breeze and growing! In a flash, from about a foot in size, it transformed to be over ten meters wide in range! The countless talismans on the surface glimmered and sunk towards everyone’s feet in an instant!

“A replica of the Ye Clan’s clan-protection magik treasure, the Jadelight Diagram?” Mao Ba’er stood up with a swoosh. His canine eyes opened wide: “They actually brought this item with them?”

“Clan-protection magik treasure?” Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows and asked.

“Why do you think Ye, Yi, and Mo are called humanity’s three clans?” Mao Ba’er nervously roved about without direction: “Each of them have a clan-protection treasure that’s been passed down for a thousand years! They don’t fall short in comparison the legendary super-rare spirit treasures! Legend has it that they have the power to slay a Core Formation ancestor! As for the Jadelight Diagram... It’s the Ye Clan’s clan-protection magik treasure!”

Mao Ba’er tightly locked his eyes on the scene and gritted his teeth: “Even if it’s a replica, its power can’t be underestimated at all! This Fellow Daoist... might be ranked very high in the Ye Clan’s echelon!”

Before Mao Ba’er’s voice even fell, a chant of “Amitabha” rang out. Closely following, a large golden hand in the sky covered cultivator Ye without a trace of benevolence. It appeared that if he didn’t stop, he would immediately be crushed into flying ash!

“Skanda Holds Scepter.” Fahui’s expression was still placid like a lake. Following this hand’s appearance, the bodhi rosary on his neck suddenly collapsed and divided into several tens of emerald

dots that charged towards the Ye Clan's five people. [\[2\]](#)

Like fireflies flying everywhere in the night, they unexpectedly carried brahmic chants as they flew forth. Subsequently, the rosary beads became increasingly faster as they soared! One could even see the blazing trails they left in the sky due to friction!

However, this wasn't everything!

At the same time, an ancient black corpse was shrouded from head to toe with black qi. It was covered in armor yet moved like the wind. Its ten fingernails were like ten sharp swords. It oddly appeared behind the cultivator surnamed Ye and its black fingernails sharply rose without warning! They pierced straight at the middle of cultivator Ye's back!

Both of cultivator Ye's eyes trembled with fear, yet he simply didn't retreat half a step. He said hoarsely: "Ancestors protect me!"

In the next second, both of his hands formed a bizarre Dao-seal. A ring-shaped blaze swiftly formed between both of his hands. Immediately, the black hilt of an unknown object slowly emerged within the flame array. Cultivator Ye grabbed the handle and forcefully pulled. In the wake of a swoosh, a parasol embedded full of pearls and jades shockingly appeared!

BOOM BOOM BOOM! In a spark of flint, just as this umbrella opened, the rosary beads collided with the parasol's surface like a meteor shower! Fiery-red ripples of spiritual force madly exploded on it! Even the ground slightly trembled because of these rosary beads! Furthermore, the surrounding wilted lotus leaves gently floated down leaf by leaf!

This explosive barrel filled with gunpowder only lacked a spark. As for the Ye Clan, they took the lead to ignite the fuse! Just as this fuse was lit, the three great powers of the Ye Clan, Ming Clan, and the Buddhists took action at nearly the same time!

"The Ye Clan's Old Four really is bold. Allow me to lend brother

Ye an arm for such a grand occasion.” Following a long chuckle, a fourth clan joined in without the slightest hesitation!

Before his words finished, a sword tip as narrow and slender as a viper suddenly flashed. Like a streak of white light shining in the night, a sword rose up gracefully!

“Yi Old Five!!!” Cultivator Ye gnashed his teeth so hard that they chattered. Without a second word, his entire bodily spiritual force completely erupted. In an instant, the manifestation of a two-meter-tall ancient cyan tree formed behind him. He shouted loudly, and tree leaves flew down. Immediately, as if the pitter-patter of rain was heard behind him, the jingling of shattered jade rang out!

The Yi Clan’s Old Five was a thin, tall youth. In a flash, he was already thrusting out with tens of swords! The swords were aimed at vital parts. Surprisingly, this action was a killing move to eliminate the other faster!

In this place, there was no human or demon, only benefits and opponents!

“What are you still looking at? COME!” Following Yi Old Five’s snarl, he slapped the crown of his head, and a white-jade sword point about a foot long whistled as it flew out! In the next second, one turned into ten, ten into a hundred, and a hundred into ten million! Like a sword box had been opened, countless sharp swords formed an azure sword-lotus behind him!

“Flower Pinch Sword Art... Azure Lotus Smiles!”

Swoosh swoosh swoosh!!! Swords fell like rain! The sword upon sword took aim at cultivator Ye who was closest. The sword light reflected snowy brightness on Ye Old Four’s face.

In the sword rain that blotted out the sky and concealed the earth, Ye Old Four fiercely gritted his teeth and abruptly roared towards the other side: “What are you still waiting for?! If you

don't move now, until when will you keep on waiting?!"

In the next second, three rocketing sword-lights charged straight towards Yi Old Five's head, heart, and qi sea, piercing these three vitals!

Greenwall's Three Swords!

Everyone's gazes flashed. As expected... the Ye Clan had an ally! At this moment, they suddenly launched a revolt!

[1] A Khakkara is a Buddhist staff.

[2] Skanda is a Mahayana bodhisattva known as the guardian of Buddhist monasteries. His name also means Dharma Protector.

Chapter 212: Danxia Temple (31)

The hare leaped and the falcon descended!

The surface seemed to gather a storm at sea. In the next second, a seabed volcano erupted! At this moment, only the sparkling and pure Heavenmend Stone existed in everyone's eyes.

Xu Yangyi didn't immediately set into action. He suddenly saw one of three cold stars scattered by Greenwall's Three Swords swiftly darting towards him!

Swoosh... This sword point oddly raised an azure lotus. Outside the sword, all time seemed to halt, even giving rise to a trace of stagnation in Xu Yangyi. All that could be seen was a cold light spreading in the night, shooting towards him like chasing stars overtaking the moon!

The dragon wages war for 3,000 miles, sword qi dazzles the Nine Regions!

"Flying Sword Startles Heaven." A serene expression appeared on Ling Xiaozi's face, however, it wasn't a serenity of mood. Instead, it a kind of amiability, a compliance of fate. Yet under this compliance of fate, everyone who was connected through to this sword qi felt their hair raise!

At the same time, Nangong Xiaoran's gaze suddenly chilled. Both of his hands came together. As they pulled apart again, there were surprisingly threads of golden qi linked between both his hands. They illuminated his handsome face somewhat sinisterly.

"Lost Shadow Of King Chu's Bow..." In the wake of a swoosh, his entire body was densely covered with a coat of blue feathers. In the span of two seconds, he shockingly transformed into a hawk-headed man. The surface of his feathers were filled with odd talismans. At this moment, all of them were shining. Between his arms and hand, a curved bow nearly two meters long was

constructed! [\[1\]](#)

Gong! Following the bowstring's sound, a red arrow instantly shot forth! It shouldered a raging flame and even brought a scorched smell to the air!

The two people's target was astonishingly Xu Yangyi! In a twinkling, everyone present moved into action! Not one person was left behind! Bow and sword launched from both sides, sandwiching Xu Yangyi in the middle. Even if they were still separated by several tens of meters, he felt the supreme spiritual force contained in these two moves!

"They actually take me as the weakest pushover here, huh..." In Xu Yangyi's eyes, a wisp of killing intent flashed. The crook of his mouth revealed a faint bloodthirsty smile: "Why?"

Swoosh! In the places where Flying Sword Startles Heaven passed through, the ground kicked up with an endless amount of soil and wilted lotus leaves! A nearly meter-deep trench appeared on the surface! United as man and sword, Ling Xiaozi relied on the void to resist the wind. Unexpectedly, he could soar two meters high in the air at the Qi Condensation realm! Carrying a peerless charging force, he took hold of the entire sky's might and arrived. The swiftness of his speed even caused his hair to be blown scattered all around! It was like he was a flying immortal beyond heaven!

His figure was reflected in Xu Yangyi's pupils, becoming bigger as he approached. It was to the extent that Xu Yangyi could clearly see the wisp of a gentle smile already on the other's face. The distance between the two... was no more than ten meters!

"HALT!!!" At five meters... Xu Yangyi finally spoke. Following his furious roar, his right fist suddenly rumbled forth! Immediately, a spiritual force not the slightest bit weaker than Flying Sword Startles Heaven thundered out!

Rumble! In a transient second, the two divine abilities merged in

midair! The region five meters ahead of Xu Yangyi released a thundering echo! The dust on the ground surged upwards by four to five meters! It formed an obstructing wall of dust and sand that was four to five meters tall and ten-plus meters wide!

The trench on the ground, as if it had chopped into an invisible wall ahead, suddenly stopped. After half a second, a swooshing sound pervaded the horizon. In the air, it seemed that there was a downpour of dust falling down. However, the instant the dust cleared, a sword tip that twinkled more than starlight emerged!

“Nine Revolutions Return To One!” Xiao Lingzi’s face was devoid of sorrow or joy. It was within his expectations that Xu Yangyi was able to resist this move. His course of action didn’t stop at all. Nine swords pierced forth from nine different places, simply indistinguishable between first or last! Immediately, the nine sword lights transformed into nine types of spirit beasts! The upper half of the body almost coalesced into a physical object, yet the bottom half was fierce sword-light. In the air, sharp howling noises were made. These sword lights carried several-meter-long tails of spiritual light and charged Xu Yangyi!

He had met his match... That clash of spiritual sense with Xu Yangyi had deeply stung his ego. Greenwall Mountain was one of Daoism’s Three Great Ancestral Halls! As one of the inheritors of the First Mountain’s Four Mountain-Protector Swords, he had actually been defeated in spiritual sense by a nobody on one of the Eight Great Deadlands!

“Ling Xiaozi!” “Junior brother.”

At the same time, two voices happened to ring out by chance. Xuan Chengzi fiercely glanced over and said angrily: “The situation is dire!”

It appeared Ling Xiaozi hadn’t heard. He knew... He knew that this move still might not collapse Xu Yangyi’s defenses!

At the same time, the sword in his hand shined with a radiance

akin to seven stars. At peak focus, he closed his eyes and vertically placed the sword in front of him. His hand swiped the sword's surface and the entire sword swiftly radiated qi from all around! A several-meter-long aura of white qi jetted forth!

“Eight Trigrams Cave Profound!” As he opened his eyes, a faint image of the Eight Trigrams oddly emerged in both of his pupils. Shortly... a golden manifestation of the Eight Trigrams appeared in front of his entire body! It was several meters long and wide and slowly spinning! [\[2\]](#)

The sword in his hand coiled with a sword flower. In the next second, he chopped with full power and gave birth to a ray of crimson sword qi! It cleaved open the entire Eight Trigrams! It even formed a five-to-six-meter-tall wind edge that rushed Xu Yangyi!

Right in the center before Xu Yangyi was a crimson wind edge. On both sides, nine white spirit-beast sword edges revolved around it! It shrouded a range of ten-plus meters! There was no place that he could escape to at all!

As for behind him... Nangong Xiaoran's red arrow had arrived in a flash! However... things still weren't over!

One strike! Ling Xiaozi knew that he had to defeat this opponent with a single blow, Only then would he have the skill to join in on the other battles. He inhaled deeply and the sword in his hand gushed out with qi. Already, the color had turned faint gold!

“Seven Stars Cupping Fortune!” Following his low chant, this attack traversed like a white rainbow piercing through the sun!

A ray of supremely distant sword-light caused heaven and earth to seemingly brighten in this domain. Assuming the shape of a half moon, it reached a length of over a dozen meters! It came chopping straight down on Xu Yangyi!

Everyone was dazed. Even Fahui paused for a second. The Dao

Sect was of the one the Three Great Sects and one of the Three Great Ancestral Halls. The full-powered assault of one of the First Mountain's Dao-Protector inheritors caused the winds and clouds to change in form within a radius of several tens of meters!

“Amitabha...” Fahui's gaze held a glimmering sliver for the first time. This generation's Mountain-Protector of the First Mountain... was rather fierce...

Creeaaak... From the beginning, Senior Bloodblade hadn't made a move. His seemingly dead coffin finally moved by a hair, and a faintly discernible spiritual sense spread out from within.

Nangong Xiaoran was surprised. He hadn't expected this. The people of the Three Great Sects didn't come into the world, but once they did, they were actually so formidable!

Not only him, all the battles paused for a second as a result!

“Junior brother!” “Commander!” “Spud!”

Several tense cries suddenly rang out. None had anticipated that a disciple that the Three Great Sects dared to dispatch could actually contend against each of the best of heaven's pride who were present!

ROAR!!! In the wake of a furious howl, a tremendous figure from behind blocked the front of the golden arrow!

Fang Cheng had demonized in a flash. He was only able to stop a portion. The three major killing moves coming from Ling Xiaozi were too close in distance! Xu Yangyi had no choice but to personally answer this! As for him... he had to settle the trouble at the rear for his junior brother!

AWOOO!!! A wolf over three meters tall appeared in front of the golden arrow.

Nangong Xiaoran sneered: “A mantis trying to stop a chariot... Where did this trash run out from?”

But in the next second, he was unable to laugh.

Swish swish swish... The shadows of everyone present surprisingly climbed onto Fang Cheng's body at great speed and formed an armor of shadows!

"This is..." Nangong Xiaoran firmly gritted his teeth: "He's a Daomaster disciple too! This divine ability is Ancestor Ancientpine's shadow arts!"

On the border of mortal danger, Xu Yangyi's gaze caught a glimpse of Fang Cheng.

"Thanks." His entire body's qi swiftly clambered upwards. If he didn't have Fang Cheng's assistance, in a situation with Ling Xiaozi's three major killing moves added on with Nangong Xiaoran's arrow, and the Shadowlumen armor having been broken by Nangong Xiaoran's previous arrow, he would absolutely be wounded! However, just against Ling Xiaozi's three killing moves, he held sufficient confidence!

"Falling Moon!" Xu Yangyi shouted in rage. Countless black edges glimmered in his hand, and a simple and unadorned guandao appeared in an instant. "I..." His right arm began to faintly shiver. Rays of qi frantically spread forth: "Still haven't experienced... the feeling of using a magik artifact to wield a divine ability..."

BOOM!!! In an instant, golden fire ignited on the guandao!

Xiao Lingzi's pupils quickly tightened: "He's... using a magik artifact to drive a divine ability? What grade is this magik artifact? His divine ability is extremely powerful, this magik artifact can support it?"

His question soon gained an answer.

That nameless magik artifact... was wholly able to undertake Xu Yangyi's divine ability! Furthermore, it simply wasn't this. To his surprise, the strange black guandao... dyed all the flames black in color!

At this moment, Xu Yangyi's upper body was slightly low, similar to a cheetah storing power and waiting to take action. His right hand raised Falling Moon forward and an endless amount of black flames burned on its surface. Nonetheless, the fire on his hand was red, forming a powerful contrast of color!

Without a moment's delay, the three chained divine abilities had already arrived before him! Xu Yangyi took a deep breath and gently spat out four words.

“Ten Cardinals Red Lotus.”

Swish! In this instant, sound seemed to fade away. All that remained in the night sky was a flame dragged forth. This blaze was even deeper than night and quieter than darkness.

Space seemed to be torn apart. Ling Xiaozi only felt his heart shiver. In the air, his three divine abilities welcomed this flaming maelstrom that seemed to want to devour everything. This conflagration was almost without sound and absent of any temperature.

A black fire dragon appeared to be like an ink scar painted freely in the night sky. Along within Falling Moon's soft wave, no sound emerged. Although it was quiet, scorch marks unexpectedly materialized on the surrounding ground!

In this fleeting moment, Ling Xiaozi was alarmed in his heart. His five fingers formed a Dao-seal at great speed, and he soon gasped coldly: “Not good!”

The implicated outcome of the Five Phases Deduction Technique... was that his three divine abilities would actually be defeated?!

How was this possible?!

In this wink of time, he almost doubted the inheritance divine abilities of the Four Mountain-Protector Swords. These sword arts were the First Mountain's untransmitted secrets! Although his

realm was insufficient to fully use its mysteries and profundities, these attacks were actually now about to be extinguished by the blade of a person he had never seen?

At nearly the same time, he felt a stabbing pain between his brows. He looked towards the black dragon that had charged towards the three divine abilities in shock. This feeling... each transformation of his divine abilities, each bit of strength released... had all been locked down?

Was this even a Qi Condensation cultivator's magik artifact?!

How could a Qi Condensation cultivator lock down the qi of another's divine ability?!

A cultivator using a divine ability in any place wasn't in fact strange at all. However, this was different... Falling Moon... was equipped with its own GPS!

It would strike where directed!

[1] "Lost Shadow Of King Chu's Bow" This is based off of a story about a King named Chu. He lost a bow that he really liked. He then regained it. Story might seem a little a weird, but its from a Confucius's Book of Sayings. The idea behind it is to "take a philosophical approach towards gains and losses".

[2] "Eight Trigrams Cave Profound" - I was unsure whether or not to translate "Cave Profound" into english. As you may have noticed many of the names in this book aren't short and sweet, but are rather a nod to the classic novels of this genre. Cave Profound in Chinese is "Dongxuan", which happens to be the name of a Daoist god's (Lingbao Tianzun) palace.

Chapter 212: Danxia Temple (32)

BOOM! Just as Xu Yangyi's Falling Moon and the three great divine abilities were on the verge of clashing, a domain of black radiance and red radiance suddenly erupted!

Fang Cheng had already welcomed Nangong Xiaoran's arrow!

In the middle stage, Fang Cheng's power and Xu Yangyi's were equally matched. At this moment, in the wake of an explosive echo, the red radiance quickly fell apart. Fang Cheng himself continued to peddle backwards for a couple steps. Both his legs dragged out several-meter-long trenches on the ground. After steadying his figure, the shadow armor all over his body unexpectedly fell away with a rustling!

As for him, he grunted heavily. A trace of blood appeared at the corner of his mouth. The middle-stage him against the pampered son of the Nangong Clan, one of the Five Great Demon Clans, was too difficult to manage. Nonetheless, he didn't fall back a step. Instead, he staunchly blocked the front of Ling Xiaozi and Xu Yangyi's battle.

"The cloudy summit whistles lonely with the frosty morning moon." Without any hesitation, both of his claws leaned on the ground. His whole body was situated in a black formation, and the surrounding shadows were being absorbed by him at lightning speed. The phantoms of giant wolves were faintly visible besides him. "The great untamed traverse the snow, wind, and land in solitary..." He faced upwards and howled. Every pore on his entire body... jetted out a limitless amount of black qi. A full four to five meters in size, a black wolf's silhouette drifted behind him: "Thousand Wolves Solitary!!!"

"AWWOOO!!" The shadows behind him looked upwards and howled in unison. Subsequently, Fang Cheng pounced towards Nangong Xiaoran with full power as he carried an endless black

light-tail that filled the sky.

The corner of Nangong Xiaoran's mouth beared a sneer: "Worthy of being a Daomaster disciple... Only until I was at late-stage Qi Condensation did I awaken an elysial divine ability. But in this place, geniuses are all around. Do you think you can still skip boundaries and counter kill like you're facing those ordinary cultivators?"

"That's nothing more than an opera of us geniuses versus ordinary cultivator..." Even confronted with the giant wolf's direct charge and the black qi streaks, which caused his feathers to rustle and dance in the air as they blew on his upper body, he sneered indifferently: "Considering you're Core Formation ancestor's disciple, I'll let you off. Turn back now, and I will spare your life."

Without any response, the giant wolf manifestation's eyes merely released a crimson edge. Its charging force became even greater!

"Courting death!" Nangong Xiaoran's smile vanished. He faced upwards and made a hawk's cry. Afterwards, the pair of wings behind him began to softly fan open. The talismans on the surface glimmered monochromatically. In the next second, a boundless amount of golden qi feathers struck like rain water!

"Feathers Fall On The Three Realms..." His entire being revolved like a spinning top. Unexpectedly, as he flew higher and higher, each of these sword-like feathers deeply penetrated the ground!

Squelch squish squelch! An untold number of feathers easily broke through Fang Cheng's black qi, similar to slicing tofu. Following a heavy groan, the giant wolf's charging power surprisingly increased again! It was just that everyone could see that this path had already become stained with bloody patches.

Fang Cheng understood very well that he couldn't withdraw now... The stronger that Nangong Xiaoran was, the more impossible it was for him to retreat, otherwise, his junior brother's side would undoubtedly be difficult to support!

Already, the killing intent in Nangong Xiaoran's eyes was flickering, and he laughed coldly: "Since you want to court death, don't blame me..."

All of a sudden, a giant golden bow flashed in his entire body. An arrowhead was pointed straight at Fang Cheng! At the same time, behind Fang Cheng, an expanse of tide-like qi began to swell!

Xu Yangyi had long since raised his blade upwards. The blade carried a soaring black flame. In the wake of each of his waves, an afterimage was left in the sky. Facing the three divine abilities that cloaked the world, he didn't fall back by the slightest margin!

"Life Sacrificed... Starfire! Wind Brandishes Traces!" These three moves superimposed over each other. In the sky, his speed transformed him into an afterimage—difficult to perceive with the naked eye—instantaneously! The sole thing that could be seen was the mark of his actions. Surprisingly, Falling Moon brought forth a limitless amount of black flames in the sky!

The night was deep, silent, and dark. However, this darkness was purely unable to mask the several meters of black flame that Falling Moon drew out! Regardless, these black flames oddly burned in the air! Even after several seconds, they didn't stop burning!

As if it was burning the air!

All was in his control. Without any tricks, the front of him had already been illuminated by the brightness of divine abilities! Xu Yangyi's serene expression conveyed an unparalleled killing intent. Exhausting all of his power, he fiercely slashed forward and roared in fury: "OPEN!!!"

Swoosh! Infinitely black in color, a dragon accompanied his wave. For the first time, it released a deafening roar: "ROOAR!!!"

Two meters long and black, a flame-blade scar suddenly appeared in the air.

BOOM!!! A streak of qi, mingled with countless colors, rocketed upwards! There existed black, red, azure, and white, multicolored and gorgeous. These colors carried a heart-shaking trembling! This vestige was the collision of the magik-artifact-assisted Ten Cardinals Red Lotus against Ling Xiaozi's three divine abilities!

Swoosh! An extreme wind pressure fiercely erupted from the collision site! As if it possessed substance, it swept through the entire landscape. The sand and dust that filled the air even formed a small sandstorm! Several seconds later, all was quiet. As for the impact area, only a massive pit, over a dozen meters in radius and a meter-plus deep, remained!

Ling Xiaozi's pupils shrunk. With incredible clarity, his spiritual sense was telling him... to disappear... In this clash of four divine abilities, he had put forth three, yet they were actually equal to Xu Yangyi's single move!

No! He looked towards the ground at once. Over yonder, black flames were still wreaking devastation. This...

He sucked in deeply. His deduction wasn't wrong... To his surprise, his three divine abilities didn't leave a sliver of regret! They had been cleaved out by the other's blade! However... he was promptly stunned in his entirety.

Swish... Xu Yangyi collected his blade and stood in his original position. Black flames coiled around him from head to toe like he was a devil god that had walked out from hell. His face wooden in expression, he studied Ling Xiaozi and suddenly laughed as he extended a hand. Using his thumb, he ruthlessly dragged it over his neck!

Ling Xiaozi didn't respond. After an unknown number of seconds passed, his hand began to tremble. Incredulous and unable to be convinced, he shivered as he lifted up his hand. Like he was shaking in the wind, his finger motioned towards his neck.

A moist sensation... Little by little, his face visibly started to pale.

He stretched out his finger in front of him to take a look. His finger was already covered in bright-red. His neck... had actually been slashed by the blade tip while he was totally unaware! The blade had penetrated inwards by no less than a millimeter!

Those that Falling Moon desired to behead had no chance to evade it!

Even with three great divine abilities in front, this formless blade tip had still cut his neck!

Under his mind's immense shock, he glanced deeply at Xu Yangyi, turning around and leaving. His heart was no longer in the battle. This person... was strong, very strong! His magik artifact was moreover strange! If he and Xu Yangyi continued this deathmatch, there was a chance, or perhaps it could be said to be further likely, that he would meet his demise here!

He hadn't felt that that invisible blade nor had his protective magik artifact warned him... In such a manner, it had mysteriously cut him! In this place, a feeling known as fear appeared in his heart for the first time. Had the power been a tad greater, his head would've landed on the ground! Furthermore... the other still hadn't used that spiritual-sense attack method. Even now, he dared not keep fighting!

The CSIB's science exploration group was the only squadron not to make a move. At this moment, they looked towards the direction that Ling Xiaozi was fleeing, their gazes brimming with shock!

This... was the present scene's first battle outcome!

In the other region, Ye Old Four and Fahui fought like wildfire, both of them unstoppable. The two of them had struck with true fire. Fahui had long since revealed an ancient sutra page in ceremony. Rays of golden light and brahmic chants curled around it. Golden sanskrit characters revolved around and struggled together with Ye Old Four's strange pearl parasol.

However, the Dao Sect's two other swords were likewise laying siege to the Ye Clan. The Ye Clan was in a position of defense, only attacking once in a while.

Earlier on, the Ming Clan and the Yi Clan had moved hands at some unknown time. Sister Nine manipulated the ancient armored corpse and brilliant qi rays erupted. Victory or defeat wouldn't be decided within a short time at all!

Yet no one had anticipated Xu Yangyi's bout... On paper, the Xingtian Legion's battle power was the weakest, only with a single late-stage Qi Condensation! However, in a one-on-one between a Mountain-Protector Sword and a legion commander, the conclusion had saw Ling Xiaozi actually retreating in defeat! In addition, the time hadn't exceeded ten minutes!

"This Fellow Daoist Xu... is very strong..." Cultivator Li, who had briefly met Xu Yangyi, said gravely: "To force one of the Four Swords to pull back... If this spreads, his name will surely rise to the heavens!"

"Hehe..." Another middle-aged cultivator barked twice in dry laughter: "In this kind of place... those who aren't strong enough have already met an early death outside."

"To be able to come here and broaden their horizons concerning Danxia Temple's overall view... which person isn't a dragon or phoenix among men?"

Xu Yangyi watched the rear view of Ling Xiaozi's back but didn't give pursuit. It seemed to be a single blade, but only he knew in reality how much spiritual force that blade had drawn from his body!

At least a half!

And yet, using this blade to startle Ling Xiaozi into leaving was something that he HAD to do. Because he understood very clearly... that Fang Cheng, his senior brother, was in the middle of

obstructing Nangong Xiaoran for him. As for Fang Cheng, he was in no way the opponent of Nangong Xiaoran who was already at late-stage Qi Condensation.

The present combatants were the apex geniuses of China's cultivation world. No possibility existed for a counter kill. Without the slightest hesitation, he hefted his blade and charged, yet his eyes quickly sharpened.

Fang Cheng was a bloody mess all over, having shed his demon form earlier on. He stood in his original position, not falling back by a single step! Ahead of him, Nangong Xiaoran was faintly panting for breath yet didn't have so much as a trace of scar.

Fang Cheng's entire body was pierced with feathers. Seeing Xu Yangyi come over, he said hoarsely: "Fin... ished?"

"Senior brother." A hot stream bubbled in Xu Yangyi's heart, and he powerfully clapped Fang Cheng's shoulder: "Leave the rest to me."

Fang Cheng laughed, not saying anything. He faced upwards and collapsed.

Xu Yangyi pulled out the feathers from his vitals one by one. These feathers were solid like iron and had penetrated straight into Fang Cheng's flesh for up to several centimeters. Xu Yangyi's fist softly clenched. His principles were based on treating others on how they treated him.

Fang Cheng, who he hadn't been acquainted with for very long, had braved mortal danger to block Nangong Xiaoran for him. He would remember this sentiment. And revenge was the first method...

Steel-like feathers were pulled out and thrown onto the ground, making a jingling sound. A minute later, Xu Yangyi stood up. Without a word, Falling Moon was lifted up with a single arm and pointed straight at Nangong Xiaoran: "Come... accept death!"

“If you leave Danxia Temple today, I’ll cut myself down right here.”

Nangong Xiaoran stared blankly as if he hadn’t clearly heard whatever Xu Yangyi had said. A couple seconds passed, and he suddenly faced the sky and began to howl madly in laughter!

“You? Just on that basis of you?!” After he laughed enough, he lowered his head and studied Xu Yangyi. He said indifferently: “I’ll give you a chance. Cast yourself under the banner of my Nangong Clan and be useful to me. I’ll act as if I never heard your words just now.”

What answered him was the point of Xu Yangyi’s blade, resplendent like snow. It didn’t shake by the slightest hair.

“Do you know...” Nangong Xiaoran waited several seconds and sneered: “Based on just this action, you ought to die ten thousand times.”

“Qiao Wu.” He said tranquilly.

“This old servant is here.” An aged voice seemed to be like a shadow, answering from some unknown place.

“Quan Liu.”

“This old servant is here.”

Thirsting for blood, Nangong Xiaoran licked his lips: “Bring me his head!”

Chapter 213: Danxia Temple (33)

Two half-step Foundation Establishment! Even if it was Xu Yangyi, his complexion still grew austere. As for all the Xingtian Legion's personnel, they came behind him. However, there was no sight of Zhan Twelve.

Two old men, appearing to soon enter the earth, abruptly appeared at Nangong Xiaoran's back. Unexpectedly, they were dressed in a scholar's long gown, one in black and one in white. The black long-gown was embroidered with the picture of a white bird. The white long-gown was stitched with the picture of a fierce black dog. [\[1\]](#)

The faces of these two men were filled with wrinkles, and their hands were covered inside their sleeves. Their heads were unraised, and white hair loosely draped over their shoulders. Their eyes were so squinted that nothing could be seen. Their entire beings resembled dead men who were already buried. And that was overlooking that they were still gasping for air.

"One..." Amidst his fluttering white hair, Qiao Wu slowly lifted up his corpse-like skull. Unburdened by a sliver of emotion, he looked towards Quan Ningyue and then turned to Mao Ba'er: "Two..."

"Three..." "Four..." Finally, Quan Liu brushed an eye over the unconscious Fang Cheng: "Five..."

"Five insects..." Quan Liu laughed coldly: "This Throne will send you all on your way."

"This Throne?" Quan Ningyue burst into loud laughter: "You haven't entered Foundation Establishment yet. I'm afraid that both of you won't be able to tread into this realm for your entire lives! But you dare falsely claim yourself as 'This Throne'?"

Qiao Wu's smile became even icier: "A man's words are sincere as

death approaches... This old man's point of view isn't wholly correct. In that case..."

"Allow This Throne to send you all off on a journey..." Quan Liu and him were like twins. Unexpectedly... both of them hung suspended in the air by ten-plus meters!

This wasn't the flight of Foundation Establishment Seniors, however, half-step Foundation Establishment already possessed some abilities of the Foundation Establishment realm. For example, partial short-distance flight. Another example... was the near end of bodily techniques and the complete use of spiritual force attacks!

"Commander, you go handle that eagle-headed guy." Quan Ningyue gritted her teeth: "Leave them... to us!"

Xu Yangyi looked at the solemn-faced Quan Ningyue and then to Mao Ba'er, Li Zongyuan, and Zhao Wuye at the side. He said heavily: "Can you guys stop two half-step Foundation Establishment?"

"As much as we can..." Mao Ba'er used his paw to dig at the ground somewhat gloomily: "Such a hard and thankless task... How much cash is the damn cultivation equipment going to cost me alone?! And you're even willing to make an adorable embodiment of pikachu like me transform into mewtwo..." [\[2\]](#)

Zhao Wuye's expression was somewhat unnatural, but he also wasn't an ordinary cultivator. Would an ordinary cultivator dare to do such a crazy thing like excavate a path to Danxia Temple? After his face changed several times, he clenched his teeth: "Since it's come to this step... this old man will naturally risk his life and accompany the gentleman... but after we get out..."

"In the next medicinal pill auction, I will choose the Zhao Clan." Before Zhao Wuye's voice even fell, Xu Yangyi said insipidly.

Zhao Wuye's gaze flash. For these words... even if he was

engaging in arcane combat with a half-step Foundation Establishment, what of it?

“Then I’ll have to ask everyone to do so.” Xu Yangyi deeply cupped his hands, and his gaze firmly nailed into Nangong Xiaoran.

“It seems... you still don’t understand the power of half-step Foundation Establishment very well...” Nangong Xiaoran jeered sinisterly: “Nevermind it... If you can rush over, I’ll give you a chance to fight me.”

Xu Yangyi laughed and said nothing. His silhouette had already transformed into an afterimage, carrying black flames that crowded the sky. Without the slightest hesitation, he leaped up, waved his blade, slashed down towards Nangong Xiaoran.

“You have good courage, young fellow.” Qiao Wu said faintly: “It’s a pity that you’re too young and inexperienced.”

His hand suddenly flashed with drizzly azure light. Following a cry of “go”, a cerulean ray of spiritual light fired straight in front of Xu Yangyi like lightning!

This was the greatest difference between Foundation Establishment and Qi Condensation! The external release of qi! Upon arriving at Foundation Establishment, body techniques were no longer required. With the rise of a hand or the lift of a foot, a divine ability would leave the body and wound enemies. If a comparison had to be insisted on, it was the difference between a supreme swordsman and a first-rate swordsman. As the first-rate swordsman was still constrained by swords arts, the supreme swordsman was already using sword qi!

Boom! The spiritual light didn’t strike Xu Yangyi’s body, and he didn’t even stop by the least bit as a result. In this time, he needed to believe in his legionnaires.

A spinning Eight Trigrams plate continuously vibrated in the air

and resisted the spiritual light. Zhao Wuye's complexion was ashen, and both of his hands hastily formed Dao-seals. In the sky, the Eight Trigrams plate then launched an endless amount of white light. At the same time, he shouted: "GO!"

"Trifling skill." Qiao Wu ridiculed as he glanced at the Eight Trigrams plate, and his finger softly tapped: "Break!"

BOOM! The entire Eight Trigrams plate answered and broke, yet in the next second, Qiao Wu's smile froze up by a fraction. This was because... following the Eight Trigrams plate's fracture, an expanse of misty fog sprinkled down between him, Zhao Wuye, and Mao Ba'er. It took the shape of a white formation.

The formation extended rather swiftly. At the beginning, it was a mere dot, but immediately, it became a domain! Several tens of meters... A hundred meters... Even upon reaching over 400 meters, it still didn't stop!

Sister Nine, who was manipulating her corpse puppet to attack Yi Old Five, suddenly felt the side of her foot grow chilly. She immediately hopped back and looked towards the Xingtian Legion's side in astonishment. "That's..." Her gaze sparked: "The Nangong Clan's two old dogs?"

The swords arts that Xuan Chengzi was assaulting Ye Old Four with seemed to quickly churn out sword after sword. At the same time, the qi wave caused him and Fahui to happen to both turn their eyes over. He said incredulously: "Using essence blood to extend an Imprisonment Formation?"

"This formation... Unless the formation controller takes the initiative to open it, no one will be able to get out from the inside... It can be said to be a deadly wrestling arena..." Fahui's gaze faintly stirred: "It seems... this benefactor wants to divide himself from the Nangong Clan by life and death..."

Qiao Wu's gaze flickered, and he probingly flicked out a ray of spiritual light. However, the same time that this spiritual light

touched the formation's edge, it immediately disappeared. Eventually, his expression completely iced over, and he watched Zhao Wuye like he was looking at a dead man: "Since you want to die, I'll help you succeed."

The formation was a full 600 meters in size. Not waiting for him to finish speaking, a strange growling noise quietly entered Qiao Wu's ear all of a sudden.

Mao Ba'er's entire body was swiftly turning large. As he swelled, his canine face roared viciously: "PI—KA—CHU—EVOLVE!!!"

Several seconds later, a giant three-headed dog, thirty to forty meters in size, shockingly emerged. A hair-raising sulfuric smell gushed out from the three dog heads. The fur all over its entire body carried raging flames!

Qiao Wu's expression finally revealed traces of solemnness. However, not waiting for him to finish lamenting, he discovered another considerable spiritual force presently erupting to his astonishment!

"Hundred Soldier Hall..." Zhao Wuye's belly bulged like he was pumped with air and even his eyes started to become bloodshot. He bellowed loudly: "Thousand Mountain Snow!

Whoosh whoosh whoosh! From his mouth, countless flying blades of white qi shot towards Qiao Wu like raindrops. Simultaneously, Mao Ba'er turned towards the sky and let loose a long howl. His three threads unexpectedly spouted out flame columns that were over ten-plus meters in length! In concert, these flames burned towards Qiao Wu!

All of this took a while to explain, but in fact didn't exceed ten-plus seconds. Xu Yangyi took everything into his eyes and suddenly increased in speed! He understood very well that this was the stalling time that his legionnaires and Zhao Wuye were giving their all to grant him!

At most... he had no more than sixty seconds to slay Nangong Xiaoran! Otherwise, under the pressure of half-step Foundation Establishment, the others wouldn't last for a minute!

"You want to leave?" At the same time, Quan Liu's sneer resonated at the border of his ear: "Stay!"

His left hand faintly beckoned, and a dazzling gold spirit-cloud emerged in his hand. Soon after, it transformed into countless qi needles, swiftly firing at Xu Yangyi!

Xu Yangyi still didn't halt. Nangong Xiaoran arrogantly stood in his original position with his arms crossed. With two half-step Foundation Establishment present, Xu Yangyi didn't have the ghost of a chance in reaching him.

The latter wanted to just rely on the insignificant troops of the Xingtian Legion, feeble shrimp soldiers and puny crab generals? [\[3\]](#)

Two middle-stage Qi Condensation and two demons still at the initial stage. Their strength was so dreadfully low, yet they tried to stand before him in vain? Nangong Xiaoran didn't see, but at this moment, Li Zongyuan had started to completely expand like a balloon. His entire face sprouted warts, and his bulk had long since inflated up to four to five meters. As for Quan Ningyue, she had hopped onto his back at an unknown time!

Even more strangely, both of Quan Ningyue's hands had fully split apart into sections. She hadn't been dismembered by someone but it was rather due to her internals opening! The inside was jam-packed... with ring upon ring of talismans personally carved by a grand artificer, originating from the late-stage Foundation Establishment Grandmaster Gao Muya!

In order to save her life from the Nine Yin Extremes bloodline, Gao Muya had to exchange her entire body's meridians! Rather than say Quan Ningyue was a human, it would be more appropriate to say that she was a cyborg!

At this very instant, the talismans on her arm radiated silver light. A torrential spiritual pressure that could compare with the Foundation Establishment realm swept across the entire battleground in a flash!

This was her hidden ace!

All of a sudden, Quan Liu went motionless. His entire bodily qi stopped cycling. In the air, all the needles transformed into golden qi and dissipated.

Everyone else was completely stunned! Even Bloodblade's coffin suddenly lifted open as well. An incomparably aged hand stretched out.

This... was true Foundation Establishment spiritual pressure!

Yi Old Five looked at Quan Ningyue in bewilderment. At the same time... he also looked at the transformed three-headed demon beast Mao Ba'er and Zhao Wuye, who had filled the scene with chaotic flashes of white light.

In addition... they saw the rotating Quan Ningyue who was standing on top of the head of a thirty-to-forty-meter-long toad. Both her arms were completely spread open, and rings of blue runes pervaded the front of her hands.

"This is..." Yi Old Five inhaled heavily. Reticent, he withdrew from the scene. Never had he expected that the Xingtian Legion and the Nangong Clan's battle would actually be a true mortal struggle!

Fahui didn't spare a word. His kasaya trembled and formed a golden tornado that protected the front of him. He gazed deeply at the hefted Falling Moon and the body of Xu Yangyi that had already become an afterimage: "This Benefactor Xu... wants to kill Benefactor Nangong?"

Nangong Xiaoran was also shocked. In an instant, Qiao Wu had been trapped. Quan Liu was faced with the menace of Foundation

Establishment qi!

This was too irrational! In no way had he expected... that two middle-stage and two initial-stage Qi Condensation could truly trap two half-step Foundation Establishment!

This... was evidently these peoples' hidden trumps! The killing moves in their reserves! At this moment, everything had come out. This meant...

He shivered from head to toe. Without the slightest hesitation, all of his body's spiritual force cycled. The giant bow appeared again.

"Young master, be careful!!!!" Two angry bellows rang out. Qiao Wu and Quan Liu roared together. However, their cries were drowned out by a loltia's high-pitched yelling!

"Spirit Extermination Canon!" Right now, Quan Ningyue's soft and tender face was without a trace of purity and cuteness. Instead, she glared daggers at Quan Liu and both her hands shockingly formed a canon-like object. She enunciated word for word: "If you dare to move, I'll dare to attack. Care to try?"

At this moment, Quan Liu was truly slick with perspiration! These insects... were sincerely risking their lives to trap them! These insects... were actually able to allow their commander to face-off against the sixth young master!

Closer... Even closer... In the night, Xu Yangyi's silhouette dragged out a long afterimage. Bearing a sliver of blood in his eyes, he locked down on the hawk-headed figure of Nangong Xiaoran!

Slaying a man at every ten paces, ceaseless until a thousand li was traversed! [\[4\]](#)

[1] For better imagery: the person with the dog-emblem long gown is Quan Liu. His name is literally: "Dog Six". Person with bird emblem is Qiao Wu. His name is literally Bird/sparrow Five. These... are not very good names to give to your kids.

[2] This line took me a while to wrap my head around. In case you don't know. Pikachu and Mewtwo are both pokemon.

[3] "Shrimp soldiers and crab generals" - idea of useless troops as stated. In legend, this is the army of the Dragon King.

[4] Poem from Tang Poet Li Bai, perhaps translated as "The Knight-Errant's Journey". The imagery is to keep killing one man every ten paces for 1000 li, but the meaning behind this part of the poem is to describe one's sword skill as excellent and courageous.

Chapter 214: Danxia Temple (34)

“Shooting Sun!” An enraged shout came from Nangong Xiaoran’s mouth. In a blink, the bow saturated the air with ten thousand rays of golden light. However, at this juncture, Xu Yangyi’s hand formed a Dao-seal at lightning speed.

Pill Cauldron Builds Spirit! Spiritcleaver Pulse!

In the next second, Nangong Xiaoran’s mind abruptly quaked, as if a giant hand had stretched into his brain and was madly stirring about!

“ARGH!!!” He released miserable screeches that exhausted his strength. He had almost never experienced such anguish. In a twinkling, his hawk eyes turned crimson, and he held his head as shrieked painfully: “Spiritual-sense attack! S-spiritual-sense attack divine ability... You!”

His bow’s golden light suddenly faded away, but Xu Yangyi’s blade had already arrived at the side of his neck!

“YOUNG MASTER!!!” Qiao Wu heard Nangong Xiaoran’s scream, so frightened that he turned his head in shock. Immediately, he turned pale in fright. He was almost needless of further thought, and an ancient mirror promptly appeared in his hand. He shined it towards Zhao Wuye, and a streak of faint azure light erupted out. In a flash, Zhao Wuye felt as if his entire body was being burned by raging flames. He started to wretchedly screech at once.

“Open... the formation!” Qiao Wu’s eyes seemed as they on the verge of splitting open in fury. This was the Nangong Clan’s sixth young master, which was one of the Five Great Demon Clans! Ranked fifth in the clan’s echelon! If some mishap happened to Nangong Xiaoran...

He simply dared not continue this line of thought!

“Dream on!” Zhao Wuye’s entire body emitted azure smoke, but

he made a strange bitter laughter: “If you have the skill, then kill me now!”

“Very good...” Qiao Wu’s anxiety burned. He formed a Dao-seal, and an azure bird suddenly charged out from the mirror and madly rushed Zhao Wuye!

Boom! Mao Ba’ers enormous body blocked the front of him. This time, there was no wretched scream but only an extremely mournful whimper. Shockingly, a bloody hole on Mao Ba’ers neck had been pecked out by the azure bird!

Quan Liu’s entire body was icy-cold. Behind him, Quan Ningyue’s Spirit Extermination Cannon was aimed right at his back. He clearly understood... He realized that after this cannon, Quan Ningyue would undoubtedly be without the slightest power to counter. She could even possibly go into shock. Nonetheless, he dared not risk whether or not he could withstand this blast!

In a spark of flint, the blade edge had reached Nangong Xiaoran’s neck!

Rustle... At this time, Nangong Xiaoran’s chest erupted with a golden brilliance. His rather vicious face calmed by a sliver. Straight afterwards, following a boom, Xu Yangyi’s blade edge surprisingly hacked into a golden light shade that had appeared at some unknown time!

Time seemed to come to a standstill in this second! In the next second, a crash resounded! The entire light screen turned into fragments!

Xu Yangyi inwardly lamented. Every champion of heaven’s pride possessed their own protective magik artifact. This time, the Spiritcleaver Pulse failed to hit mark, but next time, the other would surely be on guard!

Buzz... A black talisman quietly flew out from Nangong Xiaoran’s body, revolving around him and spinning incessantly. In all

likelihood, this was an item to prevent spiritual-sense attacks. Yet under Nangong Xiaoran's great alarm, his hawk head released a long cry towards the heavens. Shortly afterwards, his entire body quickly whirled like a spinning top. From his body, countless feathers attacked without distinction!

“Feathers Fall On The Three Realms!!!” In his heart, he could truly be said to so terrified that he was robbed of his soul at this moment. Never did he expect that Xu Yangyi actually had a divine ability that attacked spiritual sense! Even he didn't have the qualifications to study such a divine ability!

Just a tad short... A little bit more and his head would've fell to the ground!

His heart was wildly pounding. This great horror between life and death caused his divine ability to be completely exhibited! In the wake of his spinning, his body ascended higher and higher! As for these feathers, their edged qi shockingly carried traces of sword qi!

“Golden Edge Enters Sea!!!” Without hardly any hesitation, two divine abilities united into one. The Nangong Clan's advantage was their long-range sniping. This was why he had brought two half-step Foundation Establishment retainers. In this moment, he evidently had to overtake the close-combat Xu Yangyi in distance apart from himself!

Xu Yangyi's gaze flickered. Simply without the least bit indecision, both of his hands formed Dao-seals again. He fiercely pressed down on the ground!

BOOM! The ground immediately flushed up with a ten-meter-tall sandstorm! In the sky, Nangong Xiaoran's spinning figure was swiftly encircled within a ten meter radius of sand!

“Be careful!” Quan Liu couldn't help but to loudly cry out in alarm. Like how ginger got spicier with age, with his depth of age and wisdom, he could already see... that this sand and dust... was

abnormal!

This sand wasn't a divine ability; he couldn't sense qi inside it at all! Instead, it was a kind of magik artifact... A magik artifact specially created to hinder the eyes!

Everywhere around, sand and dust revolved. Both of Nangong Xiaoran's hands united and pulled apart. A folding fan then appeared in his hand. The ink characters on its surface emitted red light. Without any hesitation, he lifted the fan and suddenly fanned away the dust surrounding him!

"Sixth master, you can't!!" Qiao Wu's heart leapt out. At this very moment, the last plan had departed!

"This diversion is nothing more than a smokescreen! Forget about him; leave this place now!"

The key moment was already lost. At this instant, the most important thing was getting several hundred meters away and displaying the Nangong Clan's long-range sniping advantage! Not staying in this smokescreen with Xu Yangyi and bothering with arcane combat!

"Fan... Exhales Wind!" Nangong Xiaoran heard their voices, but this matter had come suddenly! The blade from moments ago utterly caused him to lose his cool.

He hadn't foreseen that the Xingtian legionnaires would actually be so valiant and unafraid of death, truly entrapping two half-step Foundation Establishment!

He also hadn't anticipated Xu Yangyi being so fierce and tough. Xu Yangyi honestly dared to use his blade to behead him!

He moreover hadn't foreseen... that the other was actually still preserving a hidden ace, a spiritual-sense attack. A little bit short... Just a tad more and his soul would've returned to the netherworld!

At this moment, between the great terror of life and death, he was indeed somewhat disorientated. However, he was likewise a

genius of the Nangong Clan. Immediately, a blue demon pupil opened above him. This demon pupil could capture all beings in front within a 180 degrees! There wasn't a place for anything to hide!

Swoosh!! Following this fan, the sand and dust ahead crumbled away at once. And yet, a black blade-light twinkled in his eyes at the same time of this crumbling!

"Your weakness... is that your divine abilities are too few!" In his heart, Nangong Xiaoran relaxed. He had seen someone... Seeing someone was good. He was unconvinced that he, Nangong Xiaoran, ranked fifth in the Nangong Clan's echelon, would fall in this place!

"Second Fan... Ignites Flame!" He took a deep breath. His next fan fanned out at person in front of him with maximum power!

Swish... In the air, a ten-plus-meter-wide flame instantly flashed in the wake of the fan's power. In the sky, a black blade-light and red flame formed a remarkably distinct contrast!

"YOUNG MASTER!!!!!!" At the same time, Qiao Wu screamed out miserably, shouting himself hoarse. Quan Liu stretched his mouth wide and looked up at the sky in disbelief.

This sound caused Nangong Xiaoran, who had just calmed himself down from the terror of life and death, finally feel a sliver odd.

Xu Yangyi's blade was without fire... without the black dragon. He had done nothing more than use his blade to slash down.

This question... He didn't have time for further thought. His blaze had annihilated Xu Yangyi's figure at once. The other made a repressed shout of pain. At the same time, he felt the entire world spinning.

Huh... What's going on... How can I see my body... How are there so many people getting closer and closer to me... Why can't I feel

anything... The world is turning dark...

The instant the the world completely darkened, Nangong Xiaoran recalled what was odd at last. He saw that his body... didn't have a head. But also... he saw... two of Xu Yangyi...

SPLURT!!! A fountain of blood sprayed up high!

Xu Yangyi was standing behind Nangong Xiaoran, his hand gripping a blade. His entire body had sprayed all over by Nangong Xiaoran's blood, yet his face was expressionless.

Swoosh... The headless corpse was still standing upright in its original position. It wasn't until the moment that Xu Yangyi stowed his blade that Nangong Xiaoran's head thumped as it hit the ground.

His eyes rounded and glowering with anger, Nangong Xiaoran died with a remaining grievance. He didn't understand... In the end, he still hadn't realized. How did he die? Why were there two of Xu Yangyi?

Silence. A silence like that of death.

Everyone's gazes looked at Xu Yangyi, who picked up Nangong Xiaoran's head, in shock. Quite a few people's eyes were fairly vacant. They dared not believe in everything before them.

"This... This..." The lips of the CSIB's cultivator Li were shaking: "The Nangong Clan... Nangong Xiaoran... was beheaded? H-h-he actually did it! He actually really did it!"

"Haa..." Sister Nine and Yi Old Five happened to both stop their hands by chance. They looked at the blood-soaked Xu Yangyi with immense shock.

"Fifty-two seconds..." Sister Nine inhaled deeply: "In fifty-two seconds... he beheaded Nangong Xiaoran..."

"If word of this gets out, I'm afraid the heavens really will flip over..." Yi Old Five heavily studied Xu Yangyi: "What I care more

about though is how are there two of him?”

At this time, a voice bearing a trace of surprise echoed. The coffin had already completely opened. Two words caused everyone to be suddenly enlightened!

“Thousand Illusions.” A pale hand grabbed onto the coffin’s edge. Withered and bone-thin, an old man climbed out from the coffin like a dead man.

Xu Yangyi’s gaze faintly flashed. Worthy of being a Foundation Establishment senior... Even though Bloodblade suppressed his cultivation, his insight still remained.

That was correct... It was the Thousand Illusions!

The Xingtian Legion had entered with six people, but Qiao Wu only counted five. This was because Zhan Twelve had hid himself early on. On his person, he wore Xu Yangyi’s Thousand Illusions.

The Spiritcleaver Pulse was Xu Yangyi’s first attempt. He didn’t have a hope at all that this move would slay his opponent. His foe was by no means trash. This maneuver was his inadvertent alert to the enemy, beating the grass to scare the snake. All he needed was to force the other into a state of confusion!

The following sandstorm wasn’t a divine ability but rather Zhan Twelve’s magik artifact. At the very beginning, Xu Yangyi had asked whether or not the other had this item.

Zhan Twelve’s answer: he did.

Even in his dreams, Nangong Xiaoran wouldn’t have expected that two people were hiding in the sand and dust. One of them was an assassin—relying on concealment to make a living—transformed into Xu Yangyi’s appearance. The other was Xu Yangyi himself.

Zhan Twelve was at the front and Xu Yangyi was behind Nangong Xiaoran. As for Nangong Xiaoran’s first fan, when it had fanned away the sandstorm in front, it was Zhan Twelve that

appeared! Thus, his blade was simply unable to wave the black flame dragon!

Yet because he saw Xu Yangyi, Nangong Xiaoran had completely loosened up.

The true Xu Yangyi used the reaper's sickle to behead Nangong Xiaoran in the instant that the latter relaxed!

The exchange of experts was decided in a flash. A sliver of slack, and the price was one's life!

The scene was deathly quiet. After an unknown passage of time, an extremely furious voice rang out in madness: "JUNIOR! I'll have you pay with your life!!!"

Qiao Wu had more or less already gone insane. In front of him... the sixth young master had been killed! He and Quan Liu had actually been trapped by two initial-stage and two middle-stage Qi Condensation cultivators! Those four had trapped them without hesitation towards their lives!

They had still believed... that the sixth young master and the other were at the very least equally matched.

They had still believed... that they could provide assistance with all speed and quickly slay the cultivator before them.

They absolutely hadn't expected...

Fifty-two seconds. A measly fifty-two seconds!

Nangong Xiaoran's head had fell to the ground!

Chapter 215: Danxia Temple (34)

“Little mongrel... If I don’t pull out your tendons and flay your skin, it will be an injustice to the Nangong Clan’s grace!” Qiao Wu had gone insane. The Nangong’s sixth master had died here. After returning, they would surely be buried together with him!

In the wake of his anger and fright weaving together, his voice started to tremble. His body had already started to involuntarily transform.

His head of white hair frantically grew, and his face also turned pointed. His clothes began to break apart layer by layer, and his claws grew sharper and sharper. In a state of rage and fright, he had already started to completely demonize!

“Fifty-two seconds... Fifty-two seconds...” Quan Liu’s voice was brimming with incredulity. By no means had he foreseen that the young master, a proud son of heaven, would be beheaded within fifty-two seconds!

If the foe encountered was half-step Foundation Establishment like them, he could still accept it. However, it wasn’t! On the contrary, it was a cultivator with the same late-stage Qi Condensation cultivation!

Who was he to blame? The young master for being too stupid? It truly wasn’t like so! Nangong Xiaoran wasn’t dumb at all. In arcane combat, Nangong Xiaoran had been utterly defeated very few times! Otherwise, it was absolutely impossible for him to enter the clan’s echelon! Or hold such a high ranking!

Was he to blame this opponent for being too cunning?

Perhaps this was how it was... The chain of strategies just now had created slivers of complacency. It was this sliver of ease that allowed Xu Yangyi to kill his opponent in a flash! If it wasn’t because Nangong Xiaoran was the one who was killed, he would

practically be applauding the other!

“He actually... really did kill Nangong Xiaoran...” God Ming Twelve looked at everything before his eyes in amazement. Immediately, he trembled coldly from head to toe. That was Nangong Xiaoran... A single-digit ranker... Even Sister Nine wouldn’t go provoking him rashly, not to mention that he even brought two half-step Foundation Establishment with him this time. Now... those two half-step Foundation Establishment ACTUALLY didn’t save him?

As soon as he recalled that he had once provoked Xu Yangyi and openly declared his desire to kill him, he was unable restrain himself from shivering.

“Yet he was killed anyways...” Sister Nine gently bit her lip: “Fortunately, I blocked him back then, otherwise, the person’s head being displayed here right now wouldn’t be Nangong Xiaoran’s...” She turned towards God Ming Twelve and said coldly: “But yours.”

“This kid... absolutely isn’t normal...” The Ye Clan’s Old Four pursed his lips. For the first time, he deeply memorized Xu Yangyi’s figure. Without nearly any consideration, he said lowly to his other clansmen: “If we get out alive, I want all his data!”

At this moment, not a single one of Greenwall’s Three Swords opened their mouths. They knew Nangong Xiaoran. In the same vein, they also knew that he was extremely troublesome. Moreover, he had even come with two half-step Foundation Establishment! He could be considered the power that they were most unwilling to provoke here. Nonetheless... right now, before their eyes, he had been cleaved into two parts by a single cut!

“Ling Xiaozi.” His expression grave, Xuan Chengzi spoke: “I recognized he was strong before... Now, I’ll make a correction. This person isn’t just good in realm... His comprehensive strength is even stronger!” He said with seemingly deep meaning: “You lost

to him in nothing more than a bout of spiritual sense. If can be ignored, it would be best not to bother about it. This person... is not easily provoked.”

Following Nangong Xiaoran’s head falling to the ground, the present scene returned to complete silence. Everyone had confirmed that someone had died, but none had expected that the leader of the Nangong Clan, one of the Five Great Demon Clans, had been beheaded!

Gazes converged on Nangong Xiaoran’s head, his eyes still wide open in death. Fahui softly chanted and shared a glance with Ye Old Four. Appearing to come to an agreement, they happened to respectively collect their rosary beads and gemmed parasol. Sister Nine gently beckoned and her corpse puppet returned to her side. She and Yi Old Five snorted coldly in unison, and her gaze turned to Xu Yangyi with seemingly deep meaning.

“Huff...” At this time, an exhaling sound was heard from behind. Fang Cheng had regained consciousness. His healing abilities were too astonishing. Presently, the wounds on his body seemed more or less gone. As he opened his eyes, he looked upon the landscape in front of him and gasped coldly: “Junior brother! This...”

He didn’t finish speaking because Xu Yangyi made a gesture for him to be silent.

Xu Yangyi walked over to his side, helped him up, and said: “In a chaotic battle... just like this, everyone is looking for each opportunity to eliminate an outsider. Nangong Xiaoran has already died... but Qiao Wu and Quan Liu haven’t! Besides... they’re going crazy against the Xingtian Legion and coming for revenge.”

“Junior brother?” Fang Cheng suddenly lifted up his head, believing himself to have heard incorrectly. He had personally crossed hands with Nangong Xiaoran. He knew how difficult the other was to handle.

Xu Yangyi gently shook his head and said seriously: “So...

everyone's goal right now is me. In the Xingtian Legion and the Nangong Clan's battle, no one joined in. You see that Quan Ningyue's hands are shaking... We're the best elimination target... If there's one more strong person here, fine, but the best is a dead strong person."

Fang Cheng didn't speak any further. Instead, he mustered his qi with the utmost effort. Even he could sense the hidden, dense killing intent in those seemingly placid gazes.

Even if Qiao Wu and Quan Liu failed to kill the Xingtian Legion... they could still take advantage of the opportunity to make a move. In this place, there was no morality of the Rivers and Lakes, only the law of the jungle.

Suddenly, a furious roar echoed throughout the entire scene.

"I'm going to bury you all together!!!" A giant skylark shockingly emerged within Zhao Wuye's seal. It was approximately thirty meters in size and released a piercing cry towards the sky, madly rushing towards Zhao Wuye and Mao Ba'er! The giant skylark was nearly insane! Its mouth issued a raspy screech. The swiftness of its speed even caused the soil on the ground to churn because of its rapid charge!

God Ming Twelve's gaze flashed, and his hand stirred. However, it was immediately pressed down by Sister Nine. She gently shook her head.

"It's not time..." Sister Nine said quietly.

"Junior brother?" Behind Fahui, a copper man asked.

Fahui's expression was unchanging, and he also shook his head: "Wait."

Qiao Wu's distance from the deathly pale-faced Zhao Wuye and Mao Ba'er was already less than ten meters. Xu Yangyi yelled out at once: "Undo the seal!"

Zhao Wuye gritted his teeth. Undo to the seal? How could it be

undone!

A normal seal simply wasn't able to trap an old half-step Foundation Establishment monster! Already, there was a fair difference of substance between such a character and the Qi Condensation realm! This formation was a formation he had extended and laid down with his essence blood. Even if he wanted to undo it, it absolutely wouldn't be accomplished in a second!

And to half-step Foundation Establishment... ten meters was truly crossed in a wink! A second wasn't even needed!

"Fuck... who would've thought that I, Zhao Wuye, would lose my life here..." Zhao Wuye's complexion was pale. Even now, he could feel the enormous pressure brought by this now-demonized half-step Foundation Establishment straight at him. It was a kind... of power seeming able to cause one's body to collapse!

He was absolutely unable to bear it.

At the side, Mao Ba'er had long since fallen into unconsciousness after his neck had been punched through. Even if his neck hadn't been pierced, he was still unable to do anything against the sure-kill attack of an old half-step Foundation Establishment monster that had nearly lost all rationality!

Xu Yangyi didn't say anything. He lifted up Falling Moon, revolved his entire body's spiritual force, and then rushed towards Zhao Wuye's seal. Even if he did go in, there wouldn't be any effect. Nonetheless, he simply wouldn't not go just because it appeared there would be no result!

How others treat me is how I treat others! Even if I have to go through the myriad masses.

Xu Yangyi clearly sensed the inside of his body. After the great battle, his meridians were like water pumps. He drew upon the meager amount of spiritual force still left in his meridians. At the same time, his spiritual sense completely opened, and Pill

Cauldron Builds Spirit was left activated. He understood that as soon as Nangong Xiaoran had died, the surrounding pack of wolves waiting wouldn't mind casually eliminating him at all. After all, he, who had killed Nangong Xiaoran, was too conspicuous at this moment. Conspicuous to the extent that he was unable to make people not take note.

Currently, in front, Qiao Wu was wildly approaching, and Zhao Wuye and Mao Ba'er were confronted with the crisis of a fatal blow. At the back, everyone seemed harmonious but held underlying thoughts within their hearts. If the Xingtian Legion then lost their soldiers or commander under Qiao Wu's and Quan Liu's hands... they wouldn't be able to exit Danxia Temple!

"Huh?" At the boundary of mortal peril, an aged voice, soon to be buried, suddenly rang out and coughed severely: "Cough, cough... This Throne is still unaware... when could half-step Foundation Establishment call themselves 'This Throne'?"

Just as his voice fell, an ancient palm-sized bronze mirror shockingly appeared in front of Zhao Wuye and Mao Ba'er. As for Qiao Wu's colossal body, it suddenly charged over. However, in the next second, everyone's pupils jumped.

The mirror... seemed to have no bottom! It surprisingly took Qiao Wu's entire body and stored it in! Soon after, in the place Qiao Wu was originally standing, space fluctuated. Once again, Qiao Wu mysteriously appeared in his prior position!

"M-magik treasure! This is a magik treasure!" Everyone had believed Mao Ba'er, originally soon to be dead, had passed out and died. Who had expected that his ears would twitch and his eyes would quietly narrow into slits? Mao Ba'er had clearly watched everything before him and scuttled back up afterwards. Furthermore, he viciously woofed and roared at the skylark, his entire body seemingly brimming with enthusiasm. "Come! C'mon! Fight me on the mattress arena for 300 rounds!"

A good picture of a dog relying on his master's power to make threats.

Zhao Wuye hated that he was unable to kick this lowly dog to death, yet he simply didn't have the time to consider this. Opposite from him, Qiao Wu looked at him in shock. Afterwards, crimson eyes suddenly looked towards the place from where the aged voice was heard.

Over yonder was a hunched-back old man who was leaning on a walking stick, thin like a monkey. He gently waved his hand, and the ancient mirror produced a glorious radiance.

"Scram... cough, cough..." The old man coughed twice: "Give thanks that you lot aren't dead... If this was outside... I would've killed you a millions time long ago... cough, cough..."

"Bloodblade?" Sister Nine's gaze faintly rippled: "Why has he suddenly appeared?"

"He should've only come to look for things to prolong his lifespan. He shouldn't care about the Heavenmend Stone too much..." God Ming Twelve also thought this to be strange: "From the beginning until now, he hasn't tried to find an ally, but now he's shown up..." His voice yet to fall, he discovered Sister Nine was looking straight at him. He said in confusion: "What?"

"You just said..." Sister Nine gritted her teeth: "He hasn't found an ally?"

God Ming Twelve nodded.

Sister Nine turned her head and fixedly locked her eyes on Xu Yangyi: "You're wrong... It wasn't that he wasn't looking... I get it... He was examining. Examining who had the qualifications to be his ally... but he actually... didn't choose Buddhism or Daoism. He went so far as to..."

"Are you saying he chose the Xingtian Legion?! This weak chicken of a legion that has nothing more than middle-stage Qi

Condensation besides its commander?!” God Ming Twelve’s eyes suddenly opened wide. He looked at Sister Nine incredulously.

“If not... what do you think he’s doing right now!” Sister Nine gnashed her teeth and said: “Why would he help out that man and dog? Mercy for the heart? Utter nonsense!”

In her heart, she thrashed in pain.

The Xingtian Legion... or perhaps it could be said that Xu Yangyi was too dazzling. Now was the best opportunity to eliminate them. Unexpectedly... Bloodblade was still alive and walked into this place! Furthermore, he had revealed himself in this developing moment and stuck his hand into this matter!

Chapter 216: Danxia Temple (35)

Senior Bloodblade had arrived in his true body! Even though he suppressed his realm, Foundation Establishment was Foundation Establishment. Even if his spiritual force could only be used at a Qi Condensation level, his spiritual sense and the divine abilities equipped with his magik treasures could all be used! As for this ancient mirror, it obviously wasn't an ordinary one. Senior Bloodblade was initial-stage Foundation Establishment. A magik treasure that could be used at the initial stage was absolutely uncommon.

It could be said that if they had to fight a single Bloodblade, there was no question that half of them would die.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Zhao Wuye immediately formed a Dao-seal. After ten seconds later, the formation vanished without a trace. The skylark fiercely glared at Zhao Wuye and Mao Ba'er. He was unwilling to leave because he clearly understood that once he left... all that remained was death!

After he returned, the Nangong Clan wouldn't let him off by any measure or pace! However, if he stayed, there was still death! He had no thoughts about exchanging moves with a Foundation Establishment expert at all, even if the other was suppressed to the same realm!

"You lot..." A trace of a terrible glint flashed through Bloodblade's eyes: "Could it be that you think me to be already old in years, unable to kill a chicken or slaughter a dog?"

"Let's..." Quao Wu retook his human form. His teeth clenched to the extent that a grinding echoed. In his heart, there were endless thoughts about drawing out the Xingtian Legion's tendons and pulling out their bones. However, he dared not expressed this one bit.

"Go..." Quan Liu rigidly gritted his teeth. Nangong Xiaoran had

already died. The Nangong Clan didn't have a central pillar. If they stayed here, and since Bloodblade had already interfered, they would only lose their lives.

"You two!" A man heard what was said, his expression like earth. He clenched his teeth and said: "Sixth young master has died here. When we get back..."

"I said..." Quan Liu enunciated each word through his teeth: "Go!"

"But..."

"No buts!" Qiao Wu's palm clenched out blood, and his eyes were dreadfully reddened: "If you want to fight a true realm-suppressed Foundation Establishment senior, you're looking to die. I won't be accompanying you!"

"Go..." Quan Liu gritted his teeth and said lowly: "After we leave... everyone scatter far apart. Never see each other again. The Nangong Clan cannot be returned to any longer. Only like this can we escape with our lives from the ancestor's hand." He turned his head and looked at the group: "The earlier we leave, the more advantageous it'll be for us!"

No one dared to say anything further. The sixth master had already died. Returning to the clan and being buried with him was the only road.

Several hours after entering Danxia Temple's base, the sixth young master had been beheaded. The Nangong Clan, one of Five Great Demon Clans, had been the first to be eliminated and knocked out.

The scene was awfully silent. Everyone's vigilant gazes hovered over Bloodblade's body. After ages, Bloodblade laughed. He looked towards Xu Yangy in satisfaction: "Young friend... I have a couple words to say to you... cough, cough..."

Xu Yangyi cupped his hands: "Please speak, senior."

“I have come to Danxia Temple in order to find one thing. A spirit medicine recorded in legend that is able to prolong one’s life by a century. I once heard through the grapevine that this item is suspected to exist within Danxia Temple. You and I will take it together. What do you think of this deal?”

His mouth spoke of business, yet his mirror quietly shined over Zhao Wuye’s body.

Xu Yangyi laughed and cupped his hands: “Whatever senior instructs, I will naturally follow.”

“I like logical people.” Bloodblade coughed twice and beckoned. Immediately, Nangong Xiaoran’s storage ring flew into Xu Yangyi’s hand. His thin face covered in wrinkles, he smirked: “This item... I present it to you as a greeting gift... cough, cough...”

Xu Yangyi didn’t take a look to see what was inside the storage ring. His face was respectful, yet he sneered in his heart.

Mao Ba’er had said that Bloodblade was in no way good person. This present business further illustrated that he wasn’t the virtuous kind at all! He was making Xu Yangyi help him find an item, evidently fancying the Xingtian Legion, but the group was merely assisting him and nothing more. He wouldn’t help the Xingtian Legion take anything!

As for the “down payment”, it was the storage of ring of Nangong Xiaoran who Xu Yangyi had beheaded.

The other’s approach was very clear. Help had to be rendered. No help, then I’ll have to ask you eternally rest here. As for whether the Xingtian Legion was willing or not?

A jest. A Foundation Establishment cultivator to Qi Condensation was a difference of heaven and earth, old tigers contrasted to rabbits. The tiger ate the rabbit. Was there need to consider the rabbit’s thoughts?

The others were unaware of the thoughts within Xu Yangyi’s

heart, but the complexion of each person present turned a few shades gloomy.

This was a kind of acknowledgment.

“This old ghost...” Ye Old Four snorted: “So it turned out he was looking for an ally, eh... And I really believed that he feared nothing in the world. He came to Danxia Temple without even needing an ally.”

“Amitabha.” Fahui chanted and stowed his gaze from Xu Yangyi’s body.

They simply cared not for how tyrannical Bloodblade was. They only knew that his current attitude was equal to recognizing that the Xingtian Legion had the qualifications to work together with him. Or perhaps it should be said that they had qualifications to “help” him.

Among the others, the Ming Clan, the Ye Clan, and the Yi Clan, he surprisingly hadn’t taken fancy to them. In the same vein, even the sects of Daoism and Buddhism weren’t selected. Instead, Bloodblade felt that this Xingtian Legion, which had the lowest strength on paper, was even more of a winning chip!

To those of heaven’s pride who were at the scene, this was silent but resounding slap to the face.

“Senior.” Xu Yangyi cupped his hands and said: “But this Heavenmend Stone...”

In an instant, everyone’s gazes tightened.

“This item...” Bloodblade said indifferently: “Is of no great use to me. At the moment, I am only seeking things to prolong life.” He paused and laughed: “However, leaving it in your care here isn’t bad.”

“This old goon!” The anger in Zhao Wuye’s eyes was jetting out flames: “This is if he finds a life-extending item... He still wants to make off with the Heavenmend Stone!”

“Amitabha...” These words gave rise to a chorus of cold snorts. Fahui’s expression was devoid of sorrow or joy, and he said deeply: “What place does senior put us cultivators who struggled bitterly here?”

Bloodblade laughed grimly: “If you’re willing to face me and this Fellow Daoist, don’t hesitate to come try.”

“Oh?” Sister Nine also stood out. She could permit other things, but such an item like the Heavenmend Stone was something she absolutely couldn’t! Even a few great clans would take this legendary marvel as a divine clan-protection artifact!

Bloodblade might not care for the Heavenmend Stone, only seeking life-prolongment items, but it was impossible for them not to care at all!

She brushed an eye over Xu Yangyi: “Fellow Daoist, are you certain you want to face all the other cultivators with Senior Bloodblade?”

Xu Yangyi’s gaze flickered. He declined to comment. Furthermore, he had yet to speak.

Bloodblade’s pupils quietly needled. His mind suddenly flashed, and he immediately realized that he had made an error.

This little cultivator’s strength was rather good. If he wasn’t standing on his side later on... and was confronted with so many geniuses by himself...

Although he had made absolute preparations for this excursion to Danxia Temple, he was set high and lofty in the past. Regarding Qi Condensation cultivators, had he ever once considered them in his eyes? At this moment, his words and conduct were unable to be changed from habit. He had involuntarily made the choice of himself as a “Foundation Establishment cultivator”.

Either work for me or die.

As for what he desired, was it this current group of Qi

Condensation cultivators' turn to give comment?

Nonetheless, he was presently a "Qi Condensation cultivator". He could only use Qi Condensation qi. If he truly provoked the crowd's anger, once all those of heaven's pride really did join together from each power, they absolutely wouldn't be scared of him!

"Cough, cough..." His heart's idea took a sudden turn. He coughed dryly, sighing deeply in his mind. Were it not for his lifespan already being exhausted, he would do his utmost to get a hold of the Heavenmend Stone. But now, he only wanted to extend his life! All other items were illusory.

"Since that's how it is..." Stiffly changing directions, he faintly smiled: "I don't really care for this Heavenmend Stone, but if a life-extending item appears..." He paused, and his voice became dark: "If anyone obstructs me, I will be sure to grant that person a death of a thousand cuts."

No one was in opposition.

In these grounds, apart from himself, no one cared much about life-extending items.

"In that case." Bloodblade glanced at Xu Yangyi: "I'll tell everyone how to take this treasure... It can also be considered my down payment to everyone for abiding by their promises..."

"What does senior know about taking this treasure?" In a flash, everyone's eyes brightened.

"Perhaps..." Bloodblade grasped his pale beard with his fingers and laughed: "After all, I am a Foundation Establishment cultivator. Although young friends all belong to a great clan, your realms are lacking. There are too many things that your clans wouldn't tell all of you. As it turns out, I've read about how to take the Heavenmend Stone from an ancient tome. I didn't move just now to also validate whether this treasure confirms or denies my

conjecture. The fact was verified, as expected.”

“Please clear up the confusion, senior.” Sister Nine laughed: “If junior finds a life-extending item, I will certainly hand it over to senior.”

Bloodblade laughed, declining to comment: “I like logical people... Everyone, please look around.”

He pointed towards the surrounding night and said: “In this place, even if it’s night, brightness exists. Everyone’s divine abilities from just now could be said to be a display of fireworks, fiery trees and silver flowers. But everyone... did you carefully observe the stone’s silhouette?”

Not waiting for the crowd to answer, he casually beckoned and produced a fireball, approaching the Heavenmend Stone. Xu Yangyi’s gaze brightened. Not only him, everyone saw that no matter how the fireball pulsed... the Heavenmend Stone’s shadow didn’t move by a hair!

“This is called a Mirror Formation.” Both of Bloodblade’s hands were tucked in his sleeves, and he said: “From above, this Heavenmend Stone is basically unable to be gained because it’s merely...”

“A shadow cast by a physical object.” Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply: “So that’s to say the shadow underneath is the item itself. The Heavenmend Stone on top is just a shadow? No wonder I couldn’t grab it.”

Bloodblade nodded in admiration: “I chose you, Fellow Daoist Xu. I also believe in my own foresight.”

He neared the Heavenmend Stone little by little and wordlessly extended his hand. It was a thin and withered arm, almost all that remained was bony joints. He breathed in deeply, and his hand was suddenly pervaded by qi. He fiercely stuck his hand towards the Heavenmend Stone’s shadow!

All of a sudden, a bizarre scene occurred.

His hand surprisingly pierced straight into the shadow. His expression as usual, he felt about. After a few seconds, he raised a brow and shouted lowly: “Rise!”

The present scene was dead quiet. Bloodblade’s hand gradually extended into the shadow. As it extended in by roughly a third, a prismatic multicolored light flashed in the shadow without warning!

Swoosh... This light was like an aurora. Pure and clear, not a shred of an impurity was visible! This dot in the night dyed this expanse of heaven and earth with five colors!

“It can actually be this bright...” Mao Ba’er greedily sucked in a mouthful of kaleidoscopic light. In an instant, his entire body shivered uncontrollably, and he released a kind of lewd faint breathing that a dog was fundamentally unable to make: “Ah~ Hubby~ So good~~”

No one paid him any attention. Right now, no one had the effort to cast their gaze on him. Their gazes like fire, everyone was watching Bloodblade’s arm.

In the wake of his arm gradually returning to its original length, the multicolored, prismatic light below was cut apart from the shadow’s darkness sliver by sliver. It almost took the shape of a five-colored, palm-sized fountain!

Chapter 217: Danxia Temple (36)

Swish... As Bloodblade's hand progressively bounded upwards, the expanse of five-colored sunlit radiance simply couldn't be concealed any longer. It illuminated everyone's faces with rich and diverse hues.

At the same time, a kind of supremely pure Five Phases qi gushed out from the shadow. So as long a person experienced it, they would completely feel their cultivation surprisingly increase by a hair!

Xuan Chengzi's gaze twinkled. His hand was already pressed down on the hilt of his sword.

Fahui was expressionless, but his hand clutching at his rosary beads was already becoming faster and faster.

The Heavenmend Stone... This legendary item. Nine out of ten of the leading figures here from all the present powers were bound to advance to Foundation Establishment! Once they advanced, this Heavenmend stone would be immediately placed in their qi sea and nourished. Not only was this a great aid towards cultivation, at the time of late-stage Foundation Establishment, a legendary spirit treasure would also arise!

No one was willing to abandon this destiny!

Bloodblade simply ignored the hidden currents and stormy bubblings of the scene's mood. In his heart, he laughed grimly over and over again. He was a Foundation Establishment cultivator, having suppressed his realm to enter this place. In everyone's eyes, he was a heretic. If the Qi Condensation cultivators united together, he wasn't their opponent. However, if they fought here...

Once he found a life-extending item, these destinies... would all be his! In a century, he would even have the hope for Core

Formation! However, at this time, his brows furrowed.

“That’s not right...” He said seriously: “There’s something underneath.”

Everyone’s expressions immediately turned solemn. This place... was Danxia Temple! On a path with so much great danger, if said the Heavenmend Stone was placed here for them to fetch, they certainly wouldn’t believe it!

Bloodblade took a deep breath and exhausted all of his strength to suddenly pull!

CRASH!!! Following an echo, the Heavenmend Stone was already in Bloodblade’s hand. However, everyone’s gazes weren’t looking towards the Heavenmend Stone at all. Instead, they gazed at the stone’s underside... At the chain merged with the Heavenmend Stone!

“This is... a chain?” Ye Old Four studied the chain somewhat incredulously. Merely glancing, he gasped coldly: “Exorcism Godstone... This object is crafted from Exorcism Godstone!”

“Exorcism Godstone?!” Yi Old Five was stunned as well and pursued this line of questioning straightaway: “Are you sure you aren’t mistaken?”

“Take a look for yourself!”

Yi Old Five walked ahead and took a few glances. He looked at the chain in shock: “It really is Exorcism Godstone... How is this possible... Exorcism Godstone is the natural enemy of demons for sealing. Its already been gone for several centuries! Not to mention such a long chain, not even a kilogram can be found!”

“The main point isn’t the Exorcism Godstone.” Xu Yangyi looked as well. In his heart, he was rather surprised. If this Exorcism Godstone-crafted chain was placed outside, its value would be simply difficult to estimate! He observed the crowd: “If I haven’t remembered incorrectly, the Exorcism Godstone’s function... is

used for suppressing demons.”

“Any demon only requires a chain weighing a few kilograms. All demons at Great Circle Core Formation or below won’t be able to budge. Everyone... such a massive chain—who is it being used to suppress?”

These words caused everyone’s complexions to change!

“Young friend is saying... this is a seal?” Bloodblade’s face also turned cautious. His hand dragged at the chain, pulling outwards. He shook his head: “If there’s a sealed creature, it died an unknown number of years ago. A demon that requires such a large Exorcism Godstone chain is no small matter.”

Xu Yangyi laughed and said nothing. At this moment, everyone’s pupils constricted. They looked at the chain incredulously.

The chain... had moved!

Just now, the chain had clearly stirred. And yet, Bloodblade hadn’t moved his hand at all!

Swish! Everyone immediately shifted ten meters away from the chain’s vicinity. This abrupt transformation caused each person’s nerves to stretch out to peak tautness in a flash!

Down below... there was something! There was something tethered to the chain!

“Senior.” Xu Yangyi saw that Bloodblade was still holding onto the chain and said lowly: “Letting go... is fine now.”

“I want to let go!!!” As Bloodblade turned his head back, his entire face revealed a terribly anxious look: “B-but its sucking me in! I can’t let go!”

What?!

Their expressions shocked, everyone looked at the chain. It... was actually sucking in to the extent that a Foundation Establishment cultivator couldn’t free his hand?

Crash... A second movement was heard from the chain. This time, it was far more obvious than the first time. It was as if... a creature, dormant for a millennium, had been woken up down below!

At this moment, Xu Yangyi felt three places on his body there were heating up! So hot that it was scalding!

One... was the Animus Armament. Presently, it was vibrating chaotically on his chest! Fortunately, its width was small, otherwise it would've been discovered by people long ago! The other... was the hard incomplete shell. It was shaking incessantly in the same manner! The third... was the sword point. If it weren't for his storage ring, perhaps it would be rushing out at this moment!

It was like... there was something calling on them from underneath!

Swoosh! Bloodblade couldn't contain himself any longer. Fright colored his entire face, because... he discovered that the chain, this chain at the Heavenmend Stone's bottom... was being pulled back!

"S-save me..." He looked at the palm-sized shadow with terrible fear, his voice trembling. He was completely absent of the bearing a Foundation Establishment cultivator should've had. In the next second, his voice fully exploded and transformed into a screech: "Young friends! Save me!! SAVE ME!!!"

Swoosh! The chain abruptly shrunk back into the shadow! Bloodblade's lung-splitting screech carried, and his foot dragged out a roughly meter-deep scar in the ground. Nonetheless, he was unable to resist this pulling state!

Everyone stared blankly. No one had even thought of such a transformation!

Not a person moved forward. Everyone's steps were falling back.

"Junior brother..." At this time, Fang Cheng moved close, his

expression dreadfully pale: “We... have to go NOW!”

Xu Yangyi regained his wits and looked at him with a solemn face: “How?”

“I don’t know!” Fang Cheng was already heavily sweating. He gnashed his teeth and flipped over his hand. On the surface, a blood-colored rune was throbbing endlessly. “T-this is a Warning Talisman that master-ancestor drew for me... In case a situation occurs that master-ancestor can’t save me from, this talisman will then appear and...” His voice was fairly shaky: “This shadow isn’t ordinary... I’m half wolf-demon. A wolf’s sense of smell is several hundred times greater than a humans! I smelled... I really smelled...”

His body broke out into shivers. Xu Yangyi pressed down on his shoulder and said gravely: “Senior brother, don’t lose yourself. What did you smell?”

Fang Cheng’s chest heaved up and down violently. He shut his eyes, breathed in deeply a few times, and then gritted his teeth: “Demonic qi... Demonic qi so strong that it doesn’t dissipate... I fucking swear, I’ve never smelled such strong demonic qi!”

“Junior brother, run! There’s something below! Something living! This is sealing something living! The sealed thing hasn’t died! Bloodblade... is screwed!”

Seemingly validating his words, Bloodblade had already been pulled less than a meter away from the shadow!

“Three Suns Open Tai!!!” Bloodblade was already in total panic! Following his screech, three suns suddenly appeared above his head. His body seemed to recover its youth! His muscles sharply expanded, and his wrinkles were smoothed out by the swell of his flesh. Even a rosy color emerged! [\[1\]](#)

“HURGH!!!” He fiercely shouted and consumed all his strength to pull back. However, the chain was simply indifferent!

As for his response, it seemed to infuriate the thing down below. In an instant, the chain echoed with a crash, bringing Bloodblade to fly into the shadow at a speed several times greater than in the past!

“Save me! Young friends!! Save me! SAVE, THIS THRONE!!! Save...”

The chain came from the shadow, linked to the top of the Heavenmend Stone. And yet Bloodblade was pulled close to the shadow at lightning speed! At this moment, Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed. He stepped forward, nimble as a monkey! In the blink of an eye, his speed attained the pinnacle of that he was capable of!

Ding! A brittle sound echoed!

The Heavenmend Stone had been steadily caught in his hand. As for his other hand, it was holding a little chest.

The Animus Armament had unexpectedly sundered the chain, however, he didn’t save Bloodblade. Instead, he merely chopped off the part of the chain connected to the Heavenmend Stone and grabbed on to it. In a second, the look in Bloodblade’s eyes changed from pleasant surprise, to alarm, and then bitter resentment. His voice grunted to a halt.

Like so, Bloodblade was towed in by the chain without a further sound.

The situation was too strange. To the extent that Xu Yangyi’s hand gripping the Heavenmend Stone actually hadn’t incurred everyone else’s attacks.

Silence. After a few seconds, Ye Old Four regained his wits. His gaze was fiery as he looked at Xu Yangyi: “Fellow Daoist Xu, you...”

He didn’t finish speaking.

Because... at this time... the entire earth started to boom with a rumbling!

Swish swish swish... All the wilted leaves were shook flying in disarray. It was like a level-four-or-five earthquake had violently broke out in this limitless space!

No one stood up straight. At this juncture, nobody was in the mood to pay any further attention to the Heavenmend Stone. On the contrary, they looked under their feet in shock. The entire space had almost fallen apart from the earthquake!

“It’s too late...” Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply and tightly grabbed onto Fang Cheng: “It... has already awakened.”

Before his voice even fell, all the light dots on the surface of the two hard shells in his and Sister Nine’s hands released a dazzling radiance. At the same time, nine light pillars shined upwards from the earth, indistinguishable from first or last! They lead straight to the horizon!

BUUUZZZ! The entire night was dyed by three colors: white, azure, and blue. As these light pillars brightened, the box in Xu Yangyi’s hand began to frantically vibrate!

Xu Yangyi’s hand wasn’t using force, but it... brought Xu Yangyi’s finger towards a place!

It... was the very first thing Xu Yangyi had seen, the place where the giant white entity was located!

“Fang Cheng!” As the earth quaked, Xu Yangyi turned his head back and gritted his teeth: “Take everyone and leave this place!”

“What about you?!” Fang Cheng asked worriedly.

Xu Yangyi paused: “I still have something I must do.”

“Junior brother!” Fang Cheng was itching to slap Xu Yangyi: “Are destinies important or is life important?!”

“You don’t understand...” Xu Yangyi was silent for a few seconds, and a trace of unyielding resolve was revealed in his gaze: “There’s something... I NEED to clearly understand.”

“GO!!!” He kicked fiercely, knocking Fang Cheng away. As for him, he consumed all of his power and dashed towards the white object that he had initially saw!

The earthquake... was progressively becoming greater!

If said the earthquake was still only a level four or five moments ago, now, it had already reached level seven or even eight!

“Fuck!” Sister Nine shouted angrily. Both her feet gently tapped on the ground, and her hair divided into several parts. Each section swept up a person of the Ming Clan. On her back, two butterfly-like wings shockingly grew out! She forcibly dragged her clansmen and flew up four to five meters apart from the earth!

However, in the next second, her complexion changed.

Crash... The ground tore open with fissures. As for these fissures, countless streams madly rushed out like a tsunami! BOOM! A loud echo reverberated throughout the entire space. Countless water pillars, several tens of meters to even up to a hundred meters in thickness, suddenly charged out! They scattered in the sky and formed a terrible rainstorm!

It wasn't just one... but several tens! A hundred! Even a thousand! As if this place was going to transform into an ocean in an instant!

[1] “Three Suns Open Tai” This move is based off a Chinese phrase related to the Eight Trigrams. The phrase describes the coming and going of the sun; spring comes and winter leaves. The “three suns” is based on the idea of when the sun comes and goes with the seasons. I deliberated how to translate “Tai”, but decided to leave it as is. In Chinese, there is a level that goes over the Eight Trigrams called the Sixty-Four Hexagrams, which involve the eight trigrams times themselves to produce sixty-four charts. “Tai” is known as the “Pervading” hexagram.

Chapter 218: Danxia Temple (37)

Noah's ark and the flood that drowned the world. At this moment, in this space, there was such a scene. As for the soil and dry land, it transformed into one chunk at a speed visible to the naked eye. After transforming into a lonely island, it ultimately disappeared within the boundless flood.

“My god...” Yi Old Five and the Yi Clan's people sat on top of a flying canary puppet. They looked at the landscape below, their eyes wide and mouth foolish: “This is... Gongong smashing Buzhou Mountain, huh...” [\[1\]](#)

“Amitabha...” Fahui chanted. The rosary beads he was fiddling with suddenly all broke apart. He watched the scattered rosary beads that fell over his body, closing his eyes and laughing wryly: “Buddha above... protect this disciple's party today so that we can escape and live for another day...”

“I saw it... I saw it... Down below... there is an unspeakable creature hidden...”

The area below had long since transformed into a vast body of water. They were even unable to believe that several tens of minutes ago, they were still standing on land!

Xu Yangyi rigidly gritted his teeth and flew towards the place that the Animus Armament was pointing at with his full power! He knew much more than everyone else! Thus, he roughly guessed what this was.

This... was the lotus sea! Or perhaps it should be said that this was the true lotus sea! Lotus leaf after lotus leaf seemed to come alive as they were soaked in the water and gracefully grew out from underwater. Growing at a speed unable to be clearly observed, they bloomed. In less than ten minutes, the entire water's surface had truly been reconstructed to several years ago, the appearance of when Xu Yangyi had come here!

It was exactly the same!

Xu Yangyi's hand was clenched deathly tight. This was the place... This was the place! He had returned here in his dreams countless times. In this place, he had lost three years. As he gazed upon the withered lotus sea, he only felt that this was a chance that this place was related with the true lotus sea. Nonetheless, he hadn't expected that THIS was indeed the lotus sea!

This was because three years absolutely wasn't enough time to cause the lotus sea's water to dry up. It... was truly endless like an ocean! However, the lotus sea remained but was hidden underground!

"If that's the case, what is the Heavemend Stone's chain?" Right now, he couldn't look after anyone else. This place... was too big! At the moment, he was sitting on top of the Chasing Skylark that Ancestor Ancientpine had bestowed to him. This magik artifact's speed really was ridiculously fast! However, in less than an hour, this area had changed entirely! There was essentially no way to go searching!

From what he saw here in the night, lotus flowers were budding. Lotus leaves touched the sky and ripples reflected jade. There was no end that could be seen in sight. He could only pray that Fang Cheng and the rest had left safely. As for him... the distance from the white entity was already getting closer and closer!

At this time, he felt his body sink without warning. Immediately, the Chasing Skylark seemed to lose its supply of spiritual force and plunged into the water.

"Sky Forbiddance Seal?" Xu Yangyi was stunned for a second but quickly reacted. At the same time he fell into the water, he aroused the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus without the slightest hesitation!

Boom! A ring of platinum fire formed a giant vortex in the water. This was his instinctual reaction, regardless of whether or not there was danger! Besides... the lotus sea had already appeared...

Where did the underground lead to? To be capable of containing so much water! It was also bound... to be capable of holding that giant fish!

Passing through the alligator gars and the livyatan, he had a feeling. That this place... had perhaps long since been reformed into a strange ecosphere by the other!

Without any pause, he jumped into the water. He quickly swam towards a lotus leaf. It was the same as in his “dream”; the lotus leaf as massive as ever, still so tough. As soon as he climbed onto the water’s surface, he carefully looked. On the surface, there were already countless fishes flipped over on their stomachs.

“Fish?” His gaze chilled. He clearly remembered that there hadn’t been a single fish in the water last time! He waved his hand and a fish, one that had already turned over on its stomach, flew into his hand. Entering his hand, it was rather satiny, absent of the slightest scale! Just as he turned it over, his gaze immediately flashed.

This fish... had a woman’s face!

“This is a scarlet cod.” A woman’s voice was suddenly heard from behind him. Devoid of any hesitation, Xu Yangyi’s hand chopped down behind with Severing Dragon Typhoon, but was blocked by the other. [\[2\]](#)

“What? In this kind of situation, shouldn’t you be happy to see a friend?”

“How did you get here?” Xu Yangyi took the fish and flung it into the water. He turned around and studied the woman: “I remember I didn’t see one person along the side of my path. Isn’t that so? Sister Nine?”

The reason why he didn’t continue striking was because he saw other people. Everyone was here... This place seemed to be the heart of this lotus sea. Although each person was drenched from

head to toe, they weren't in any strange condition. On the contrary, some were shaking incessantly as they gazed all around.

“If I said...” Sister Nine paused: “We don't know as well, would you believe me?”

Xu Yangyi looked into her eyes for a few seconds and nodded. Not saying anything, he jumped over to the lotus leaf where the Xingtian Legion was located.

Sister Nine mumbled to herself for a brief moment and also followed. Xu Yangyi merely glanced at her and didn't say more.

The present scene was rather silent. Each person was sizing up the surroundings. The changes were too strange. In a twinkling, sweet rain had been born to a land in drought. In the blink of an eye, mulberry fields had transformed into azure seas. Absolutely everything rendered them incredulous.

“Are you guys alright?” Watching everyone gauge their surroundings with astonishment, he asked quietly.

There was no immediate answer. After a short moment passed, Zhan Twelve nodded: “Fine. We don't know what happened. After we entered the water, we all sunk down for a while. As soon as we climbed out of the water, we were already here.”

Spatial divine ability... Xu Yangyi inwardly clenched his fist. He was certain, very certain, that in this place... there was undoubtedly a living cultivator! No matter whether it was a human or demon cultivator!

All secrets... were hidden in this lotus sea. The “I” in “save me, I'm at the bottom of Danxia Temple”. The Animus Armament's secret. The tremendous fish's secret. Without noticing, they... seemed to have found the key to opening Danxia Temple's final secret. Among a thousand, only twenty-plus people remained. They reticently sat on top of lotus leaves.

Each person was sitting on top of a lotus leaf and meditating. The

consumption of spiritual force from the chaotic battle in the past and the spatial alterations afterwards were both neither minor affairs. At this moment, before Danxia Temple revealed its final secret, everyone had to make absolute preparations.

After an unknown passage of time, Xu Yangyi opened his eyes. He was still in his original position, but at his side, there wasn't a person of the Xingtian Legion but instead a woman who was seated.

Sister Nine!

"It can be said that not even the transformation of blue seas into mulberry fields can surpass this." Sister Nine said faintly and watched him open his eyes. She faintly smiled and her hand arranged her elegant hair in passing.

Xu Yangyi looked at the sky. It was still night, still a formation. "I've been meditating for about eight hours." He mumbled: "Has something happened?"

"Of course something's happened..." Sister Nine stowed her gaze: "But I think we better chat first."

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. Sister Nine was also silent, seemingly considering something. Eventually, she gritted her teeth and said softly: "I think... we seem to have opened a seal."

"Oh?" Xu Yangyi didn't express an opinion. He faced down, his eyes watching his nose, and his nose watching his heart.

"There's quite the possibility..." Sister Nine gritted her teeth. Her back facing everyone else, she took out the hard shell: "That this is the shell of some unknown creature... There are ten dots on its surface. It should be the locations of the ten seals. However, if one of these ten regions are opened, it might undo this seal. And in this secret realm, there is a living creature..."

Not waiting for Xu Yangyi speak, she continued to follow up: "There certainly is... Otherwise, Bloodblade's death doesn't make sense. I've heard about the Exorcism Godstone in the past. It locks

down a demon's qi sea. In other words, this chain HAS to be shackled on a demon..." Speaking to this point, she shivered coldly: "I have a theory..."

Xu Yangyi nodded: "I'd like to hear the details."

Sister Nine inhaled heavily: "This place... might be sealing some disastrous thing, but its been too long. So long that the seal weakened, and It still hasn't died. As a result, It was able to make Its demonic qi leak out to some places... like the chain passing on to the surface from where it locks onto the body?"

"Consequently, It started the long operation of escaping from this prison. It took some heavenly treasures and locked them together with the Exorcism Godstone chain then tried to get the shell in our hands. That's to say that the 'hidden treasure map' for this place was revealed, intentionally or otherwise..."

"And in case a cultivator obtained this hidden treasure map, they would surely come searching for treasures. As we looked for treasure, we would immediately discover these extremely rare treasures. It's no understatement to even say that they're peerless items. Like the Heavenmend Stone. I believe that the treasures sealed in the other locations aren't below the Heavenmend Stone at all!"

"Now that I mention it..." She said faintly: "The Heavenmend Stone ended up falling in your hands, right?"

Xu Yangyi laughed indifferently: "Come and snatch it with all you got."

Sister Nine narrowed her eyes and looked at him for a while. She sneered: "Now's still not the time... Alright, I'll continue talking. As for these seals, as long as a single one is undone, this sealed creature might be making a run for it already. In other words..."

"We're on top of that terrible thing's back." Xu Yangyi serenely answered.

Sister Nine studied his face for several seconds and then nodded: “Exactly.”

“In that case...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze looked towards the scene: “What is It waiting for?”

“As soon as It escaped from the trap, It should’ve faced upwards and shouted. Why is It so quiet?”

“This is the matter I want to speak about... Fellow Daoist Xu, only you know and I know about what was just said. As for these next words, Fahui will find out in a few hours.” Sister Nine took a deep breath, her gaze looking towards the enormous white object: “Do you know... what that is?”

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes and looked for a couple seconds. He shook his head: “It’s too big. It’s hard to get a full picture.”

“This is a fish molt.” As Sister Nine spoke these words, her body somewhat trembled: “It’s 4,833 meters long... 673 meters wide. I’ve never even heard of a fish that could molt! Once It molts, this only represents that It’s in a kind of state!”

Xu Yangyi’s face also grew serious, and he said deeply: “Evolution.”

“That’s right... The carp that leaps over the Dragon’s Gate HAS to molt! That’s not mentioning that I practically can’t even imagine a demon form over 4,800 meters! If It’s being sealed underground... what realm is it?! It’s no exaggeration to call It a demon god!”

[1] Gonggong is a Chinese water god. Said to have red hair and a dragon or serpent’s tail. He plays a pivotal role of wrecking the pillars that support heaven after losing in a fight with another god. This causes Nuwa to repair the heavens, but she is only able to fix it a little bit. In this situation, this line is a play on the world falling apart, but also a throwback to the fact that Xu Yangyi severed the Heavenmend Stone—the stone that Nuwa allegedly uses to repair

the heavens.

[2] The scarlet cod is a fish in Chinese legend. It has the face of a person, but the body of a fish. Like a mermaid, but worst. If you want to see an image, look up: 赤鯮

Chapter 219: Danxia Temple (38)

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. In fact, he knew even more than Sister Nine.

Fish molt... He breathed in deeply a few times and looked towards the mountain-like thing. So it's you... The giant thousand-meter demon that I once caught a glimpse of... was you... In the end, you were at the bottom of the lotus sea?

He wordlessly stood up and walked towards the small white mountain.

"Has anyone gone under the water?" Xu Yangyi asked quietly and Sister Nine followed.

"Who would dare to?" Sister Nine answered, her expression motionless: "The situation is unclear. I may have thought up of these things, but the others might've not. Besides, the sects of Daoism and Buddhism have existed in the world for over 2,000 years... Perhaps they know even more than what I've guessed."

This region was very strange. All around there were boundless leaves and bobbing lotuses, but only in this place... an area close to 5,000 meters long and 700 meters wide, there wasn't a single lotus flower or leaf. There was only a stretch of jade ripples as far as the eye could see.

As if... this place was Danxia Temple's nexus.

Xu Yangyi walked over to the nearest lotus leaf. Over yonder, there were people sitting down. Greenwall's Three Swords, Fahui, Ye Old Four, Yi Old Five, and the leaders of the remaining powers were present.

He didn't speak. Instead, from here, he seemed to stand at the foot of a giant, as if he was looking up at Mount Everest!

Extreme largeness and smallness constructed an even more supreme shock in this place!

Unseen was Its length or Its width. Neither was Its tail or Its dorsal fin visible... In all places that entered the eye, there were only pale fish scales, unclear as to how thick they were. Packed together and filling the area, they brought an immense impact to one's sight!

Upon seeing Xu Yangyi come over, nobody said anything. Right now, no one had the effort to ask again about the issue of the Heavenmend Stone. Danxia Temple's unusual transformations and this giant fish molt pushed down on each person's heart like a great mountain, exceptionally heavy.

The presence of fish molt represented... that a demon existed. It was connected to that chain. No one was an idiot about the worldly transformations moments ago. Everyone had thought up of these matters.

"Master Fahui, what do you know about this fish molt?" Xu Yangyi asked lowly and looked at the fish molt.

"The Buddhist Sect has a secret art. It's known as Bodhisattva Opens Eye." Fahui faintly nodded at him: "This technique allows this poor monk to observe within a distance of 10,000 meters for several seconds."

Xu Yangyi mumbled to himself as he looked at the large white mountain: "Can the molting time be determined?"

"No." Fahui sighed: "But it's at least three centuries."

Xu Yangyi nodded and studied the enormous fish molt. In his heart, a bizarre sensation suddenly arose.

Something's wrong... His brows began to furrow. Wrong... Inevitably, something was overlooked... A very important matter... He focused his mind and pondered for ages. Without warning, his eyes shined, and his body nimbly rushed straight at the giant fish molt!

Yes... at last, he had discovered something was wrong!

How was this fish molt floating on the water?! It absolutely wasn't sealed up. It was no understatement that such a heavy fish molt was hundreds of thousands of kilograms! From a fish's mouth, the water that flowed into a fish's gills simply couldn't turn a fish molt into a ship!

Watching his body vault over, everyone's gazes flashed, but they didn't say a word. In this kind of time, there was nothing better than a daring vanguard.

Xu Yangyi jumped to the fish molt's peak. Without any hesitation, he shockingly clenched Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron in his fist and fiercely battered downwards!

Boom... The sound echoed just like a bell chime. It was very light and passed away in the blink of an eye. His gaze flashed. This fish molt was solid to a dreadful realm! In the Qi Condensation realm, his Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron was virtually triumphant no matter the task. But right now, not even a white scar was left behind! That furthermore wasn't to mention making this fish molt shake!

"Some of you, come up." He faced towards the faction leaders on the lotus leaf and lifted up his chin: "I'm not enough by myself."

"What do you want to do?" Ye Old Four knitted his brows: "Even if this fish molt has already been here for a couple hundred years, there's no way that we can pierce through it by relying on our strength. Its existence has already surpassed a magik treasure. I even suspect that it can directly pressure a spirit treasure. If you want to look inside, you can only get in through the mouth. But..." He laughed mockingly: "Do you dare to go under water?"

Xu Yangyi laughed even more scornfully: "We don't need to punch through at all. Just now, I was only trying the fish molt's level of hardness. The quality of its hardness far exceeds my imagination. But hasn't anyone thought about how much this hardness compares to this weight..."

Before Xu Yangyi's voice even fell, Fahui had already stood up. He took a deep breath: "Benefactor Xu is saying... how is it floating on the water?"

A line caused everyone to stand up in alarm! A single verse jolted people out of their dreams! Before, everyone was paying attention to the fish molt. However, no one had thought about how such a heavy object was floating on the water!

There was only one explanation...

Down below... there was something... supporting it... Supporting this giant mountain to float on the water! The heart of the lotus sea!

"Huff..." Sister Nine gasped coldly. She immediately looked towards her foot and couldn't help but to fall back by two steps. Below her feet... there was something supporting this giant mountain of a fish molt...

Silent dread rapidly spread throughout the scene. Each person looked underfoot with terrible vigilance. It was like some monster would suddenly jump out from below the endless waters in the night!

Silence. A silence like that of death. After five minutes passed, Fahui said with a solemn face: "I will help benefactor with the power of my one arm."

As soon as his voice fell, he jumped into empty sky. Surprisingly, a white lotus floated into view from underneath his foot. He stepped on white lotuses to walk to the fish molt and gravely looked at everyone: "Benefactors, we have been trapped in Danxia Temple's bottom today. Only by finding a way out can we leave. The Transference Formation that we arrived from has already been destroyed underwater. We must not let any sliver of an opportunity go."

"So it is..." Sister Nine gritted her teeth and vaulted straight up.

At her side, Yi Old Five and Ye Old Four shared a glance. Not saying a word, they pursed their lips and also jumped up.

Although they all held their own thoughts, they understood more clearly than ordinary people that this was a question of principle.

Xu Yangyi's entire bodily spiritual force revolved. His fist radiated about a foot of red light. Already, Sister Nine stood on her corpse puppet and used some unknown secret technique. The corpse puppet's entire body strangely withered up, but its right fist exploded over five times in size! It was emitting rays of black light.

Yi Old Five opened his mouth and spat out a small hammer. Facing the wind and blurring, it swelled up to around 1.5 meters in a flash. Ye Old Four cautiously took out a dried-up yellow branch and formed a Dao-seal. The branch gave off slivers of dim light.

"Get ready..." Xu Yangyi was finished speaking softly and suddenly raised his voice: "Strike!"

Boom! Everyone's divine abilities bombarded the fish molt. This time, there was a droning sound. It was still like a bell chime, but it was deep and drawn-out. The sound jolted the vast sky! Under everyone's full-powered bombardment, the entire fish molt was gently stomped down. With it as the center, an immense ripple took shape.

Crash... Wave upon wave spread out, and the countless lotuses swayed. It was in this moment that everyone's pupils needed!

A black shadow horrifyingly swam out from under the fish molt... Soon afterwards... there were ten shadows and then a hundred... which turned into thousands! A hundred thousand! A million! These countless shadows were simply infinite like flies swarming a corpse in summertime! They disperse all around to the four sides and eight directions!

"These..." Xu Yangyi observed each shadow with rapt attention: "Are fish!"

Yes, fish. They were presently standing on the large white mountain and gazing at the fringes that were several thousands of meters away. An endless horde of fish were madly swimming away!

“These fish... were supporting this fish molt?” Ye Old Four looked at his surroundings in amazement. Because of the immeasurable number of fish, the water’s surface had now become black!

The scene was too bizarre... Cast off at least several centuries ago, the fish molt had surprisingly been densely surrounded and protected by millions of fish here! In this situation and scenery, perhaps if there were claustrophobic cultivators present, they would be scared out of their wits!

None of them whatsoever, including Xu Yangyi, dared to exhale. This was also their first time seeing so much fish, a level similar to leeches in a tropical jungle! With this amount... a person in the water would possibly be run over by these million fishes while still alive!

Below their feet, and even on the lotus leaves below, they felt great billows rising up and down. These waves were created by the incalculable number of fishes dispersing all around, close to the water’s surface. No one made a sound. Everyone fixed their eyes underfoot.

At the same time, a creaking noise was heard from the entire mountain-like fish molt.

“What’s this sound?” Yi Old Five furrowed his brows and called attention to this grinding: “Everyone, did you hear that?”

He didn’t need to ask again, because in the next second, the creaking noise was everywhere! It spread all throughout the fish molt!

Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed. His spiritual sense was more powerful

than the others. He was the first to “see”. On the fish molt’s body, a fish scale faded away. Its disappearance was rather orderly. Just like... it was falling off from its original place. He was without a second word, the first to dash towards a lotus leaf!

The second to come to a realization was Fahui. He gasped coldly: “Go! This fish molt is falling apart! It was being propped up by the fish at the water’s surface! It seemed intact, but it broke apart long ago! Were it not for the fish propping it up, it would’ve sunk to the seabed earlier!”

Before his voice even fell, a cracking sound followed. Not too far away from them, another fish scale fell off and exposed a pitch-black man-sized cave. Everyone didn’t say another word and left the fish molt with maximum power!

From gentleness, a crashing sound filled the entire sky! At the start, one fish scale fell off at a time, but soon afterwards, swaths dropped down! Like a tree emptied out by termites or a building removed of its backbone, fish scales were scared away. This giant fish molt, towering for several centuries, finally began to crumble.

Plunk... In an exposed section of water, fish scales fell down and smashed up several-meter-tall sprays. The giant white mountain was slowly collapsing. Everyone was already standing on a lotus leaf. They raised their heads and gazed forward, taking in this magnificent sight.

They were akin to tourists on a boat, and these large boats of lotus leaves traveled along the Three Gorges of the Yangtze. However, they watched a giant mountain fall apart in the surrounding, boulders slamming into the water. A great mountain crumbled into a little hill. A little hill crumbled into a mound. It grew smaller and smaller. Had they not seen it with their own eyes, none would be capable of believing that there had been a giant white mountain here moments ago.

However... at this time, everyone’s pupils suddenly needed! In

that place, the region where the fish molt had faded away into practically nothing, a black rectangle-shaped object shockingly appeared in the water!

“This is...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze flash, and his spiritual sense completely erupted.

He clearly saw. But it was because he saw so clearly that he almost dared not believe in his own eyes!

It... was bronze coffin!

Bound by ten chains in the water, a coffin was concealed in the fish molt! At this very moment, it slowly sunk underwater!

“Huff...” Xu Yangyi breathed in deeply. The millennia-old bottom of Danxia Temple was actually concealing a timeless bronze coffin!

In the end, who was inside?

Was it... the “I” in “I am at the bottom of Danxia Temple”?

And who had buried this person here?

Chapter 220: Danxia Temple (39)

Crash... Following the fish molt's disappearance, everyone caught sight of the coffin hidden within the giant white mountain.

Swish! Xu Yangyi was simply without another thought. His hand swiped over his storage ring, and the Chasing Skylark answered his summons and came out. He stepped onto the artifact and suddenly charged towards the coffin!

In a flash, the skylark's speed was activated to the max! With a swoosh, all that remained on the ocean surface was a white scar and the ocean spray that surged up by over three meters on both sides!

"Pull the coffin!" His actions roused everyone! Ye Old Four shouted angrily. The millennium-old Danxia Temple... A hidden coffin in its belly... This coffin was bound to be concealing an absolute secret! There was no way that it could be allowed to continue sinking down like this!

It was also impossible... to let someone apart from himself touch it first!

Swoosh... His jeweled parasol silently appeared and swiftly unfurled. He flipped and jumped onto the parasol's surface. In an instant, the parasol stormed towards the coffin like lightning! It was like an arrow leaving a bow!

Everyone moved.

Fahui trod on white lotuses, yet his speed wasn't any slower than a magik artifact. For the first time, anxiety appeared on his ordinarily calm face. With a single step, he went beyond 300 to 400 meters, fast like arcing electricity!

Two butterfly-like wings grew out from Sister Nine's back. In her original position, she stored up power for three seconds. Soon after, she seemed to charge towards the coffin like a rocket. Even

the wind made a zooming sound from being pulled!

In a not too distant place, three cold stars twinkled. Green Wall's Three Swords stepped onto their flying swords, and their clothes whistled as they danced in the wind. They rushed towards the coffin at a speed no less inferior than everyone else's.

Xu Yangyi was in the lead. The bronze coffin... was getting progressively closer. He could even clearly see the coffin's specific appearance. On the surface, there were countless designs engraved. All of them used an ancient carving method. It was a mystery as to how long this coffin had laid here. Its bronze had already turned black.

Yet the more cautious he was, the more he felt something was wrong.

Wrong... These decorative runes were too familiar... He had once saw them. He was certain that he had...

The eidetic memory from the pill spirit was unleashed again. In his mind, he flitted across millions and millions of memories one by one. In the end, he froze over something.

"These..." He took a deep breath, incredible passion already in his eyes: "These decorative designs are the same style of the Emperor Armament that I have!"

In other words... they came from the same place! The Great Ming Imperial Palace... The interior of the Nine-Layered Forbidden City!

"Who... is buried inside the coffin? As expected, the emperor really did know about the cultivation world's existence! Otherwise, how could this coffin be stored here?"

At this moment, spiritual force exploded behind him with a rumble. Almost without a thought, he caused the Chasing Skylark to rise up several meters. A streak of violet qi flame precisely skimmed over his original position. Meanwhile, countless gold threads suddenly flew from behind. Like they possessed their own

intelligence, they wrapped around the coffin.

“Son of a bitch...” Xu Yangyi grinded his teeth and cursed. There wasn’t only one person with intentions towards this coffin. Presently, all chasers wanted to take this coffin into their pocket!

“Falling Moon!” Without the slightest hesitation, he moved to form a Dao-seal, and Falling Moon appeared in his hand again. The Ten Cardinals Red Lotus poured into Falling Moon, and he waved out and filled the sky with black flames. As if he was a demon god that walked out from hell, he chopped down towards these golden threads!

Snap snap snap! These golden strands made a sound like strings snapping. Sister Nine’s figure approached, and she swiped out with a claw as she gnashed her teeth furiously: “What are you doing!”

“Everyone is well aware of what I’m doing.” Xu Yangyi’s blade slashed at Sister Nine’s hand, and he sneered: “But what I want to ask is what does Fellow Daoist want to do?”

Boom boom boom! At the same time, three gentle sound entered everyone’s ears. Instantly, three silver chains, carved all over with talismans, nailed into the coffin together. The three chains were seeped with a kind of desolate and simple aura. One end was linked to the coffin and the other side was connected inside sleeves. Following this sound, the faces of Greenwall’s Three Swords were elated, and they shouted: “Up!”

However, the coffin didn’t budge by a hair!

“Amitabha...” At this time, Fahui also arrived in front of the coffin. His speed was exceptionally fast! To the extent if one looked behind, they would see a series of his afterimages left behind in the sky!

“Sumeru’s Solitary Steps!” Qing Jingzi gasped coldly: “Which... famous temple’s Buddha Child is he? To actually comprehend this divine ability?” [\[1\]](#)

Fahui's came too quickly and suddenly. No one had reacted. It seemed as if he was still several hundred meters away from Xu Yangyi and Sister Nine's approaching fight, but in the next second, he was standing in front of the duo. Yet at this time... everyone was only paying attention to Xu Yangyi and Sister Nine. Basically no one had expected that he would arrive so swiftly! Even now, he was drawing near to Foundation Establishment speed!

Fahui had already tossed away his khakkara at an unknown time. His lone arm pulled out a sack, and the sack's mouth directly faced the coffin. He shouted loudly: "RECEIVE!"

"A Universe Pouch?" Qing Jingzi's gaze chilled. He opened his mouth and spat out. A silver core suddenly leaped out and shot towards the Universe Pouch like lightning. Amidst its flight, it shockingly carried a sliver-white sword qi.

"Senior brother, help me!" Not one to forget himself, Fahui roared. All of a sudden, a human shadow materialized from the void. Exceeding no more than half a second, a man, his entire body like ancient copper, appeared in front of him.

Swish! The sword qi carried a rain of blood that stretched over the entire sky. The copper man bellowed, and all his muscles swelled. His entire body had been chopped and sent flying. Nonetheless, the sword core was forcibly stuck in his abdomen. Although the look in the copper man's eyes was already becoming increasingly slack, the sword core didn't fly out again.

Fahui's gaze carried a wisp of emotion. His lone arm frantically formed a seal, and the earthen-yellow sack appeared to immediately swell with wind! It shuddered incessantly!

Crash... The chains surrounding the bronze coffin made a cracking noise from being sucked on. Unexpectedly, they floated up from underwater to the water's surface. Not a starting point appeared, but all that was visible were their ends. Each part exposed on the water's surface was no less than several hundred

meters long! Only the Universe Pouch's attractive power was seen.

In this spark of flint, Fahui sensed a wave of terrible spiritual sense target him from behind. It beared an infinite murderous aura. His smooth forehead suddenly broke into a cold sweat, however, he watched the chain being sucked in as it made jangling noises in front. Surprisingly, he didn't dodge!

"Ten Cardinals Red Lotus!" Xu Yangyi didn't hesitate at all. He simply couldn't permit anyone to gain this object! Falling Moon targeted Fahui's neck and directly sliced down! In the air, it brought forth a several-meter-long black flame.

"So I have heard..." Fahui rigidly gritted his teeth. Following the opening of his mouth, a golden lotus grew out from the crown of his head and swayed gently: "... The Golden Immortal comes into being. Straight to the lands of Tathagata. Mercy spares all living creatures in crossing to the other shore. Who can compare in the extremes of rigor and wonder..." [\[2\]](#)

The golden lotus faced the wind and blurred, shocking in full bloom! Yet at this moment, Xu Yangyi's Falling Moon was slashing down!

Crack crack crack! Ahead, the coffin's echoing was gradually becoming more fierce! From his mouth, Fahui chanted sutras at a dizzying pace. The golden lotus bloomed magnificently and precisely rested under Xu Yangyi's blade that was hacking down!

In front of Danxia Temple's suspected final secret, the Buddha Sect, which hadn't made a move all along, finally came out with their true strength! The timing was supreme and unparalleled. A second more and Fahui would've wasted the time to collect the coffin. A second less. and Falling Moon would've reached his neck and he would've had the same end as Nangong Xiaoran.

"Pretty." Xu Yangyi swooshed underfoot, and the Chasing Skylark soared again. In the sky, all that remained was his bright laughter: "But you can't block this blade!"

Fahui's expression was motionless. All of a sudden, his spiritual sense wildly shook. Everyone could see that the lotus flower sprouted on top of his head had actually been cleaved and a petal had fallen!

Falling Moon was bound to strike target. Although it had passed through layer upon layer of Fahui's defenses and had its might was reduced, it was still able to hit target!

In the next second, Fahui's pupils needed. An arrow of blood violently sprinkled in the air! His only remaining arm was unexpectedly drooping.

Xu Yangyi seemed to take aim at the head with this strike, but in reality, he had targeted Fahui's arm. So long as the Universe Pouch's collection was stopped, he had enough of an opportunity to take the coffin and run!

In the sky, the Chasing Skylark cut a small loop with the help of its remaining power. Afterwards, it charged straight at the coffin with a whistling sound! A domain of striking black flame was already burning again!

"Amitabha..." Fahui's expression was incomparably unsightly. He absolutely couldn't use Sumeru's Solitary Steps without the grasping of his fingers. Even he could only use it twice in a day! It was a divine ability that all speed in the Qi Condensation realm! Moments ago, Xu Yangyi was the first arrive and Sister Nine's hair was the first to near from behind. Everyone else was behind them. However, Sister Nine took the initiative to fire back and staked a hand against Xu Yangyi. Ahead, the two of them were mutually vigilant, and behind, the group of heroes had yet to arrive. He then ruthlessly used this divine ability.

Unexpectedly... Falling Moon's devilishness has surpassed his imagination! In a time he hadn't expected by any means, his arm had surprisingly been slashed! His injuries weren't heavy, but his golden opportunity had already been missed!

He was in no way willing to come out with the last use of Sumeru's Solitary Steps under this kind of situation.

Sighing deeply in silence, he soon left. At the highest point was Xu Yangyi on the Chasing Skylark. At the middle altitude was Greenwall's Three Swords. Below was Sister Nine, Yi Old Five, and Ye Old Four. An expanse of treasure light suddenly exploded and rushed straight at the coffin!

Although their spiritual force had been restored quite a bit by several hours of meditation, fierce and repeated battles was a kind of torment to the mind. Everyone was terribly weary, but all of them had to advance now. There was no retreat!

"Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron..." Xu Yangyi's gaze was like a boulder. He stared fixedly at the very most center of the coffin. This time, not only was it the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus. Already, his left hand was slowly placed at his waist side, starting to store power.

However, at this time, his pupils shrunk without warning. With his fastest speed, he pressed down on the Chasing Skylark and used all of his strength to leave the coffin's vicinity!

The second to find out was Fahui. From the beginning, he had always been paying attention to Xu Yangyi who had obstructed him. Upon noticing that the other's movements were now unusual, he subconsciously looked straight towards the water. In an instant, he felt his limbs grow ice-cold. He chanted a long prayer, not daring to call out. With his full strength, he turned around and rushed towards a lotus leaf at the side.

The Chasing Skylark's speed wasn't inferior to Fahui's in any way. In a twinkling, it had madly rushed out by a thousand meters. However, Xu Yangyi didn't stop at all. On the contrary, he sped up and sped up again! Only until he left this region without lotuses and lotus leaves did he stop.

Upon reaching this moment, he took a deep breath and gravely

turned his head around to look.

The water's surface moved.

In the instant that the coffin emerged, the fishes that had just been startled away all came rushing towards the coffin like they were crazed! No less than a million, countless fishes simultaneously bubbled towards a place. In a flash... all the surrounding lotus leaves were rocking incessantly like a skiff on the ocean surface.

Rustle... In this place, there was no wind. Nonetheless, the surrounding lotus leaves in this present 5,000 meters of ocean seemed to be swept away like remaining clouds! Uneven shaking was felt from underfoot as if the world was trembling.

“This is...” It was only then that Sister Nine, Ye Old Four, Yi Old Five reacted and stared below the water in shock. With a glance, their souls departed from their mortal coils!

Under the bronze coffin... there were layers of fish, so black that the bottom couldn't be seen at all and so densely packed that it was hair-raising! An oppressive black domain within a radius of over 5,000 meters! Not even the water's color was clearly visible! All that could be seen was countless fish, heads at tails, and the black carpet that spread out on the water's surface!

Barely discernible... a few cracks passed through. One could see below the water... millions of fishes revolving, spinning, and protecting to form a fish pillar that was several tens of meters high! As if a black flower was displayed in the water! They stiffly propped up this bronze coffin!

So dense that not even wind could penetrate, they were boundless and unlimited.

Myriad fishes cupped the coffin!

[1] In Buddhism, there is a central mythical mountain known as “Mount Meru”. I decided to go with the sanskrit name “Sumeru”.

It is considered the center of the spiritual universe. Also featured in Jain, Buddhist, and Hindu legend/cosmology.

[2] From what I found, this entire line from Fahui is from South Song Poet Cai Shen (1088-1156). Just a poem about Buddhism. Tathagata is the name of Buddha, one of his many names.

Chapter 221: Danxia Temple (40)

Moments ago, the fishes had left the fish molt, yet now they returned again! No less than ten meters away from these fish, the trio distinctly felt a strong contrast similar to an ant and a giant tree!

Sister Nine, Ye Old Four, and Yi Old Five were like lonely skiffs without aid on the black ocean surface. They also resembled three white dots on an ink painting. At this moment, each person's sweat fell like rain. All around was inky blackness, so black that it caused their hearts to contract.

Crack... At this time, a slight noise caused everyone to cast their gazes forward.

It... was a sound coming from the coffin!

Creak creak creak... Immediately, a sound that could make the teeth chatter was heard from the coffin. It was the sound of friction after the rusting of bronze. A closed mechanical sound, so light that it couldn't be heard, echoed rhythmically. Whoosh whoosh... Two sounds rang out. A bronze lever carved with a dragon design silently shot out from inside the coffin.

Crack... Crack... Closely following, another three sounds and levels formed the appearance of a well gate and lifted up the coffin cover. At the same time, the coffin strangely stood up! Inside, a faintly discernible ash-black corpse qi suddenly wafted out like smoke.

Sister Nine's, Ye Old Four's, and Yi Old Five's expressions were extremely grave. At an unknown time, Sister Nine had already taken out a jade sculpture. On its surface, rings of azure brilliance shrouded her entire body. In his hand, Ye Old Four pinched a withered branch. On it, there was merely a single azure leaf that was radiating faint azure light. Likewise, it protected his entire body. Only Yi Old Five alone had actually transformed into a giant,

emitting golden rays from his entire body. In his left hand, he held a longblade, and in his right, he held a shield. It safely protected him.

Xu Yangyi's gaze focused on the gradually opening coffin. Could it be that because of the Universe Pouch's attractive force, it had lead the coffin to open?

Everything in front... was too bizarre. Who could've expected that in one of the Eight Great Deadlands, the bottom of Danxia Temple... was actually concealing a coffin?

Swoosh... In quiet silence, the coffin completely opened at long last. A human-looking corpse slowly appeared within.

"Gasp..." "Is... Is this a living or dead person?" "How is this possible..."

As the corpse was fully revealed, everyone coldly gasped.

It was an old man, very much old. He had a head full of white hair. It was combed extremely neatly, to the extent that his white hair was like white silk. An exceptional hair oil was smeared on the surface of his hair. Even after countless years had passed, his hair was still glossy like new.

He couldn't be considered thin or fat. Set in the modern day, it was the very ordinary appearance of an old man. Nonetheless, his skin was just like an infant's. On his jaw, there wasn't a single trace of hair.

Ordinary people didn't have hair were those who shaved, but at least the black stubble of a beard could be seen. However, he was different... he didn't have any at all. Not a speck of growth.

He wore a red long-gown. At his collar, one could see the white inner lining, and he wore a black high cap. Two golden tassels hung down from the sides of the high cap. His fingernails were somewhat long and presented a kind of strange dark-red color. A string of delicate jade was coiled at his waist, and an iron plate was

hanging from it.

Both of his hands were crossed over his chest, and his entire bearing was serene. It was like he was sleeping, simply unlike a dead man!

Silent, Sister Nine was wet with cold sweat as she gazed at the corpse. She dared not exhale.

After no less than a dozen minutes, they then began to quietly fall back step by step. However, Xu Yangyi and Fahui glanced at each other. The both of them sat on flying magik artifacts and stared cautiously, approaching the coffin by bit.

Everyone seated on a flying magik artifact came before the coffin. Fahui's gaze twinkled, and he suddenly flicked out a small fine stone. It revolved around the coffin several times, and he nodded towards the crowd: "This poor monk used a Sarira to investigate. This is indeed a corpse. There's no indication of life and moreover no qi fluctuations."

No one dared not be prudent.

In the land of the millennium-old Danxia Temple, a bronze coffin had suddenly emerged. It was unknown how many years the person buried within was separated by time. Unexpectedly, his countenance was bright like new!

Amidst silence, Xu Yangyi's hand beckoned and probingly used telekinesis. However, against everyone's expectations, there wasn't any obstruction. Xu Yangyi immediately attracted the iron plate at the corpse's waist.

Even he somewhat incredulous. However, he personally hadn't went and cautiously taken the item. Instead, he had the waist plate hang in the air. Everyone watched the waist plate come over with rapt attention. The three characters on the surface were still clear and striking despite the separation of countless years.

"Li... Jinzhong?" Qing Jingzi slightly furrowed his brows. A

person who could be buried at the bottom of Danxia Temple with such a strange method was in no way ordinary. However, he counted his memories yet didn't find this name of Li Jinzhong at all. He mumbled to himself as he turned his head and looked at the others who were several thousand meters away: "Who knows who Li Jinzhong is?"

"Li Jinzhong?! Fellow Daoist, did you say Li Jinzhong?!" Originally, there was no hope in someone knowing, but unexpectedly a startled cry echoed from behind. Xu Yangyi turned his head and glanced. He saw Zhao Wuye who was standing in place and flabbergasted. The latter's body was shaking!

"That's good." Xuan Chengzi's gaze flashed, and he immediately questioned: "Does Fellow Daoist know who this person is?"

Zhao Wuye's eyes were reddened. Without a second word, he used his fastest speed to jump off his lotus flower and climb onto a kite-shaped flying magik artifact. Razor swift, he arrived at the lotus leaf that Xu Yangyi was located. Like he was crazed, he pushed through the others—those of heaven's pride that he ordinarily dared not even glance at—yet at this moment, he appeared not to have seen them whatsoever. The present Zhao Wuye only had the corpse in his eyes.

He took the iron plate in Fahui's hand and looked at it a good few times. His eyes opened wider and wider, and his hands started to tremble. Afterwards, he studied the standing coffin as he breathed in heavily like an ox, panting incredulously.

"Nine Thousand Years..." After ages, he stuttered these three words out. His voice was trembling and filled with extreme shock and fright.

"Nine Thousand Years?" Sister Nine's brows tightly knitted together. This name was rather familiar. After half a second, her eyes shined, and she looked at the corpse even more incredulously: "Wei Zhongxian?!"

“You didn’t misread that?” Xuan Chengzi looked at the old man, who looked like he was sleeping, in shock: “THIS is Wei Zhongxian?”

This was fundamentally impossible! How could a mortal be buried in this kind of place?! How could he possibly enter?!

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak, yet his heart seemed to open up a bit, suddenly clear and bright!

The Ming dynasty... An era of devout Daoism. There were a good few emperors who had merely taken “immortal pills” and died. Immortal and mortal seemed to be forever separated, but... the Xuan-Yuan Sword had personally taken action and erased an emperor. However, this was never recorded in history! In the midst of this, a titanic secret was hidden!

But now, this corpse was surprisingly Wei Zhongxian... In Xu Yangyi’s hand, he was even holding onto the other half of the Animus Armament. As for himself... he was a person of the suspected master of the Animus Armament, the “One-Month Emperor” Ming Guangzong, who had lived from the Taichang era to the Tianqi era! [\[1\]](#)

Countless threads were bubbling towards the Tianqi period. Any one of these clues seemed to be vaguely telling the people of the world that during the Tianqi period, an absolutely disastrous event had occurred!

It truly wasn’t the Ming Palace Courtyard... but rather in the cultivation world... and the human world, a great matter had broke out in both! A genuine truth... that history was unable to record, even running counter to historical records!

“That’s right... this is Wei Zhongxian!” Zhao Wuye observed for very long and confirmed: “His attire... is the dress of a Ceremonial Overseer... If this still isn’t enough, please spread open the inner clothing at his neck, Fellow Daoists.”

Sister Nine's gaze flashed, and she gently waved her hand. A wind edge immediately sliced open the clothing on corpse's neck. There inside was an eye-catching red scar! This person... had died to beheading! Furthermore, his skull was then placed back afterwards!

“Wei Zhongxian hanged himself and was then dismembered by Emperor Tianqi, so there would be a distinct severing mark on his neck! If Fellow Daoists don't believe, you can pull at his four limbs; there should be other unusual marks!”

Ye Old Four murmured in silence. After several seconds, his hand flicked out several gales. Several swooshing noises rang out and the clothes at the corpse's shoulders and thighs were all ripped apart. Sure enough, four red scars clearly emerged on Wei Zhongxian's deathly pale body!

“It really is like that...” Ye Old Four inhaled deeply. He turned around, not wanting to look at the coffin, and sneered somewhat loathingly: “A scam. Someone actually placed a joined-together corpse here. One that's even a castrate.”

“Fellow Daoist.” Solemn-faced, Zhao Wuye said: “The high eunuchs of the Ming dynasty... weren't just anyone. They... were different from the hugh eunuchs of successive dynasties.”

“During the Ming dynasty, in order to help withstand the bureaucrats, the emperor granted the high eunuchs special privileges. It could be said that the emperor took these Ceremonial Overseers as first-level grandfathers. Any of them would be a great scholar or philosopher in the present age. Especially...” He glanced reverently at Wei Zhongxian's corpse: “This person... even held both positions of Minister of the East Yard and Minister of the West Yard. He wasn't comparable in any way to those illiterate high eunuchs that couldn't even recognize a T in the past... past... F-F-Fellow Daoist Ye?!”

Zhao Wuye's voice suddenly raised up high, and Ye Old Four

furrowed his brows: "What's up?"

He discovered that everyone was leaving far away from him at lightning speed! A situation had happened to his body!

No... Maybe... He looked at everyone in front of him, and they looked at him in silence and shock. The further they went away, he suddenly recalled something... He... had his back facing the coffin!

Don't tell me... All of a sudden, his throat ached fiercely. He couldn't even get out a word. His face became increasingly pale and even his teeth made a chattering sound. A rosy hand just like an infant's gently patted his shoulder. Ye Old Four's entire body trembled like sifting chaff. Little by little... he turned his head.

Behind him... he saw that the five sections of the dismembered corpse had all separated! From inside the corpse's body, rays of ink-like pure black qi pulled on its head, arms, and legs. As for its head, it was above Ye Old Four, spreading open its bloody maw!

It was still a human body, but the corpse's mouth opened wide to a freakish degree! The lower and upper jaws had completely come apart! Like how a snake devoured a creature several times greater than its mouth, the corpse chomped down!

KACHUNK! In an instant, Ye Old Four's skull deformed. Both of Wei Zhongxian's hands, towed by black qi, grabbed the still spasming body of Ye Old Four! One section at a time, it was delivered into Wei Zhongxian's mouth!

The scene was silent like a moratorium! All that could be heard was the heart-chilling sound of crunching bones. However, their silence wasn't truly due to Ye Old Four's death! Instead... at this instant, Wei Zhongxian's corpse had already completely indicated his realm!

The initial stage of Foundation Establishment!!!

Xu Yangyi was unable to remove his eyes from the view in front of him. He wasn't scared but rather excited! This was because he

had seen... He had seen very clearly!

The instant that corpse opened Its mouth, he saw... that It didn't have a tongue. Wei Zhongxian's tongue had been cut out. On his lower jaw... someone had forcibly welded in half of a chest!

The other half of the Animus Armament!

[1] Reminder: Ming Guangzong is the temple name of the Taichang Emperor. The Taichang in "Taichang era" is a reference to the Emperor's "Era Name". I think I once noted that emperors get a couple different names. Tianqi is the era name of Ming Guangzong's son. Tianqi means "Heavenly Opening". You will find this information important soon.

Chapter 222: Danxia Temple (41)

At this moment, the small half box on Xu Yangyi's chest suddenly began to tremble!

Buuuuzzz... On his chest, it vibrated incessantly. Even he could sense this "object's" delight. Xu Yangyi used his hand to firmly press down on his chest, and his gaze studied Wei Zhongxian gravely. The Animus Armament... had finally appeared! It was no wonder, no surprise that when the secret realm emerged, that throbbing had appeared in his heard. Now the crux of the matter was... what was he to do?

The upper half of the Animus Armament granted him endless advantages. It was also hiding an absolute secret. This was the reason he had to seize it. To know something was to furthermore know WHY it was. Why had this once-in-5,000-years object chosen him? If this riddle was left unsolved, he would always have a heart devil existing in his heart.

Crack... Crack... The corpse's five limbs were separated. Wei Zhongxian's head was no less than several meters away from his body. Like a puppet being pulled on, the five body parts seemed to use string to be hoisted up at the seams.

Thus... from the throat of Ye Old Four's corpse, blood drops spilled onto Wei Zhongxian's body below. This scene was terribly bloody.

The mighty pressure of initial-stage Foundation Establishment swept through everyone present. It was a completely different level of oppressive power that caused each person's sweat to pour out like broth. Their breathing started to become hurried and brief.

Even if this wasn't a living Foundation Establishment cultivator. Even if his strength was certainly inferior to the time when he was whole and intact. Nonetheless, Foundation Establishment was

Foundation Establishment! A completely preserved corpse held at least sixty to seventy percent of its might in its prime! And this sixty percent... was already enough to create a fatal thread to all the present cultivators!

However, it wasn't just this! Everyone was taking precautions with great focus. Xu Yangyi's gaze cruised, searching for all suitable opportunities! The best method was to directly knock the corpse down... and then take the spoils, seizing food from a tiger's mouth as everyone wasn't paying attention to this little box.

However, before his train of thought even finished, an indescribable, wild qi suddenly emerged on Wei Zhongxian's body as blood dyed his entire figure! Foundation Establishment was still Foundation Establishment, but that dreadful feeling in the mind was just like a Core Formation ancestor!

"Heavenly..." All of a sudden, the corpses two hands clasped together and formed seals at blinding speed. It was simply hard to believe that this was a corpse's speed!

"Opening..." Following the emergence of these two vague words, the entire space seemed to quake! Soon after... the heavens... opened. The talismans in the sky quickly became fuzzy without end. Even more strangely, stratas of black clouds appeared! Furthermore... in the cloud bank, a colossal creature was faintly visible!

"W-what is this..." All emotions were displayed on the face of a cultivator who had followed. If said this was a divine ability, it was impossible for it to emerge on the body of a Foundation Establishment cultivator! Even a Core Formation ancestor fell short in power!

As far as the eye could see, all that existed was a domain of black clouds! In the black clouds, there seemed to be something flitting across, a fleeting glance of a scaled claw. The entire view couldn't be clearly seen at all! It seemed like a dragon roaming through

clouds and spreading rains. Under the black clouds that it traveled, it was going to pour down a torrential rain here and now!

“First...” With the third word, the corpse’s voice was already becoming louder and louder. If said, this corpse’s indistinct voice from just at the start had now already transformed into layers of sound waves! Black cloud suddenly appeared in the surging sky! At the same time, nine screeches passed down from the black clouds!

It was by this word... that all the qi in this space completely erupted!

If said, qi was mild and gentle. In that case, this qi now seemed to transform into sharp swords, pressuring the sides of one’s body!

“Fuck me...” Yi Old Five was already dripping with cold sweat, unable to move... He clearly sensed that he was rendered immobile! It wasn’t that he couldn’t move but rather a kind of great unknown terror cloaked his entire body, mind, spiritual sense, and qi sea!

He knew what this was... It was called... intuition! In his mind, there was a voice warning him with the utmost effort to run! He HAD to run! Leave immediately! However, that sensation of terror condensed in the heart caused one to be unable to shift their feet at all!

Xu Yangyi tightly clenched his fists, qi already swimming out from his whole body! He sensed... even more! It... was a kind of heavy, inexplicable feeling... seemingly crossing over history’s long river to arrive here and directly face the darkness of men’s hearts!

“What the fuck is this thing?!”

It wasn’t a divine ability... at least not a Foundation Establishment cultivator’s divine ability! If a Foundation Establishment cultivator held such might, what did Core Formation masters even have to be scared of nuclear warheads!

This was a damn alteration of the heavens and conversion of the earth! How could it even be said that this was a divine ability?!

“Erosion...”

Swoosh... A wild squall blew up from Wei Zhongxian's position without warning! The wind blew everyone's clothing to fly in disarray.

This wasn't a vague wind, but the aura of hell. On all four sides, lotuses madly swayed. In the sky, black clouds surged and infinite rays of black light shined. It seemed like Judgement Day had come. The water's surface was also completely still. The fishes below cowered as they hid underwater. Even they sensed a great physiological dread.

“RUN!!!” Xu Yangyi was no longer willing to stay here! He was planning on how to plunder a morsel from the tiger's mouth, but the other had indeed taken the initiative to act. He bellowed and piloted the Chasing Skylark at full speed towards the Xingtian Legion's position!

At this very time and instant, the main task was surviving from the hand of this old Foundation Establishment monster, this move that could compare to a Core Formation divine ability! The Emperor Armament had to be obtained! Furthermore, both sides had to be united to activate its true secret. Nonetheless, one still needed to have a life to enjoy an even better Emperor Armament.

As if they had woken up from a dream, everyone was roused from this image of the apocalypse. Fahui didn't utter a second word. In one second he lifted up his leg, and in the next, he already dragged out a string of afterimages, leaving with lightning speed!

Sumeru's Solitary Steps! This time, he had used it without the slightest hesitation!

Sound seemed to pause. Xu Yangyi used the fastest speed to reach the lotus leaf that the Xingtian Legion was on. However, he

discovered that everyone was looking behind him in shock.

Swoosh... Swoosh... He didn't turn his head. At this moment, a deathly silent swooshing noise was made from this infinite lotus sea. Countless lotuses and lotus leaves faced his back and drifted. Rays of black qi wandered all around like vengeful spirits. In the area, they hissed sharply and roared, filling the endless space!

Hell's gate... was already opening little by little!

This... was a ranged-attack divine ability... Xu Yangyi painfully shut his eyes. As he opened them, he suddenly faced back and looked!

Currently, myriad rays of black qi lingered upon Wei Zhongxian's corpse! To the extent that not even he himself could be seen! As for this black qi, it formed a black qi vortex that reached straight up to the sky! This maelstrom was crying out and responding to the giant object in the clouds!

Yet for the first time, Wei Zhongxian extended his hand and gently pinched towards an unknown direction. A noise that seemed to stride over time sealed itself into everyone's minds!

“Devour... Bone...”

Heavenly Opening First Erosion—Devour Bone!

Meanwhile, the Animus Armament's lower half in his mouth radiated a heart-shaking golden light! It embraced Wei Zhongxian entirely inside! The light, divine and pure, was at two extremes with the gloomy corpse!

Rumble! The instant the fifth word emerged, the clouds in the sky... split apart. Its entire body shrouded in the black clouds, a giant nine-headed pheasant screeched down! Its size and height were a mystery; It was at least 200 meters! Moreover, Its facial features were indistinct! It was like the ox-headed demon and the horse-faced demon dispatched by hell to lead spirits. Its thundering arrived in the human realm!

“SKRAW!!!” The giant nine-headed pheasant released a screech, Its voice shaking the skies!

“This is... a divine ability anomaly...” Xuan Chengzi, Qing Jingzi, and Ling Xiaozi looked at the sky in astonishment.

Zhao Wuye’s entire face was incredulous: “How... How is this possible... even... the divine ability of a Nascent Soul Dao Lord isn’t possibly such a sight in the records! T-this is at least several hundred thousand square kilometers... This...”

Bang! Zhao Wuye choked on the next word in his mouth. This was because his entire body seemed not to have a single bone! He looked up at the sky and fell down! Startlement covered his entire face, and his heart was deathly ashen as he looked up at the sky: “Heavens... what... on earth... is this monster...”

Bang bang bang! At this instant... everyone’s bones throughout their whole body issued a crackling noise! Following heavy groans, all of them fell over on the ground!

Xu Yangyi rigidly gritted his teeth. A stabbing pain was felt from within his body. His bones... had disappeared!!!

Moments ago... he had clearly sensed a terrible attractive force. It seemed like a palm, pulling out bones from inside his body! All of this happened in merely a twinkling!

Until a moment ago, there was such a sensation and then it immediately vanished in the next second! Xu Yangyi could no longer feel his bones! The disappearance of bones wasn’t so simple. Without bones, a human was like soft mud, unable to be bonded and sealed at all!

In other words... this move exploited their power to use divine abilities! However... across every person, only he alone was now standing!

Fahui’s eyes rounded, and he looked at Xu Yangyi in disbelief. He and Greenwall’s Three Swords hadn’t fallen. In front of him, a

lotus lantern was emitting bean-sized motes of light. It enveloped him entirely in lantern embers. Apart from spitting out a great mouthful of blood, his hand was still forming seals at a swift pace!

Greenwall's Three Swords likewise had a lantern, but it was an ancient oil lamp. In the same vein, a mote of brilliance completely filled their positions and produced a fragrance. It safely protected the three of them!

Xu Yangyi looked at his hand in shock. It wasn't wrong... He was sure that he had sensed his bones vanish. However, there was something else inside his body that was supporting him! He clearly felt this thing. It wasn't bone but was even more solid than bone! Even more flexible than bone!

"This is... a Demonchariot Pheasant..." Zhao Wuye's aching face was wet with cold sweat. The pain brought by the sudden disappearance of his bones and the dread of a hand entering his body and removing each bones caused an extreme hideousness to appear on his face. However, in his hideousness, he seemed to recall... some matter... [\[1\]](#)

A matter... of great significance...

"Fellow Daoist Xu!" Zhao Wuye opened his mouth and a full mouth of blood jetted out. He spread open his reddened eyes: "Give me a blade... Hurry... Before I pass out, hand me a blade!"

"What's the reason?" Xu Yangyi gritted his teeth and said.

"This isn't a normal divine ability..." Perspiration like water trickled down from Zhao Wuye's forehead: "Fellow Daoist... Xu... this... divine ability... I-I h-have a little... doubt about it... in my memories... HURRY!!!"

Zhao Wuye began to shout out in madness. Xu Yangyi took a deep breath and took out a small blade from his storage ring without the slightest hesitation. He nailed it into Zhao Wuye's hand!

[1] Demonchariot Pheasant. This is another name of the Nine-

Headed Bird/Pheasant. You may remember that this is one of the Three Demons of Xuan Yuan. It is called chariot because the noise it makes at night as it flies is like a chariot.

Chapter 223: Danxia Temple (42)

“AAAHHH!!!” A mournful wail rang out. In ordinary times, it would’ve absolutely frightened one so that they couldn’t sleep at night in peace. But now, not a single billow was roused. This was because wretched cries rose and fell over and over in the surroundings!

Each person... was without bones. Even Yi Old Five wasn’t an exception. He fell to the ground and rolled about. Only the two great sects of Buddhism and Daoism protected their bodies. At this moment, the entire ground was filled with cultivators repeatedly screaming!

“You better hurry up and think of something.” Suddenly, a woman’s voice rang out: “Otherwise, all of us will die here.”

Xu Yangyi raised his head up and looked. Somewhat unexpectedly, the woman in front of him hadn’t been effected. However, understanding dawned on him in a wink.

Quan Ningyue had an innate Nine Yins Extreme bloodline. In order to save her, Grand Artificer Gao Muya had transformed half of her into mecharune puppet. Devour Bone didn’t have the slightest effect on her.

He nodded towards Quan Ningyue, and his gaze tightly locked onto Wei Zhongxian.

Amidst curling black qi, Wei Zhongxian seemed like a demon god of hell. However, what caused Xu Yangyi to take special note was Wei Zhongxian’s soaring black qi... It didn’t weaken by a sliver!

“Heavenly...” At this time, a voice like the Nine Nethers rang out again!

“Gasp...” Fahui suddenly lifted up his head and looked several thousand meters away in shock. Already in the air, Wei Zhongxian, whose five limbs were separated by no less than several tens of

meters, was floating!

There was more... There was actually still more!

His heart was a frigid expanse. Yes... just now had been the First Erosion. There was also a second... perhaps a third... or even... nine! Ten! Was he... capable of enduring?

“Buddha bless and protect me...” For the first time, his voice carried a shaking tone. He closed his eyes and the speed of his sutra chanting became faster and faster.

The faces of Greenwall’s Three Swords were like earth. Xuan Chengzi didn’t utter a second word, and a sword slashed open the artery of his left hand. Immediately, blood rushed forth like a fountain! Blood droplets entered the oil lamp, and the lantern fire became a shade brighter.

“Opening...”

Xu Yangyi breathed in deeply and loudly yelled without delay: “Fellow Daoists! What are you still waiting for?! Are you sitting here and waiting for death?!”

“Only the four of us can move here! Can you pull through?” With the gaze of a wolf, he turned his head and glared at the devil-god-like Wei Zhongxian who was floating in the air. He fiercely licked his lips: “Initial-stage Foundation Establishment... It’s only initial-stage Foundation Establishment! It’s not even really a living person! He’s the same as a machine! Just a real zombie! The hell is there to be scared of?!”

“C’mon, maybe we can still gamble on a path of survival...” His hand beckoned, and Falling Moon welcomed the wind and came forth. In a flash, the sky was filled with black flame. Xu Yangyi said lowly: “If we don’t go... death will be the only road!”

“Everyone.” He cupped his hands: “I’m going!”

The situation brought by this divine ability was clear in a flash. If he wanted to obtain the Animus Armament, not knocking down

Wei Zhongxian's corpse was simply impossible!

But the might of the other's divine ability... greatly transcended everyone's imaginations! It was unlike a Foundation Establishment cultivator's divine ability at all! Now... wasn't the time to desire the Animus Armament. Instead, if they didn't kill a bloody path out, there was a chance that all of them would meet their demise here!

Swoosh!!! Xu Yangyi's figure pulled an afterimage. Bearing limitless valor, he slashed directly at Wei Zhongxian's skull!

You've been dead already for several hundred years. I'll send you back again today!

"Second..." The third word had already been spat out. However, in this instant, it was completely different from the prior move! The surroundings began to turn completely cold! The air temperature was so low that it rendered one incredulous!

"Amitabha..." Xu Yangyi's swiftly darting silhouette was reflected in Fahui's eyes. Fahui closed his eyes, and as he opened them, his battle spirit was ignited again!

Yes... so it was. What kind of geniuses were they?! If they didn't fight and kill for a future, how could this path of cultivation be walked?!

This poor monk came to Danxia Temple fully aware. I know very well that you're a Foundation Establishment cultivator—an old ghost from centuries ago—how can I not slay you?

He hadn't expected that Xu Yangyi would attack with full power. Besides, surviving would further justify his heart tribulation. In this place, in Danxia Temple, his heart devil had to be resolved.

In case he slayed this corpse puppet of Wei Zhongxian, the only person who could help him succeed... was Xu Yangyi alone.

His voice yet to fall, Fahui's figure had already disappeared. In the next second, he was holding onto the lotus lantern in his

mouth, but his left hand took out a finger bone!

This finger bone emitted a Buddhist light that filled the sky. Golden talismans floated around its surroundings. Evidently, this was an almighty magik treasure that the Shaolin Temple had given to Fahui!

“Well said... Well said!” Ling Xiaozi’s eyes bursted with spirited light: “How can we sword cultivators lack a sword cultivator’s drive?! Evil devils are to be slain. Fiends are to be slain. Heart tribulations are also to be slain!” He slapped the crown of his head, and a golden sword core suddenly emerged. Body and sword united, transforming into a resplendent streak. It closely following Xu Yangyi and arced forward like electricity!

“To this day, I have thought myself to be Xiang Yu. I will NOT cross over to Jiangdong! If we can’t hold on against this divine ability, what meaning is there in even struggling at death’s door?!”

[\[1\]](#)

In the sky, six glorious sword-lights streaked across this world’s black clouds and charged straight at Wei Zhongxian who was several thousand meters away. Xu Yangyi took the lead. Behind was Fahui, Ling Xiaozi, Xuan Chengzi, and Qing Jingzi. Last was the middle-stage Qi Condensation Quan Ningyue!

Facing an old Foundation Establishment monster, able to flip his hand and exterminate a hundred Qi Condensation, five late-stage Qi Condensation and one middle-stage Qi Condensation, the two super sects’ disciples and an A-rank Legion, issued a direct challenge!

Six rays of spiritual light carried a relentless momentum. Arrows fired from a bow didn’t need to turn back. They burned away their paths of retreat, sinking boats and breaking cauldrons!

“Ten Cardinals Red Lotus... Azure Dragons Seeks Cauldron!” Xu Yangyi glared daggers at the demonic Wei Zhongxian who was in the air. Falling Moon in his right hand, an expanse of black flame

was born. His left hand radiated a thousand meters of red light.

Fahui bit into his lantern, and a holy golden-white color appeared on his lone arm's middle finger. Four vague and solemn words were gravely uttered from his mouth: "Finger's Snap Divine Might!!!"

The three sword cores of Greenwall's Three Swords converged into a golden ray. Voices brimming with a murderous aura were angrily shouted from the trio's mouths in unison! "Origin Returns To Genesis!!!"

Quan Ningyue's hands spread open again. Two heart-chilling blue glints brightened, and she gently shouted: "Spirit Extermination Cannon!!!"

Action had been taken without the slightest reservation. All of them killing moves! These were all their killing aces! A task accomplished in a single stroke! If they weren't successful, they would die valiantly!

They weren't fools that shouted out when they made a move. Instead... this time, there was only blood and heat in their hearts! This rallying cry was for their own proper names! To boost their own morale! Or perhaps... it was the battle cry that they left in the world.

These few people were even more understanding of Foundation Establishment's might than the bystanders! There wasn't one bit that could be guarded against.

Wei Zhongxian's corpse softly spoke the fourth word.

"Erosion..."

Buzz... The Animus Armament in his mouth released endless golden light again. Outside his body, it formed a strange defensive qi wall!

"Emperor Armament..." Xu Yangyi's gaze erupted. He stared fixedly at the Animus Armament in the other's mouth. No matter

why you're here, you have it. Only one can get out between the two of us today!

“Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron!” He bellowed, and Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron in his left hand transformed into a red light beam and shot out!

Boom! In this twinkling, the heavens and earth changed! In the sky, black clouds no longer surged. Instead... there were waves of great snow! Goose-feather-like stretches of great snow floated down, and the surrounding temperature... rapidly dropped!

Crack crack crack... Even the atmosphere seemed to turn into cold ice! In the sky filled with great snow, Wei Zhongxian's corpse was towed by black qi. Behind his head that was far away from his body, endless black light suddenly erupted!

“This... is a Buddha wheel?!” Fahui's eyes sharpened. How could this be... A Buddhist cultivator cultivated the wheel. He had never seen a Buddha wheel emerge on any Buddhist cultivator, but one had actually appeared on this fiend!

“Amitabha...” He immediately sensed his heart enter a state of upheaval. Lowly chanting sutras at once, he closed his eyes straightaway and his heart was like still water once more. Nothing could disturb him!

To give one's body to die for a good cause, to abandon one's life to take justice. At the moment, it was none of these things. It was all for their own paths of cultivation, to slay their way to a glorious future!

The sword comes without the self!

The black Buddha wheel faintly rotated at Wei Zhongxian's head. Infinite black light radiated. The current him didn't resemble a Foundation Establishment cultivator by any means! He was more like a Core Formation ancestor! Akin to a Dao Master soaring to the heavens in this lotus sea!

Both his hands gently pinched: “Devour... Blood...”

“DIE!!!” Xu Yangyi’s longblade had already arrived in front! Bereft of the slightest hesitation and with the utmost strength, he cleaved towards Wei Zhongxian’s head that was flying several tens of meters away from his body!

“DIE!!!” Behind, five angry shouts and five divine abilities all arrived!

Boom! A domain of multicolored, rich qi exploded! Shortly following, the sky loudly rang out with an even more fierce rumbling!

Azure qi exploded and came forth! It was like an ocean, like a tide! This qi rushed the six of them like fallen leaves in a mad squall, and they flew back several hundred meters!

Xu Yangyi didn’t even blink an eye. Currently, his strong brows suddenly tightened and furrowed.

He saw... that the others’ divine abilities... had all been plucked away by the golden qi released by the Animus Armament... Only he, his two moves, had all surprisingly rumbled on the corpse puppet’s body!

It was just... that there was no effect. The disparity of realms was too great. Foundation Establishment and Qi Condensation was a difference of heaven and earth. At this very moment, he felt this phrase with peerless clarity.

As if he was confronting a tall insurmountable mountain, even if he flipped over the great rivers and dense forests at the mountain’s foot, he was still fundamentally incapable of planting his banner at the summit.

“The Animus Armament ‘permits’ my entry.” A wave of scalding fire burned his chest, and he vomited a mouthful of blood. As he flew back, his gaze stared at Wei Zhongxian with roiling heat: “This is my sole advantage...”

“Junior brother!!!” After flying back no less than several hundred meters, Xu Yangyi heard a terribly miserable screech just as he stabilized.

Ling Xiaozi’s hand was supporting Qing Jingzi’s body, both of his eyes thoroughly reddened. As for Qing Jingzi... he was located outside the ancient lamp’s protection.

Qing Jingzi’s face was already devoid of blood. It wasn’t a description, but his entire body was truly without a drop of blood!

Xu Yangyi was dazed for several seconds, and he suddenly turned his head back to look towards a lotus leaf! In a place that entered his eye, he saw one person.

At some time he was unaware of, Zhao Ziqi had appeared again. Both of Zhao Ziqi’s eyes cycled endlessly and formed a strange protective screen of the Eight Trigrams at his side!

“Cough, cough, cough...” A violent coughing entered Xu Yangyi’s ears. Zhao Wuye’s and Mao Ba’er’s extremely weak voices rang out at the same time: Fellow Daoist Xu... j-j-just worry about... relaxing... We of the Zhao Clan... were able to get here by relying on Ziqi’s Netherpierce Eye... So long as it’s a nether object... w-we... c-can still hold on for a while...

This... is a spiritual-sense transmission from the Zhao Clan’s secret arts... you... can relax...

Xu Yangyi tightly gritted his teeth. He surveyed the area. Even now... the others were nearly exterminated!

At that time, a tide-like thousand people had arrived. Now... twenty people remained?

[1] There have been a few notes on Xiang Yu in the past, specifically the idiom of “breaking ships and pans”. Xiang Yu (232-202 BC) was a warlord during the late Qin dynasty. At the end of his life, he faced off against many of Liu Bang’s soldiers, refusing to return to Jiangdong after having so many of his men killed.

Chapter 224: Danxia Temple (43)

All who remained was Sister Nine and Yi Old Five, the leaders of the other powers. They had jointly offered sacrifices to a skull and were safely protected within it. However, this skull was obviously inferior to the ancient lamp and the lotus lantern. Presently, its radiance was already dimming.

Nonetheless, their despairing eyes were fixed on the several people in front. Only Xu Yangyi and the others... were Sister Nine and Yi Old Five's hope!

"How are all of you holding up?" Xu Yangyi deeply asked the others.

After several seconds, Fahui's voice was heard: "Not bad."

His voice was quite low. The attack from moments ago had yielded no result. It was the greatest strike against morale. Strength was a word that wasn't just absolutely realm. Neither courage nor wisdom could be lacking. A cultivator without courage was nothing more than a weak superhuman.

"If this poor Daoist... doesn't slay this fiend, how can I face my two fellow apprentices who died for justice?!" Ling Xiaozi and Xuan Chengzi were silent for two seconds, yet they answered resolutely, their voices chopping nail and slicing iron.

Xu Yangyi deeply nodded, not wasting his effort again on something implicit. It was strange... very strange. He had completely received that move from moments ago. However... it seemed as if there wasn't blood inside his body!

Devour Bone was inexplicably useless against him, as was Devour Blood! He hadn't considered that everyone had almost mobilized all the qi that they could use in the strike just now. At this moment... if an attack of the same strength level just now was to be exhibited, each person had at most only one chance!

In other words... if the best opportunity to act wasn't found... they were certain to die here!

Buzz... Wei Zhongxian's left hand suddenly brightened with endless blue spiritual light. A few seconds later, a Buddha wheel, roughly two meters in diameter and the same size as the Buddha wheel at his head, appeared over his right hand. It was a blue Buddha wheel covered in countless profound rune!

"This is..." Xu Yangyi carefully studied everything in front of his eyes. In his heart, two words quickly emerged!

Complete repair...

The first move, Devour Bone, was a divine ability of black qi. A black Buddha Wheel had appeared. The second move, Devour Blood, was a divine ability of blue qi. A blue Buddha wheel had appeared...

Presently, Wei Zhongxian's head, hands, legs, and torso... were altogether six positions! That was to say...

Of the Heavenly Opening First Erosion and Second Erosion... were there a total of six moves? Yet after all six moves were completed, what would happen? What would Wei Zhongxian complete?

Xu Yangyi dared not continue to thought. Furthermore, he dared not say it to anyone. The current morale couldn't withstand any strike whatsoever!

"Devour..." His thought yet to conclude, the third move had shockingly arrived!

"How?!" Stunned, Fahui looked on at Wei Zhongxian who was like a demon descended: "It's getting shorter and shorter... Fellow Daoists! His seal forming time is getting shorter and shorter!"

The sky changed color again! Clouds emerged once more. However, the clouds this time were different from the past. Cloud upon cloud took on the shape of sabers! Layer after layer was

arranged in the sky! First they were white, but soon after... they turned purple! They resembled blade edges, bright like snow, wet with purple blood! At this instant, the clouds of the 20,000-plus square kilometers of the lotus sea were dyed with blood all around!

“Flesh...” Following the slight grasping of Wei Zhongxian’s hand, an invisible shock wave of qi burst forth from his body, visible to the naked eye! It was like the reaper’s sickle, slicing through 20,000 square kilometers of land!

It seemed... like rows of formless daggers were charging right in front of everyone!

Crash... This time, Xu Yangyi finally felt something. He clearly sensed that all his muscles were swiftly atrophying! A completely unnatural method was used!

In a twinkling, he transformed into a dried-up, thin young man, all skin and bones. But! At this time, he sensed even more clearly that all his muscles underneath his skin were brimming with vitality again!

“What the hell is going on?” He lifted up his arm and looked. Moments ago, with a blink of effort, all that remained of him was bones. Now he could see his swollen and bulging bicep. However, he simply didn’t have the effort to continue thinking because two popping noises rang out at his side. A crisp shattering sound immediately entered his ears.

He turned his head back and looked, only seeing that Fahui’s lotus lantern and the ancient lamp of Greenwall’s Two Swords had stopped burning at the same time. Golden particles of spiritual light circled around the trio. All of them looked at the two treasures in disbelief.

A smidgen of despair emerged on Fahui’s face for the first time. This disparity of realms... was like a tall insurmountable mountain. Even added up, they of heaven’s pride were still far from being the opponent of a Foundation Establishment corpse

puppet! Yet in the next second, Fahui's facial features suddenly twisted.

“Puh!” A blood arrow sprayed out from his mouth. All his muscles twisted at a visible speed and faded away! A sharp indescribable pain caused the ever-calm Fahui to produce a terribly wretched scream! “AARRGGHH!!!!!!”

A mournful wail reverberated throughout the entire space. It was an internal sensation of each muscle twisting and snapping, breaking into pieces, and emptying out. Not to speak of a cultivator... even a robot wouldn't be able to endure this!

“So... So... I... have heard...” At the juncture of life and death, Fahui's entire face was gorged with blood, and he gritted his teeth and chanted sutras. His teeth and lips were shivering in paleness.

Following the opening and close of his lips, the kasaya on his body was immediately suffused with white light. It protected his entire person within it. As for himself, he promptly dropped down and sat. He was unable to hold a meditation position. From head to toe, he was cramping as he secreted cold sweat.

In a second, he withered fiercely. All of them were simply unrecognizable from the young, elegant cultivators still brimming with vigor from several seconds ago. The only thing that could be seen was a human-shaped bag of bones. If he delayed by another one or two seconds, this world would've no longer had him.

“Fellow Daoist... Xu.” Fahui closed his eyes. Events had come to a head, yet he seemed to unexpectedly calm down: “It... looks like... we will... have... to say... our g-goodbyes... here...”

At the other side, Xuan Chengzi's voice was heard. At some unknown time, a painting of the Eight Trigrams had encased his entire form. However, even like so, his level of withering wasn't one bit better than Fahui's: “We're can't act any further. At most... we can only hang on for ten minutes.”

“In ten minutes... the only person left alive in Danxia Temple might be you, Fellow Daoist.” He lifted his head and surprisingly laughed. He gazed at the various clouds in the sky that still hadn’t retreated, chuckling: “What a pity. No one will pass on all that we’ve seen inside Danxia Temple... It’s also a shame... that I even believed myself to be a young talent. But compared to a Foundation Establishment cultivator, there’s such a large gap...”

Xu Yangyi gritted his teeth: “It’s not the end. Why are you talking about giving up?”

“Forget it.” Xuan Chengzi serenely closed his eyes: “There’s a large disparity in strength... A difference of heaven and earth... To be able to fall in an eternal deadland, I cannot be considered to have made this excursion in vain...”

Xu Yangyi wanted to make some consolation, but nothing left his mouth. Yes... the strength disparity was too vast! These several moves were ranged attacks without hardly any distinction! How many had died?!

Up close, an attack couldn’t be made. Only Xu Yangyi could attack the corpse puppet because of an unspeakable secret. Nonetheless... his attack couldn’t reach a conclusive result! In retreat, they could only look on helplessly and wait for death!

This was known as a lingering death, a death of a thousand cuts!

Fahui was powerless to keep on fighting. Of Greenwall’s Two Swords, Xuan Chengzi’s heart was like dead ash, but Ling Xiaozi’s gaze was like fire. However, the only battle strength remaining was Xu Yangyi and Ling Xiaozi. From the beginning, all six of them were unable to break through Wei Zhongxian’s defenses. The other’s currently emerging divine abilities gradually progressed one layer at a time, Devour Bone, Devour Blood, and Devour Flesh... It seemed that as long as there was still a living person, Wei Zhongxian’s divine abilities wouldn’t cease! It was like his power wanted to torment everyone to death!

At this moment, a voice emerged in Xu Yangyi's spiritual sense without warning: Fellow Daoist Xu... I got it... I understand!!! I finally know what this is!

This was Zhao Wuye's voice!

Xu Yangyi's originally dark eyes quickly shined, and he promptly chased this line of questioning: What is this?

Only by understanding true inner nature of these moves would there be a chance in unravelling it!

Wei Zhongxian, or perhaps it should be said his corpse, wasn't like a cultivator. He was more like a "divine-ability trigger device"! These several divine abilities definitely weren't a Foundation Establishment cultivator's style! Even a Core Formation ancestor was unable to attain this level!

Wait... Zhao Wuye's voice carried incredible emotion: Wait for the next move... Fellow Daoist Xu... If I haven't guessed incorrectly... we might discover an enormous secret in history! I predict... the next move... is his second to last move... The divine ability anomaly... will be azure netherflame! As big as a wheel! If it is... I might know how to break through it!

"Okay." Xu Yangyi tightly clenched his fist: "I... will take this next move for you!"

Fahui and Greenwall's Two Swords had already shut their eyes, on the verge of resisting the next coming move with full strength. However, all of Xu Yangyi's bodily qi revolved. Likewise, he was waiting... for the next move that would affect the fates of the few only living people!

Buzz... Accompanying the third move's completion, a two-meter-sized Buddha wheel gradually solidified over Wei Zhongxian's right hand. Yet at this moment, he opened his mouth.

"Devour..."

The fourth move!

Zhao Wuye was already forcibly propping his body up to stand. The defensive effect of Zhao Ziqi's Netherpierce Eye really was astonishingly awesome against things of the nether. However, because of the total crushing of realms, although each move wasn't much, it still thoroughly affected them!

Zhao Wuye's legs trembled, but his expression was incomparably burning. He gazed fixedly at the sky!

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath. This move was THE move! If there existed a change in fortune, it would appear in this move! At this moment, apart from having confidence in each other, there was nothing else!

In order to live on, for his own Dao, for his own perfection, and to resolve this final heart tribulation, everything had to be given the utmost! He had chosen this, fully aware that this was Danxia Temple's inner temple. In also entering, since he had chosen his path, bramble and thorn had to be cut through to continue walking!

To one who has crossed the ocean, there were no difficult waters. For one who had passed Mount Wu, there were no clouds!

"Come on... you old castrated dog..." Xu Yangyi said fiercely, his entire body's spiritual force already revolving to the peak

"Soul..."

Buzz! At this moment, it seemed as if countless daggers had been shoved into Xu Yangyi's head! Blade after blade stabbed into his spiritual sense! The past several moves didn't affect him, but this move appeared as if it wanted to destroy him from inside out!

"Fellow Daoist Xu!" Zhao Wuye's complexion suddenly changed because he had seen very clearly. Before, Xu Yangyi had never reacted to the past moves. At this moment, he swayed twice on top of the Chasing Skylark and actually nosedived into the water!

Pain... Extreme pain...

Both of Xu Yangyi's eyes tightly shut. He had never thought that when this move was able to affect him that it would have such a terrible effect! Inside his body, it seemed that countless hands were ripping him apart from the inside to the outside! It was the pain of spiritual sense being torn apart. His heart almost stopped beating!

If a cultivator's qi sea was destroyed, they wouldn't die. But once the spiritual sense was wrung to shreds, there was no doubt regarding certain death!

Chapter 225: Danxia Temple (44)

Xu Yangyi's spiritual sense continued to weaken bit by bit. Before his eyes was a total expanse of darkness. Simply uncontrollable, blood gushed out from his seven apertures. From the beginning he fell into the water, it appeared like the flow of spring water. In the water, a blood-red thread was formed!

I'm going to die... His first thought was how close he was to approaching the netherworld. All of a sudden, the front of him flashed and actually brightened. He saw the life he had experienced... With an extreme speed, it projected in front of his eyes like a carousel lantern of paper horses.

He saw his parents... He saw that giant crow... he also saw his entry into Heavens Law... and even Su Lian Yue... He looked upon many, many things. The world seemed to turn sluggish in this instant, causing him to enjoy this moment as much as he desired.

Are my memories flashing through my eyes...? He suddenly wanted to laugh. This life, eh... I accomplished nothing... But just as his mouth opened, all that rushed into his mouth was ice-cold seawater.

"Glub... Glub..." A series of air bubbles floated up. In the water, he sank deeper and deeper. At this time, a faint azure light suddenly radiated underwater. It wasn't large, but it quickly wrapped him up. At the same time, Xu Yangyi floated back up with an extreme speed!

He couldn't see and hear, but he could feel! His spiritual sense became clear and bright in an instant! It was like pressing the resurrection button in a video game! Furthermore, he couldn't see that below the water... countless chains were locking down a tremendous shadow. At his very moment, It opened Its eyes...

"Azure Lotus Demonic Art... Lotus Reincarnation..." A woman's voice drifted upwards from underwater: "This Palace... can only

lend you a hand... After all... for this day... I... have waited too long... too long...”

“3,600 years... have gone by just like that... Never mind it... Two... The last two...”

“Junior... you mustn’t disappoint me...”

No one could see, but at the very bottom of Danxia Temple, there was a shadow no less than 5,000 meters long! It was locked down by five chains, and these five chains were shockingly black, white, violet, azure, and red in color! But now... among these five chains, three had already dimmed. All that remained was the final azure and red chains! However, on top of each of the previous black, white, and violet chains, there were faintly discernible Buddha wheels slowly rotating and seemingly restoring them!

Xu Yangyi was none the wiser to all of this. However, he suddenly opened his eyes. His first reaction was to fiercely charge above!

Splash! His head surfaced out of the water, and he yelled loudly: “Chasing Skylark!”

Swoosh! The Chasing Skylark in the air was at first terribly sluggish, but in this twinkling, it was just like a newborn. Without delay, it rushed down!

He grabbed onto the Chasing Skylark’s claw and flipped over onto its back. In a place that his gaze reached, Fahui and Greenwall’s Two Swords were looking at him with immense shock.

He didn’t died! He actually didn’t die!

They knew how powerful the protective items of the Dao Sect and Buddha Sect were. Didn’t they see that Sister Nine and Yi Old Five were both without voice now? The cultivation world’s apex clans were unknown to life or death, but they could still hold on! However, even though this person didn’t have a protective

talisman as powerful as theirs, he surprisingly hadn't died!

They clearly felt how strong that strike was from moments ago! If... spiritual-sense attacks were now spoken of among sect-protection secret arts, the strike just now... could no longer be called an attack. It was a pure extermination of spiritual sense!

Those hit by it were resigned to death!

"Fellow Daoist Xu... Fellow Daoist Xu!" Zhao Wuye was also stunned, but in the next second, he was unexpectedly crying tears of joy: "Awesome! Awesome! You didn't die! You didn't die!!!"

"Cut the crap!" Xu Yangyi gritted his teeth and said: "Speak! What was the divine ability anomaly just now?"

Zhao Wuye's lips were quivering: "Azure netherflame... as big as a wheel! Fellow Daoist Xu, its azure netherflame! I wasn't wrong! I was right! I guessed right! Hahahaha!!!"

A slight problem now emerged in Zhao Wuye's mind because of great joy and sorrow. First he had cried tears of joy and he currently went so far as to cackle in madness.

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath: "There's no time! Give me an exact answer!"

"Alright!" Zhao Wuye clenched his teeth and said: "In the world, there are three great unsolved riddles. The first is India's Mound of the Dead. The second is the Tunguska Explosion. The Third... is the Tianqi Explosion!" [\[1\]](#)

The Tianqi Explosion?

Xu Yangyi's eyes quickly glimmered. Tianqi... Heavenly Opening! How many secrets were concealed in these two words?

"The Tianqi Explosion's first omen was the Demonchariot Pheasant occupying the starry altar! It was Wei Zhongxian's first move!"

"The second omen was fluttering snow of May! This was his

second move!”

“The third move was the warping and weaving of clouds, a transformation from white to purple. This was his third move. As for the fourth move...” The more Zhao Wuye spoke, the more excited he became: “The azure nether ghostflame, large as a wheel. This... is his fourth move!”

“I can deduce that his fifth move will be an explosion in itself! In the entire world’s millions of years, this is an unsolved riddle!!! Its might... is enough to raze everything to the ground!”

Yet suddenly, Xu Yangyi’s gaze flickered.

Five moves? Not six? If it wasn’t like that... then... did Wei Zhongxian, who was split into six parts, have one more move? No... why had he chosen such a strange method? Why would the eternally unsolved Tianqi Explosion unfold at the bottom of Danxia Temple?

Or could it be said... that Wei Zhongxian was choosing something? Or... he wanted to make people see something? Something within... the never-arisen sixth move?

Zhao Wuye spoke succinctly and quickly enough, but at this instant, Wei Zhongxian’s mouth opened again: “Devour...”

The fifth move... The last move... Not waiting for Zhao Wuye to finish speaking, it had already descended!

The arrival of the Tianqi Explosion’s true manifestation! This... was the last move! There was no time for careful consideration!

Xu Yangyi gnashed his teeth, and his reddened eyes swept through everyone. He controlled his voice and enunciated each of his words: “Give me time.”

These three words were incredibly heavy, but there was now someone whose ponderings didn’t even exceed a tenth of a second!

“JUNIOR BROTHER!!!” A pained roar echoed. Xuan Chengzi

looked on in shock as Ling Xiaozi stepped forward and charged out! Ling Xiaozi's entire bodily qi was madly raging!

Qi detonation!!!

From this moment onwards, the world would no longer have this person. His spiritual sense, qi sea, skin, flesh, and bones would all completely disappear! There wasn't anyone that could've expected that by just these three words, Ling Xiaozi had actually chosen to detonate his qi sea!

"Swordless Anatta." Ling Xiaozi spat these two words out of his mouth. He turned his head and glanced deeply at Xuan Chengzi, and his mouth stirred. There was no sound, but Xuan Chengzi saw it all too clearly.

Two words.

Live on.

It was incredibly simple but incomparably heavy. It was as light as the touch of lips. Heavy like a cultivator with boundless prospects detonating the qi sea.

"Amitabha..." Fahui was also profoundly shocked. The eyes of the present him were deep set. He was almost unlike a human, but he still shakily raised his hands up and pressed them together. With all of his body's remaining power, he faced towards Ling Xiaozi's figure and recited a chant.

This sword had already transcended the idea of sects. Fahui paid respects to a true cultivator.

BOOM!!! A ball of fiery qi exploded in front of Wei Zhongxian's body! It was unknown whether there was an effect, but Wei Zhongxian's second word wasn't said!

Xu Yangyi deeply cupped his hands. His voice somewhat hoarse, he said to Zhao Wuye: "Continue!"

Zhao Wuye was likewise shocked, but he further understood that

time was life at this moment. He immediately said: “This is a dead soul’s reincarnation technique... This technique has already vanished for almost a thousand years! Because it was too ruthless and its requirements too unique, it was abandoned by the cultivation world.”

“A person who chose this art had to be born in a Yin year, month, day, time, and have a Yin engraving. If it was a woman, she had to be imprisoned underground on her birthday. If it was a man... it was only after castration and dismemberment. In fact, Wei Zhongxian’s nature is still a corpse puppet, but not an ordinary one. A normal corpse puppet can use a cultivator’s divine abilities from when they were alive. As for this corpse puppet, It can be forcibly outfitted with any divine ability! And... when It suffers an intense qi, It’ll automatically produce a counterattack!” [\[2\]](#)

So it was like this!

Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed. It was no wonder that Wei Zhongxian had died and resurrected, no surprise that his divine abilities were simply unlike the Qi Condensation Realm!

“In particular...” Zhao Wuye shivered: “The function of this kind of corpse puppet is normally used for suppressing and sealing. Therefore, its attached divine abilities would be abnormally powerful!”

Xu Yangyi’s thoughts swiftly revolved. Sealing? Suppressing?

What... was Wei Zhongxian suppressing? Perhaps the “me” in “save me”... was something else?

There wasn’t enough time to keep on thinking. He had to treasure the time that Ling Xiaozi had used his life to exchange for!

“However, a corpse puppet of a dead soul reincarnated has already surpassed an ordinary corpse puppet! There HAS to be a control nexus! Commander, do you remember when Ye Old Four died...”

“You’re talking about that thing inside his mouth?” Xu Yangyi’s mind suddenly shined. In other words, the Animus Armament’s lower half was controlling Wei Zhongxian?

“That’s the greatest possibility!” Zhao Wuye clenched his teeth and said: “If this doesn’t work, we’ll be waiting to die!!!”

Before Zhao Wuye’s voice even fell, Xu Yangyi had already charged forward! All matters seemed to form a circle. In this place, a full stop was drawn.

Animus Armament... Emperor Armament... It was still due to it! He had come because of it and would now also usher in a conclusion because of it! The item that he desired to seize was the object that was obstructing him!

That which was sown was that which was reaped. Karmic retribution was never straightforward.

Wei Zhongxian’s voice was quite slow. For these two words, he needed roughly five seconds to say them outloud. Yet Xu Yangyi’s opportunity was only these five seconds!

Because of Devour Soul moments ago, he didn’t have any confidence in surviving the next Erosion! The next Erosion would be the strongest move! The Tianqi Explosion, one of the world’s Three Great Eternal Riddles. By the hand of a Foundation Establishment senior and through the divine ability of a mighty figure whose whereabouts were unknown, it would manifest again at the bottom of Danxia Temple! Such might... simply dared not be imagined!

In a spark of flint, Xu Yangyi used his fastest speed to calculate the distance.

Eight seconds!

Charging in front of Wei Zhongxian still needed eight seconds! Without a spare word, all of his body’s spiritual force frantically poured into the Chasing Skylark. The skylark almost transformed

into a streak of azure light! It arced forth like electricity!

In this twinkling moment... no one who was still alive could utter a word. Their gazes tightly fixed onto Xu Yangyi's figure.

Wei Zhongxian's flying head! This mouth which had devour Ye Old Four had to be pried open and the Animus Armament seized! Otherwise, all things would perish!

Fahui firmly pursed his lips. For the first time, he stopped chanting sutras. His palm was covered entirely with cold sweat. Xuan Chengzi and Quan Ningyue were gritting their teeth hard. Quan Ningyue had already crossed both of her hands like she was praying in front of her chest, her lips trembling.

On a lotus leaf, Sister Nine could only keep her eyes opened by a crack. She forcibly braced herself without losing consciousness. She lied down in a pool of blood, her blood-filled eyes locked rigidly on Xu Yangyi.

At this very moment, between heaven and earth, only he existed!

[1] All real places/events. India's Mound of the Dead is also known as Mohenjo-daro. The Tianqi in Tianqi Explosion (also known as Wanggongchang Explosion) is the same characters as "Heavenly Opening". It occurred during the reign of Emperor Tianqi. More information can be found on wikipedia about these places/events.

[2] Only thing I really want to take note of here is "Yin engraving". This is a somewhat complicated topic to discuss. The idea of Yin year/month/day is cosmological, etc, but the Yin engraving has to do with carving a name/characters. If the characters are inwards, it is a Yin engraving. If it is outwards, it is a Yang engraving.

Chapter 226: Danxia Temple (45)

None were any the wiser that below the water, a weak, indistinct spiritual sense was also paying attention to this region.

“The last... The last one... 3,600 years... The end is just about to be reached...”

Closer... Even closer... Xu Yangyi already saw Wei Zhongxian who had Buddha wheels emerge at his head, his hands, and his legs.

Black, white, violet, and azure... corresponding to four divine abilities. Four several-meter-wide halos lingered in the surroundings. The present Wei Zhongxian was terrible and awesome. His might directly pressured Core Formation! He couldn't be viewed as just an initial-stage Foundation Establishment!

“Devour...”

Ling Xiaozi's explosion had already passed. Wei Zhongxian was without a hair's wound. From his emotionless mouth, he spat out the first word.

“FUCK YOU!” Xu Yangyi was terribly anxious in his heart. He was still several hundred meters away from Wei Zhongxian! There wasn't enough time to cross this distance!

Stop! Stop! STOP! In his heart, he frantically shouted. I'm not willing, I won't take this! I definitely got here! But this old inhuman dog of a castrate is going to kill me?! My great hatred still hasn't been avenged and I have the Eternal Alchemy Canon. How can I die here?

“Do me a favor...” His hand pointed ahead, unwavering: “And shut! UP!!!”

In the next second, he didn't expect that countless vines would suddenly grow out from his palm! The speed was several times

greater than his Chasing Skylark! The vines faced the wind, growing! Each one was no less than an arm thick! Countless barbs grew out from their surfaces! In a wink of time, they reined in Wei Zhongxian's mouth!

"This is!" Originally, Li Zongyuan was almost terrified out of his soul. Yet in this instant, he suddenly sat up.

At his side, Mao Ba'er also sat up in fright, looking upon this scene incredulously!

Fahui's gaze was shaken. He looked at Xu Yangyi with incomparable shock: "Demonification... He... He isn't a pure human... but I've never heard of this kind of figure among half-demons! No matter human or half-demon, such a figure should be famous!"

However, this reining was only temporary.

In a blink, Wei Zhongxian's mouth was like when he had devoured Ye Old Four. His jaws separated, opening up to a horrific degree like a snake, and spread wide again.

The light of Xu Yangyi's eyes erupted. It seemed that as long as Wei Zhongxian was truly disrupted, he would have to start over again! And in these five seconds... he still needed seven seconds to charge across roughly thousand meters!

Buzz... Wei Zhongxian's mouth flourished with golden light. Xu Yangyi could already see the complete view of that small box!

What to do... What was to be done! Was there something... that could truly interfere with the corpse puppet again? So long as it was one time! Once was enough! After one more time, he could rush in front of Wei Zhongxian!

He subconsciously stroked his storage ring. The items inside essentially couldn't wound this Foundation Establishment corpse puppet! All of a sudden, his eyes shined. No... there was still one thing!

“Devour...” At this time, Wei Zhongxian had surprisingly chomped through the arm-thick vine, and a vague word came from his mouth.

Swoosh! Almost simultaneously, a silver-white object shot out from Xu Yangyi’s hand and pierced straight at Wei Zhongxian’s head! It... was the sword point from the Yellow Springs path’s strange dimension! Just as this sword point was launched, the sky brightened.

The sky didn’t turn white... but rather pitch-black. In the sky that only held countless violet talismans... boundless starlight suddenly flashed! Rays of golden light hung down from the sky. In a flash, white qi lotuses floated up on the water’s surface!

A sensation that none could ignore, one that could even be said holy, soundlessly descended upon this space. It died away in the blink of an eye! However, Xu Yangyi’s eyes quickly saucered! He thought back to a phrase. A phrase that Daomaster Jadewave had told him that day at the Four Great Joint Pools!

Starry Heavens Flower and Rootless Lotus. Golden light like muslin, power shakes Xuan Yuan!

“What... W-what is this?!?!?” Beneath this mighty pressure, Fahui actually laid down on his stomach, wet with cold sweat. Terrible... Too terrible! This invisible sensation was practically akin to a god descending into the mortal world!

Likewise, Xuan Chengzi kneeled on the ground, his teeth trembling: “What is this item... It’s too scary... I’ve never experienced such an awful feeling...”

The sword point had transformed into a resplendent golden light. With a speed beyond the naked eye, it rapidly charged Wei Zhongxian!

Boom boom boom! On the water’s surface, the palm-sized sword point brought forth a giant wave that was approximately a

thousand meters! It was without the slightest warning, absent of any justification! Yet amidst the giant wave, the mote of golden light was first to arrive. Soon after, Xu Yangyi urgently rushed from behind like a deity!

Wei Zhongxian's voice stopped for the first time. In his eyes, a wisp of consciousness actually appeared! Looking blankly at the sword point, he spoke his first conscious words.

“Heavenly Opening... Heavenly Opening... Heavenly... Opening... reappear... Heavenly Opening... Explosion...”

Those who could speak weren't of mind to. In Xu Yangyi's heart, a giant heaven-torrenting wave had already surged! The Tianqi Explosion... The Animus Armament... If this sword point was that item...

A terrible, hair-raising guess swiftly emerged in his mind. But! At this moment, he didn't have the effort whatsoever to go verify it. That was because... life and death would be spelled in this fleeting moment!

Thunk! Wei Zhongxian's voice yet to fall, the sword point had already nailed firmly into his head!

“SSRRRAAGHH!!!!!!” A sharp screech tore open the vast sky without warning! Wei Zhongxian's wretched scream echoed. In an instant, his entire body's qi was shaking unsteadily! Nonetheless, in the next second, a hellish voice rang out again!

“Devour...”

The third time, the third time that it rang out!

Xu Yangyi's whole body had long since transformed into an indistinct afterimage! His distance apart from Wei Zhongxian's figure was already less than twenty meters! Three obstructions and three increases in speed! Life and death was in this very moment! However, Wei Zhongxian's last move arrived even faster than everyone's imaginations!

“Spirit... Uhh... raghh...” As the next word was said aloud, an incomparably frightening fluctuation suddenly flickered in the sky! The clouds split open, and the sky seemed to subsequently crack apart. A terrible fiery mushroom cloud was faintly visible in the split clouds of the sky. Endless scarlet radiance fell down and reflected red clouds off the ground!

At this moment, below intense red light, Xu Yangyi’s silhouette couldn’t be clearly made out! Furthermore, it was unknown... how far away he still was!

“Amitabha...” Fahui closed his eyes and recited a chant. He said no more.

Xuan Chengzi faced towards the sky and sighed deeply: “Junior brother... I’m sorry. Senior brother still won’t be able to live on...” He closed his eyes and was met with darkness. This was the best method for ignoring death. However, a few seconds later... ten seconds later... the horrific spiritual force explosion didn’t arise!

“Could it be...?” Fahui immediately opened his eyes. Bearing a gaze of immense expectation and joyous surprise, he looked staunchly towards Wei Zhongxian!

“Heavens...” Zhao Wuye covered his mouth and trembled all over.

“Thank you, God, Holy Mother, Allah, Mary, Jesus Christ...” The expression of Mao Ba’er’s canine face was one of total shock. Not daring to believe, he gazed at everything in front of his eyes.

“This... This...” Xuan Chengzi’s lips were shaking. Looking at the scene before him, he suspected that an issue had come up with his eyes!

Already, Xu Yangyi’s complexion was so choked that it was thoroughly red. A foot was stomping down on the teeth of Wei Zhongxian’s lower jaw, and a hand was propping up the teeth of Wei Zhongxian’s upper jaw! His entire figure was wedged inside

the incredibly large mouth!

Even now, the mouth was braced to the extent that it deformed! Looking from here, Wei Zhongxian's face couldn't be seen at all. All that was visible was his exaggeratedly propped-open mouth! In the sky, the enormous fireball was already quietly falling back!

Drop by drop, blood spilled over onto Xu Yangyi's leg from his hand. At the beginning, it was still a drop, but after a brief period, it immediately transformed into a stream!

"Fuck..." Xu Yangyi's eyes were somewhat reddened. This monster's jaws... were as sharp as blades! At this moment, his hands were essentially holding onto a tract of sharp blades that were pressing down with full power! His foot was stomping down on blades that were forcibly closing upwards! He simply couldn't resist a Foundation Establishment cultivator's qi. Blood flowed down from his hands and dyed his lower body red!

"TAKE THE NEXUS!!!" Zhao Wuye bellowed. Xu Yangyi's fairly dim eyes brightened again. Exhausting his maximum power, his other hand stretched into Wei Zhongxian's mouth!

However, by this application of force, blood abruptly burst forth from his seven apertures! It was just like someone had grabbed onto him and powerfully squeezed!

Although the explosion from moments ago had receded... he who was the closest to Wei Zhongxian suffered the greatest effect!

Presently, he already felt the inside of his body splitting open! His internal organs seemed to burn in pain! Each of his meridians were clamoring in pain and collapse. Were it not for absolute willpower fueling him, he would've long since fell in!

No good... He couldn't prop the jaws apart for long. In a flash, he understood the situation. His hands and feet were all fiercely shaking like he was having a stroke! At most, he had ten seconds! When he couldn't hold on anymore was the time he would be

chomped into two pieces!

His heart sparked in this time, and he searched for the box with his full strength. However, as Xu Yangyi became more nervous and was unable to find the Animus Armament, the closing of Wei Zhongxian's teeth drew increasingly near! At the start, it was a single person in height, but now, it had already transformed into half a person! Even now, he could sense the eerie chilliness of the other's teeth!

“Fuck!” He extracted each sliver of spiritual force from his entire body. This time, his extended hand finally touched an object.

Round... A familiar feeling. His heart relaxed, and he forcefully pulled out! Yet now, he suddenly felt that Wei Zhongxian's teeth strength was madly increasing! It appeared... the other also understood that he couldn't allow Xu Yangyi to pull out this item at all!

What was to be done?!

From Xu Yangyi's hand, the blood on his legs already caused his head to swoon and eyes to blur by a little bit. Each extra second of perseverance was torture. He ruthlessly bit down on his tongue, causing his eyes to quickly sober. He carefully looked at the place where his hand was grabbing the box. He then compared it to his own position.

His eyes flashed with a shred of absolute determination.

To be willing to part with something... To abandon something willfully... With a reluctance to let go, where would gain come from?

Soon afterwards...

Without warning, his entire body withdrew from Wei Zhongxian's ridiculously large and deep mouth!

Apart... from his hand holding the box.

CRUNCH!

With a heavy groan, Xu Yangyi faced upwards and gasped. A sharp pain that he had never felt spread from his left arm!

In the last instant, his left arm and his body lost connection. He steeled his heart and consumed his full power, tearing at the Animus Armament's lower part!

Chapter 227: Danxia Temple (46)

It... was a bodily sensation of a place leaving the body.

“Fellow Daoist!” “Commander!” “Spud!” “You...”

An untold number of alarmed cries suddenly rang out. Each person saw that after Xu Yangyi retreated from Wei Zhongxian’s mouth, his person was fine. However, his left arm was but empty space!

“Pant... Pant...” The sound of cool gasping spread out from between Xu Yangyi’s teeth. His pale lips shivered incessantly. He was already soaked with blood from head to toe. His body had sustained heavy injuries, and his left arm was lost. However, he didn’t look towards his wounds but rather straight at the corpse puppet.

Wei Zhongxian was motionless. He... had just stiffened in place like so. After five seconds, the four Buddha wheels on his entire body exploded into a radiance that filled the sky in a twinkling!

Rustle... The corpse puppet’s five sensory organs all opened and rays of pure white qi slowly ascended into the sky from them. It was as if Wei Zhongxian was evaporating.

Infinite, limitless, and separated somewhat far away, a skybound light pillar of white qi was all that could be seen. It revolved in the unbounded lotus sea.

This heart-shaking berserk qi swept across the entire neighboring space! On the ocean surface, it looked like a hurricane had blown through. Tides rose and fell in succession and the surrounding lotuses looked back in harmony!

“This is...” Fahui resisted the feeling of his body on the verge of collapse. He gritted his teeth and used his monk’s robe to block his face, looking at the scenery. Only the white skybound spiritual light was seen in the center. In the surroundings, four spiritual

lights, black, white, azure, and violet in color, erupted and dyed the sky with rich and vast colors.

“Succ... cess?” His eyes were fairly red. No one was willing to die. Even if his eyes were swimming, he was still begrudging to blink away from this scene.

However, every place that his eyes touched was a multicolored domain. He couldn't clearly see at all!

Xuan Chengzi didn't speak, merely sheltering his face. Right now... qi hurried and rushed like the Yangtze and Yellow Rivers clashing head-on! Through the seams of his fingers, he observed the five-colored spiritual light. Even though it was piercing to the eyes, he was still unwilling to part his gaze from it.

Countless eyes forcibly resisted the multicolored spiritual light that bewildered the pupils. They looked towards the space above the lotusless ocean surface. Even if they couldn't see in such a situation, they had heard their clansmen say that this was a qi leakage after the destruction of a seal. The whereabouts of the mighty figure who had crafted Wei Zhongxian into a corpse puppet were unknown. After several centuries, the elimination of the corpse puppet had actually leaked out qi in this manner.

However, at this time, the corpse puppet suddenly produced a frightened voice. Although the voice wasn't loud, everyone heard it all too clear!

“Awakened... She... has awakened... She has awakened!”

This was the final screech of the corpse's existence in this world. After this voice, the sky flashed with dazzling white light. In the end, everyone could endure no more and closed their eyes.

As soon as the white light flashed, it died away. When everyone opened their eyes, Wei Zhongxian no longer had a trace of qi. In this instant, he was truly dead. He returned again several hundred years into the past, a ghost going back to the netherworld.

Shortly afterwards, he was like a marionette cut from its strings, plummeting down with a rumble!

SPLASH!!! In the pond water, a person-tall ocean spray splashed up! Wei Zhongxian had once been dismembered into five parts. This time, his extremities completely separated! There was no further black qi connection among them.

“Amitabha...” Fahui’s face revealed a mournful color. He glanced at all the copper men on the lotus leaves who had already died in battle. He turned towards the corpse puppet on the lake’s surface: “You ought to descend to the eighteenth layer of hell.”

“Daofather above...” Xuan Chengzi was the sole survivor among Greenwall’s Four Swords. His grieved expression carried a sliver of relief, and he sighed deeply. He closed his eyes and meditated, saying no more.

Rustle rustle rustle! Endless brilliance still spiraled in the sky, charging straight to the horizon. It was similar to fluttering spirit butterflies. Everyone beared a terribly complex feeling, and they watched the unleashed light pillar of qi revolve in the sky.

At this moment, time and space seemed to halt. Among the people still alive, a sensation of escaping mortal danger was spontaneously born.

Victory... Victory! They... had survived from the hands of an old initial-stage Foundation Establishment monster! Experiencing the five Heavenly Opening divine abilities, they survived in the end! From among a thousand, only ten remained! However, they stood staunchly until the end!

“We won?” Zhao Wuye sluggishly stood on a lotus leaf, trembling all over as he surveyed the scene.

“Huff...” Mao Ba’er, Zhao Ziqi, Li Zongyuan, Quan Ningyue, and Fang Cheng sighed in relief in this moment. Without the slightest hesitation, they all collapsed on their lotus leaf.

“We survived... Great...” Fang Cheng glanced at the oppressively black sky and finally closed his eyes. He could no longer hold on.

The scene was calmly dreadful. After an unknown passage of time, Fahui stood up and bowed deeply towards Xu Yangyi: “Benefactor, Mount Song’s Shaolin Temple will remember this grace.”

Xuan Chengzi’s gaze flashed. Fahui actually came from Mount Song? It was no wonder... that he could endure for such a long time!

However, this thought merely flashed in his mind. He struggled to stand up and also bowed deeply: “Xuan Chengzi... In place for the deceased Qing Jingzi, Wu Weizi, and Ling Xiaozi, I offer my thanks to Fellow Daoist...”

“Thank you, Fellow Daoist... for avenging this poor Daoist’s three apprentice brothers.”

Sister Nine and Yi Old Five didn’t speak. Their eyes narrowed into slits, and they deeply eyed Xu Yangyi. They took his silhouette and branded it in their hearts. Afterwards, they shut their eyes.

They were unwilling to have this man as an enemy. Not only did he treat his foes mercilessly, but he was likewise merciless to himself!

I really don’t know... At the same time Sister Nine closed her eyes, she noiselessly sighed. She truly did not know... where on earth this monster came from...

Currently, none were aware that underwater, the last chain on a shadow body—a red chain—loudly crumbled apart! The four other Buddha wheels on the chains were all eliminated.

Below the water, it was quiet. Very quiet.

An unknown amount of time passed. Countless air bubbles slowly floated up from underwater. Soundless and silent, unknowing and unaware...

On the water's surface, Xu Yangyi laid down on top of the Chasing Skylark. The pain of his severed arm tormented each of his nerves. Nonetheless, he didn't have too much time to feel pain. Xuan Chengzi and Fahui bowed to him. He accepted and to accept was a proper matter. Looking to his heart, there was no shame; a clear conscience.

If it weren't for him, not a single person present was capable of surviving! But right now, he had an even more important matter to do!

The Animus Armament. At this moment, his long-cherished wish had finally come full circle. For it, he hadn't hesitated to find Daomaster Jadewave and look for an expert archeologist. In order to solve its mystery, he didn't hesitate to personally enter the bottom of Danxia Temple. At long last, now was the time to unravel all of its secrets.

Suddenly, the half box on his chest emitted a golden light that filled the sky. With a swooshing noise, it flew away from his chest by itself! In the next second, this golden light transformed from a sliver into a domain! Ultimately, it actually covered as far as the eye could see!

Swish swish swish... In the sky's curtain, violet talismans all around had already become a backdrop. In this instant, boundless golden light sprinkled down. They were cheering and in high spirits, endlessly happy for reuniting after a thousand years!

The screen of golden light slowly fluctuated in the sky. It was transparent, pure, and holy... but carried an inviolable mighty pressure. It was akin to a god's descent.

Boom... From some unknown place, the gentle sound of a wooden fish echoed. Afterwards, the entire sky silently but audibly rang out with a stretch of wooden fish sounds.

In the scene, the corpse was scattered across a hundred meters. However, following the emergence of these wooden fish sounds

and their slow beating... the bloody air surprisingly grew weak. The tension of battle was unconsciously brushed away from the heart and replaced with a kind of post-fight tranquility and spiritual purity.

Swoosh... In the wake of these wooden fish noises, a white character appeared in the sky little by little. It wasn't large, but it was able to occupy the human eye. It wasn't magnificent, but it was able to cover a person's spirit.

This character carried a mysterious charm that anyone, including cultivators, were unable to describe with words. It was like an ink painting unhurriedly spreading open.

Xu Yangyi's gaze slightly flashed. He hadn't expected that the two parts of the Animus Armament united could actually give rise to such a scene. Studying the already faintly discernible character in the sky, he couldn't help but read it aloud: "Dao... Dao?"

However, following his recital of this word, the entire space started to tremble! It was different from Wei Zhongxian's divine abilities from just now. This time... there wasn't any divine ability! This word had caused space to shake! It was as if Danxia Temple was unable to bear this word!

"This is!" Originally, Fahui already looked like he was soon to die. Once he saw this scene, he suddenly jumped up with a strength that was unknown in origin, swooshing! Cold sweat slid down from his forehead drop by drop. His entire monk robe was swelling by itself in the absence of the wind! He watched everything before him incredulously!

"Huff... This... This is... T-this is impossible... I-It's only a legend..." At this moment, Xuan Chengzi forcibly braced his heavily wounded body and jumped up. He felt his heart speeding up into wild palpitations!

They came from the three great ancient sects. There were some old secret tales passed down through the successive generations.

The time was too long. Never had anyone witnessed them, and they had already become legend!

“Dao Realm...” Xuan Chengzi’s entire body was shivering. Without warning, he devoutly kneeled on his flying magik artifact. His voice was hoarse and his face revealed zealotry: “D-Disciple Xuan Chengzi! I respectfully welcome the Emperor Armament of Daoism coming into the world!!!”

Thud thud thud! This wasn’t the sound of wooden fish. Instead, Xuan Chengzi was kowtowing on his magik artifact as if his life depended on it. Blood quickly flowed down from his forehead, yet he was totally unaware!

Animus Armament... These two words emerged in Xuan Chengzi’s and Fahui’s hearts.

This... was the worldly anomaly of an Animus Armament’s true emergence... Fortunately... Fortunately this was the bottom of Danxia Temple! Otherwise, if this harmonized in the outside world, all above Foundation Establishment would be able to see this strange phenomenon!

All that filled Xuan Chengzi’s eyes was Xu Yangyi’s figure. All that remained in his heart was a believer’s hot blood. Presently, even if Xu Yangyi wanted him to die, he wouldn’t make a noise! Knocking against his magik artifact, he abruptly recalled something. He quickly spat out a mouthful of blood and a blood-dyed silver sword-core that made a humming noise.

He was already looking towards Fahui with an obvious murderous aura. However, the murderous aura in Fahui’s eyes was no less than his!

Moments ago, the two super sects had exerted all power to collaborate. But now that the Animus Armament had come into being, a struggle of orthodoxies came under way!

“I truly didn’t expect...” Fahui coughed out a mouthful of blood:

“That Fellow Daoist Xu... was actually hiding an Animus Armament on his person...”

“No need for more words.” In this instant, Xuan Chengzi and Fahui were burning their lives. Xuan Chengzi waved, and his sword core droned and flew in front of him: “In the struggle of orthodoxies, there is nothing more but war.”

“If you want to lay hands on Fellow Daoist Xu, you’ll have to step over this poor Daoist’s corpse!”

Fahui’s expression was gloomy. Never had he expected this... He absolutely hadn’t! At the bottom of Danxia Temple, Wei Zhongxian’s corpse actually concealed such an item! In his present state, he wasn’t Xu Yangyi’s and Xuan Chengzi’s opponent any means!

As for Xuan Chengzi, he steeled his heart to protect Xu Yangyi.

As he had said, he would go on until death put him to an end!

Chapter 228: Danxia Temple (47)

“Benefactor need not be excited.” Fahui gritted his teeth and said: “Maybe... this isn’t an Emperor Armament of Daoism?”

“All of us are smart people.” Xuan Chengzi sneered. Immediately, rays of spiritual light rose up from his seven apertures: “The body and Dao has united. Damn my minor measures. Fahui, you’re getting nowhere.”

“There’s also what I said. If you want to make a move against Fellow Daoist Xu, you’ll have to walk over this poor Daoist’s corpse first!”

Fahui looked towards Xu Yangyi, his expression seemingly calm.

What was to be done? What state was he in? Not to speak of Xuan Chengzi at the side and his own present condition, he absolutely wasn’t capable of being Xu Yangyi’s opponent if he made a move. That moreover wasn’t mentioning that this was Xu Yangyi’s Animus Armament! What kind of might it possessed was unknown!

Getting out alive... and reporting all of this to the sect was the best option. The struggle of orthodoxies was vastly crueller than the massacre of the battlefield! In a broad observation of history, the three schools of Buddhism, Daoism, and Confucianism had vied against each other for several thousand years. If one school gained supremacy, it was a wholehearted mercy not to eradicate the other two schools while leaving no chicken or dog behind.

In his time of incomparable hesitation, a ray of golden light also flew out from the place where Wei Zhongxian’s corpse was in the water!

Buzz... In the wake of this profound sound, the golden light arrived below Xu Yangyi’s feet. It soon scattered into a brilliance that filled the sky. In the blink of an eye, a giant black-white Taiji

slowly revolved with Xu Yangyi as its core!

“This is...” Xu Yangyi’s gaze glimmered. He saw that he... was situated at the Taiji’s center. Yet in the eyes of the Taiji’s Yin and Yang, the Animus Armament’s upper and lower parts were likewise following the Taiji’s unhurried spinning!

At this moment, it appeared like a dragon pearl that two azure dragons revolved around at the center. In the wake of each of this Taiji diagram’s revolutions, the upper and lower parts of the Animus Armament emitted two kinds of completely different black and white radiances. It seemed to cup apart Yin and Yang. Along with each glimmer of this brilliance, four manifestations no less than several tens of meters tall solidified unhurriedly outside the Taiji diagram!

The Azure Dragon, the White tiger, the Vermilion Bird, and the Black Tortoise!

As these four manifestations vaguely appeared, the gold curtain in the sky surprisingly fell down little by little and formed golden Eight Trigrams!

“The Taiji gives birth to Yin and Yang... Yin and Yang give birth to the Four Divisions... the Four Divisions give birth to the Eight Trigrams...” Xuan Chengzi’s blood was already boiling. His pale face welled up with a red flush, and he violently coughed: “This... is the Emperor Armament’s own choice... It chose Fellow Daoist Xu...”

As far as the eye could see, the violet talismans in the sky utterly darkened. It was incapable of being compared to the nature of the golden light. The talisman formation that covered the sky was unexpectedly like a backdrop.

In all the places that the eye reached, the resplendent golden light was like the arrival of a divine kingdom. Below, the enormous Eight Trigrams rotated. The golden light and the Eight Trigrams appeared to form heaven and earth, man and all things.

Amidst this silence, the upper and lower halves of the Animus Armament respectively dwelled in the eyes of the Yin and Yang. In the end, they released an extremely joyous and soft cry. Following a dinging noise, the two parts of the Animus Armament shot out from two opposing directions. Above Xu Yangyi's head, a supremely holy and pure halo blossomed!

“Uniting the Dao... The Dao has been united...” Xuan Chengzi was so excited that his complexion was flushed red: “I didn't expect... I never expected... that the ancient legends were actually true! I, Xuan Chengzi, truly witnessed this scene in a year of my life!”

From head to toe, he trembled over and over like sifting chaft. However, his gaze never relaxed over Fahui.

Fahui's expression was ashen, but he didn't move at all.

“This is... the harmonization of body and the Dao... The Animus Armament... really isn't a rumor... Back then when the abbot had me take note of it, he merely skimmed over it. He probably didn't even expect that this legend was true... Yes, yes... if it wasn't true why would the ancient texts record this detail?”

Huuuuuummm... In the white light, a small fine object billowed up and down. In the wake of each of its rotations... a second character emerged in the sky!

It was like smoke and mist, hazy and indistinct. It was similar to looking at flowers in a fog, but everyone could clearly see what this character was.

Scripture!

Dao Scripture!

This was the true secret concealed by the Animus Armament!

“Dao Scripture...” Xu Yangyi deeply studied the anomaly that colored the sky at the bottom of Danxia Temple. This was a secret belonging to him, accompanying him amidst the most difficult

beginning of his journeyed cultivation time. Yet from the start, he didn't understand its details, even with Daomaster Jadewave's decryption and the deduction of humanity's specialists. Nonetheless, everything was like looking at flowers through mist, a full moon in the water. All along, a layer of muslin stood in between.

But now... the Animus Armament had been completed at long last! Its hidden secret was finally about to emerge before him.

Swoosh! A golden light pillar suddenly descended from the sky! Without the slightest deviation, it shrouded Xu Yangyi's body! He didn't even have time to return from his lamentations and was immediately enveloped within this light beam!

Boom! A golden light wave suddenly flashed from where Xu Yangyi was standing! In the wake of each inch of space that the light wave blew over, everything went static! The water's surface... ceased to ripple. The fish underwater oddly froze in place. Everyone's breathing and heartbeat stilled!

Just as Fahui was raised his hand to do something, his hand hung suspended in midair like so. His kasaya rustled and lifted upwards because of the qi burst from the white light-wave. Yet at this moment, the robe was strangely floating in the air. His entire person was like a statue.

Xuan Chengzi's gaze cast a sideways glance at Fahui, His sword core revolved around his finger but now completely stopped. Even his eyes no longer circled about.

The others, Mao Ba'er, Li Zongyuan, and Quan Ningyue maintained their original states, standing in place. In this twinkling, between heaven and earth, no one could move.

The idea of "movement" had been erased... Not only was it people, but this domain's idea of movement had been expunged!

Presently, apart from Xu Yangyi, everyone else's consciousness of

“movement” had been wiped out. At the same time, the small box finally exhibited its true appearance in the white light! It wasn’t a box... As the two parts of the Animus Armament united as one, what emerged... was a silver-white sword!

The sword wasn’t big but rather small. It was only about half of his forearm in size, and its entire body was pitch-black. In addition, not only was it small, it was also exceptionally narrow. At most, it was only as wide as half of his finger. However, there were actually countless complex designs carved upon this narrow range!

“This... is your true form?” Xu Yangyi didn’t immediately go and take the sword. Instead, he carefully began to examine it. Even if he was totally inept regarding history, he still made out the flowery designs on the small sword. Each and every one of them were of an even more ancient script, to the extent that they were awfully distant from modern characters. The designs carried a kind of unrestrained flavor, absolutely unlike the constantly perfected feeling of the Great Ming Palace.

But most importantly... was its aura!

If said, the surface of the Animus Armament was attached with profound mystery, resentment, and an indescribable imperial prestige. In such a case, this sword was instead like an unpolished gem returned to its natural form. From among myriad feelings, there existed only three words for this initial sensation.

Murderous aura!

Bravery!

Supremely pure and honest but also concentrated to an extreme.

“This isn’t a sword...” Xu Yangyi ultimately walked forward and gently grasped the sword floating in the sky: “This is a dagger.”

As he held this sword, his eyes suddenly shook. It was because in this mere instant, endless characters frantically rushed into his mind!

“This is...” Sudden in arrival, an enormous quantity of information caused him to go dizzy. A type of vomiting feeling was born without warning. Forcibly suppressing his brain’s vertigo, he immediately began to examine these characters. Regardless, as soon as he looked, they caused his gaze to quickly burn! He studied the blade in his hand incredulously!

He closed his eyes. His heaving chest served to prove how unsettled his current mood was. In the past, he had thought that half of the Animus Armament had granted him such a great killing tool like the Eternal Alchemy Canon. Now, he had abandoned his right arm and braved the danger of his life ending and Dao vanishing by entering Danxia Temple’s bottom. What kind of item would arise from both parts of the Animus Armament uniting?

He had made many conjectures, but he absolutely hadn’t expected that this grand gift would be so generous! It was so much that it made up for the lost of his left arm, the price of his body sustaining heavy wounds!

“Immortal Foundation Pill...” After ages, he opened his eyes, took a deep breath, and tightly clenched his fists: “It can allow one at Foundation Establishment to cast an immortal platform foundation... It can be said to be the perfection of Foundation Establishment... What is an immortal platform? What is the meaning of perfect Foundation Establishment?”

This was the first thing he saw. However... the characters in his mind didn’t stop at this by any means!

“Eternal Pill... A medicinal pill compatible with the Eternal Alchemy Canon. The Eternal Alchemy Canon doesn’t need the ingestion of medicinal pills. After Foundation Establishment, the inner body’s qi furnace is completely formed. It can withdraw the essence of spirit stones and directly absorb this qi... The cost is very great... Usually, a country nurtures an Eternal Alchemy Canon cultivator, but the higher the realm of this art, the greater the might. After Core Formation, there is even more of a

transformation, enough to rise above same-realm cultivators by at least thirty percent...”

The Eternal Pill is an essential medicinal pill for a cultivator cultivating the Eternal Alchemy Canon... It can accelerate the speed of the smelting fire within the qi sea and upgrade it by a level...” Xu Yangyi sighed: “So that’s how it is... after Foundation Establishment, the furnace system is considered fully completed. It’s no surprise that I’m still cultivating via ordinary meditation right now.”

THIS was the very first thing he paid attention to, but presently, he didn’t just have these two pill formulas in his mind! On the contrary there was no less than several tens!

Each kind of effect could even be said to be a direct cure for an illness! It seemed ordinary, but to a Qi Condensation cultivator, it happened to cut above the gate of life! For example, the Spirit Drawing Pill that was capable of increasing a cultivator’s cultivation speed or the Spirit Eating pill that allowed one to concentrate on absorbing a certain kind of qi. And it was also like... the Insight Pill that could allow spiritual sense to explosively increase by 20%.

But most importantly... none of these pills... had side effects! There was a vast number of formulas like trees in a forest. He counted no less than thirty pill formulas. It didn’t look to be much but it spread open the quintessence of the Qi Condensation realm!

Oddly enough, it was only limited to the Qi Condensation realm, but if it was merely this, it still wouldn’t be enough to excite him. Although pill formulas were good, it wasn’t like he couldn’t collect them now. But... the next item was where the true stirring of his heart laid!

Divine abilities!

Altogether... there were nine divine abilities. This amount couldn’t be regarded as much, but their quality was frighteningly

high! They could be said to be the abilities most worth of learning in the Qi Condensation realm!

In particular... these nine divine abilities had actually been arranged into a set by someone! At first, these nine completely different divine abilities seemed to be compiled together, but later on, there was surprisingly a connection between them. These skills truly formed a whole system!

The Nine Glorious Stars Descent! [\[1\]](#)

This was the system name of these nine divine abilities

“Whose doing was this?” Xu Yangyi’s gaze twinkled. To be capable of forming so many seemingly different divine abilities together, perhaps this character’s comprehension towards the word “cultivation” was already infinitely profound. Furthermore, their utilization of qi had reached the apex. He asked himself and came to a conclusion that even his master-ancestor, Ancientpine, wouldn’t be able to accomplish this as well!

At the very least... after the Nation’s Founding, during the publicly accepted End of Days, a Core Formation master was never heard to have created a divine ability. In addition, that wasn’t to mention that these divine abilities of nine almighty figures harmonized together.

The reason why Xu Yangyi affirmed it to be nine almighty figures was because the first ranked of these nine abilities... was the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions!

[1] A tricky bit about doing some names in Archfiend is that their based on actual religious/ancient concepts. The “Glorious Stars” might be actually referring to one of the old seven planets labeled in pre-modern astrology (Sun, Moon, Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter Saturn), but the fact that it is “Nine” might be referring to something in Fengshui (Chinese Geomancy) known as Nine Star Qi.

Chapter 229: Danxia Temple (48)

“There really is a Sixth Erosion, not just five!” Xu Yangyi suppressed the excitement in his heart and pondered: “But... I can only see this move’s cultivation method. I can’t clearly see the names and cultivation methods of the remaining eight divine abilities whatsoever. Is it because my realm isn’t enough? Or do I need to meet some condition?”

Nonetheless... to be able to learn this divine ability was already sufficient to break even!

What left him with the deepest impression during this Danxia Temple journey was that his hidden aces were still too few in contrast to the great clans and the three great powers.

Xuan Chengzi and Fahui were able to hold on for so long under Wei Zhongxian’s terrible divine abilities. All their cards had been exhausted. As for him, he had turned over and flipped back several times in such a manner. However, once he mastered the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions, his trumps could be considered to greatly increase! At the same time, it could even be said that his killing ability would be absolutely different!

This divine ability truly wasn’t something that Wei Zhongxian or a Foundation Establishment cultivator could be said to fully use. The characteristic of a dead-soul reincarnated corpse puppet was that some almighty figure was able to forcibly infuse the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions into Wei Zhongxian’s body!

In other words... this divine ability was like Azure Dragon Seeks Cauldron and the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus, able to follow realm and strengthen in power. If he used it now, in no way could he do so like that almighty figure. Within hundreds of thousands of square kilometers, winds and clouds changed. Nonetheless... he was already impatient to test what the might of this devastating divine ability was like in his hands!

“If I can reach the power of the mighty figure behind Wei Zhongxian...” His gaze flashed, and he looked towards the small sword with boundless expectation: “Core Formation? Or maybe... Nascent Soul? Anyways... ” He licked his lips excitedly: “The Smelting God’s Treasure Mirror... might actually have to be tried out a bit.”

In case the Eternal Alchemy Canon’s four great divine abilities and the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions were fused, the emerging divine ability would be a signboard for him, Xu Yangyi, a divine ability unique to himself!

It was unknown how long he looked at these characters. They embraced every manifestation of nature, not only his current scarceness of divine abilities and medicinal pills but moreover four classes of apex arcane efforts!

The so-called apex... The four words clearly illustrated on the surface almost moved his heart.

Directly reach Nascent Soul!

Immediately, he restrained this fluctuation. Leaving aside the danger of changing arcane efforts, his meridians had already transformed into such an odd state. The greatest question was whether or not he could even reconstruct them.

Especially... since the Eternal Alchemy Canon’s author was the half-immortal Wei Boyang. In that distant ancient cultivation era of the Eastern Han, Xu Yangyi was in no way convinced that Nascent Soul was Wei Boyang’s summit.

This was a gamble, but he was perfectly delighted to make this bet.

The Violet Cloud Expanse, the Supreme Heaven Defiance Canon, the Heaven-Earth Law, and the Great Dream True Scripture! These were the names of the four heart arts.

“Although I can’t use them now... when I reach Foundation

Establishment one day, I'll get the fire source, and my internal smelting furnace system will be completely set up. The Eternal Alchemy Canon will fire it up entirely. When the time comes, I'm not even sure what number of spirit stones are going to be consumed... 'A country to nurture a single person'? I still have to plan this out properly first."

Mumbling to himself for a brief moment, he decided not to handle this matter first and also not look at the four heart arts. He believed that merely on the basis of the four words 'directly reach Nascent Soul', these four heart arts were sure to fetch a horrific price at auction!

As his gaze swept over the final row of characters, the world echoed with a gentle swishing sound. The golden curtain in the sky, and the black-white Taiji and the Eight Trigrams on the floor seemed to have never existed. Everything vanished from the area.

The lotus sea was still the lotus sea. The appearance of the flowers was as before. The ocean surface was still same.

Fahui's fingers gently shook twice. Afterwards, his eyeballs also started to turn about. For the first time, he felt something was wrong. He suddenly looked at Xu Yangyi.

"It... disappeared?" His voice warbling, he gasped coldly. He gazed at the sky and ocean surface incredulously.

How was this possible... Moments ago, the golden light screen pervaded the entire firmament and the black-white Eight Trigrams Taiji was on the ground... This was clearly an omen of an Animus Dao-Armament emerging! However... why had it disappeared?

He pursed his lips. His face was seemingly calm, but his eyes were in fact already searching everything in the environment.

On the other side, Xuan Chengzi likewise dared not believe in his eyes. He was certain that he hadn't blinked, but currently, all the anomalies had actually vanished into nothingness.

Not only was it these two, but Quan Ningyue, Zhao Wuye, Mao Ba'er, and Zhan Twelve looked all around in amazement. Nobody knew what had just occurred.

“Just now...” Zhao Wuye looked at Mao Ba'er, a bit suspicious of himself: “I...”

“You're not mistaken.” Mao Ba'er's canine eyes twinkled. In front of him, he gravely studied the seemingly unchanged world: “Nobody's mistaken... It's just that... our ‘memories’ were just ‘frozen’. So... right now, a couple of hours might've already passed for us or just a minute.”

“How is that...”

“Nothing is impossible...” Mao Ba'er narrowed his eyes and said: “I was just thinking about making a mark. You know, this posture is very coy. I just raised my third leg up... but now, my back leg is aching like it's cramping! Based on my decades of marking perception, only this kind of possibility exists.”

“Don't forget where this is. In this place, nothing is impossible. Only unexpected.”

Zhao Wuye sighed deeply and nodded. He came to realization: “The mark you said you made is...”

Mao Ba'er gently coughed, his expression somewhat awkward: “All I did was pee a little... This is just the habit of a dog's life... Can't you not ask about the this technique's specifics?!”

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. Instead, he pensively stood in his original position. He carefully recollected everything. From Danxia Temple's hundred streams forming an image, to the lotus leaves that rushed out, and to the Animus Armament's throbbing... He closed his eyes and gently stroked his storage ring. Inside, the white dagger was silently reclining.

Finished... Everything had come to a conclusion...

The Animus Armament was finally made whole, but while a

single puzzle of the countless riddles of Danxia Temple's inner temple appeared to be solved, nothing in fact had been unraveled.

The Animus Armament... In the end... where did it come from? In that story, why were there so many murals of the white snake? Who was at the bottom of Danxia Temple? Who carved the Yellow Springs path? Who had constructed the thousand-meter altar? Who was the "she" that Wei Zhongxian had spoke of before he died? Who was the "me" in "save me"? And what of the person who had sealed Wei Zhongxian? Or perhaps... it was Wei Zhongxian himself?

Most importantly... Danxia Temple's inner temple offered no true answer towards the Animus Armament's true secret. This caused him to feel as if he had a fish bone lodged in his throat, unable to spit out this displeasure.

"It'll do me no good." He inhaled deeply and shook his head: "With my realm right now, there are still some questions that I'm better off not looking into."

At this time, a figure arrived at his side. Seeing that Xu Yangyi was contemplating, this person didn't speak and moreover didn't disturb him. On the contrary, he stood there with great respect. He was like the most capable bodyguard. His movements were already as gentle as possible, but in this place, no one was able to truly rest their heart.

"Fellow Daoist." Xu Yangyi forcibly severed his thoughts and raised a brow: "Is something the matter?"

Although Xuan Chengzi had already suffered heavy wounds to his body, he was half-kneeling on his flying sword with incredible respect: "I, Xuan Chengzi, hope to pledge allegiance under Fellow Daoist's banner. No matter what order!"

Xu Yangyi didn't state his position on the matter. Xuan Chengzi's sudden display of loyalty wasn't in his forecast. However, he could roughly guess the gist of things.

Dao Scripture... Dao Scripture... Since it carried the word “Dao”, in all likelihood... Xuan Chengzi knew a few things...

Yet regardless of what he knew, Xu Yangyi was in no willing to speak to the other. In any case, he was even more skeptical towards Xuan Chengzi’s loyalty. Greenwall Mountain! One of the Daoism’s Three Great Ancestral Halls! The cultivation Dao-sanctum of Celestial Daofather Zhang!

Xuan Chengzi was one of the First Mountain’s Four Mountain-Protector Swords and also an inheritor. Yet all of a sudden, he expressed to Xu Yangyi that he wished to join under the Xingtian Legion?

What status could the Xingtian Legion be said to possess in comparison to one of Daoism’s Three Great Ancestral Halls? Perhaps a mountain elder’s pinky could crush a provincial branch of the Featherwood Guard.

Xu Yangyi still didn’t speak. All of a sudden, his gaze flashed.

“Fellow Daoist.”

Just as he spoke to Xuan Chengzi, Xuan Chengzi immediately cupped his hands and said: I dare not. In the future, Fellow Daoist can just directly call out my humble name.”

Xu Yangyi nodded noncommittally: “Just now, did you see the violet talisman formations in the sky flash?”

Without any consideration, Xuan Chengzi promptly raised his head and studied the sky. After several seconds of quiet examination, he shook his head: “Not once... No...”

Before his voice even fell, the violet formations in the sky flashed all together!

Fahui quickly raised his head and gazed cautiously at the sky. Apart from the dead and the unconscious, everyone else lifted up their heads.

After just recently undergoing the great battle against Wei Zhongxian, everyone held lingering fear in their hearts. If a monster like Wei Zhongxian appeared again this time... none of them would be getting out alive!

Swish... Swish... In the sky itself, there was a violet formation that covered the entire firmament. However, since everyone had entered, it hadn't pulsed once. It was like a dazzling background, yet at this moment... it stirred for the first time!

Streaks of resplendent violet light wandered about in the entire formation! After that transient flash, the formation's radiance actually started to slowly turn weak!

"Does Fellow Daoist know of this formation? Xu Yangyi asked lowly. His whole body didn't have much qi remaining, but it was now beginning to fully condense.

"No." In the same vein, Xuan Chengzi was cautious. A sword core spiraled and darted around the duo. At the same time, Fahui's gaze congealed without warning, and he stood in place as if a devil entered him. He was silent for a long time... He soon began to shiver all over!

Beads of visible cold sweat flowed down from the top of his head. His lips were trembling, and his face was like white paper. It seemed that he wanted to say something, but from beginning to end, nothing was said.

After several seconds, he turned his head around as if he had gone crazy. Presently, he, who had never lost composure, was shouting himself hoarse: "Run!!! RUN AWAY!!! Leave this place!!!"

"Why run away?" At this time, just as his voice fell, a woman's voice abruptly echoed throughout the entire space. "This Palace has just only escaped. You're the first living people that I've seen in thousands of years. Wouldn't it be too much of a failure of etiquette if everyone left like this?"

“Besides... if all of you leave, how will I repay everyone’s kindness in rescuing me?” Each of her words, each of her sentences caused the entire space to quake! This desolate voice was heard from everywhere around. It was like a giant was talking to everyone. Following these words, the lotuses in the lotus sea all bloomed in an instant!

A delicate fragrance wafted into everyone’s noses, but they simply weren’t of mind to appreciate it. Shortly afterwards, the wick of each lotus ignited with a finger-sized azure flame!

Swish swish swish... It was similar to the Lantern Festival. In a twinkling, the area had become brightly lit through the illumination of bewitching azure flames!

An azure-jade color shined amidst the lotuses, taking the snowy-pink lotuses and dying them into a faint-azure domain as far as the eye could see. In the last second, the lotuses even resembled an immortal realm, yet in the next, they seemed to be like a long avenue of ghost lanterns!

Without delay, Xuan Chengzi coldly shivered, his face reflecting an azure color. Not daring to believe, he gazed all around and said tremblingly: “Words... Words arrive and arts follow?!”

Chapter 230: Danxia Temple (49)

“What the hell is this thing?!” In an instant, Mao Ba’er started to jump, and the fur all over his body stood on edge. He looked at the surroundings in fright.

Zhao Wuye took Zhao Ziqi behind him and protected him. He was wet with cold sweat. Releasing all of his spiritual sense, he felt everything in the environment.

Nothing... There was nothing! There wasn’t the slightest indication of a spiritual-force fluctuation in the environment. It seemed as if this scene had never occurred!

Fahui appeared to lose his soul and sat down with a thump. It would’ve been better had he not sensed anything... In that instant moments ago, he felt a qi like that of a devil god! Perhaps... this demon truly hadn’t met anyone in too long, or perhaps... it was because this entity deliberately revealed this qi. Nonetheless, that shred was enough to kill him a billion times over!

After ages, his complexion grew ashy-white as he shivered while joining his hands together. He murmured: “Buddha above...”

Silence... After ten seconds, the flames in the lotuses suddenly leapt up several meters high! Each lotus flower was akin to an ancient lamp! Now, this area was like the inside of the desolate imperial palace, not a soul in sight. All that remained was a room full of azure lanterns accompanied by a palace maid—her face unseen—and an azure lamp with an ancient Buddha statue.

Such tranquility constrained the deathly stillness of the heart. It didn’t bring serenity but rather great terror in silence!

All of Xu Yangyi’s spiritual force cycled to the peak. He was the same as Fahui. Just now... he had also captured a wisp of desperate qi! It wasn’t that he hadn’t met a high-level cultivator, but even the the gathering of twelve Core Formation on that day hadn’t

given him such pressure! It seemed... that so long as he felt this spiritual pressure, his entire body would be crushed!

Buuuuzzz... In the wake of the countless azure lotuses igniting with flame, they transformed from a speck on the ocean surface into an azure fire sea. In the sky, all the violet talismans collapsed with a rumble!

Rustle rustle rustle... A sound like rain echoed. A beam of violet light carrying a violet talisman fell down. Immediately, there was a second beam... a third beam... an endless number of beams!

In a fleeting moment, the sky rained down like a meteor shower! All the talismans fell at the same time and transformed into violet qi, vanishing. Nevertheless, the enormous secret realm's super formation collapsed. It appeared as if there was a violet meteor shower descending! With the azure fire lotuses below, a picture scroll of hell was reflected!

In the night, fireworks blossom along the eastern wind in the style of a thousand trees. Further blowing and falling, starry fire falls like rain. [\[1\]](#)

“This is...”

No one knew why... but all of them understood the connection of the words that the female voice had just spoken.

“The seal... The seal has shattered...” Xuan Chengzi watched the stars falling in the sky like rain, shocked. In this moment, there was no one that didn't understand. “The bottom of Danxia Temple... was sealing a creature... A catastrophic thing...”

“It... strew the corpses of all who entered across Danxia Temple... It also caused Ancestor Ancientpine to retreat without any merits in that year... This... is Danxia Temple's true... final secret...” He painfully closed his eyes: “We... were too naive...”

Quan Ningyue looked at the sky lifelessly. She hadn't sensed the spiritual pressure just now, but even so, she knew that the current

situation had already become hopeless.

It wasn't important whether or not it was felt... What was important... was how could something suppressed for so many years possibly be simple?

“God..” Mao Ba'er gulped many times, dumb as a wooden chicken: “I don't want to become fish food...”

Glub... Glub... At the same time that stars fell down in the sky like rain, a series of air bubbles gurgled up from under the water!

Immediately, in this five-thousand-meter region without any lotuses or lotus leaves, violently surging waves rushed forth without limit. They squeezed down towards the central region with great speed.

In an instant, not needing a second, the waves had already rose upwards from several meters to ten meters! There were even waves at a hundred meters! It could be said to be the peak of a giant wave!

Rushing tides reached the sky and stormy waves swept the earth. The vast snowy earth flattens and shifts, and the silver mountain presses down in surging chaos. Grand might echoes like racing thunder and fiercely bubbling waves curl towards the summit like snow. Cold like spring jade, billowing akin to the cry of a bow. Touching stone, vast azure waters spray out shattered jade. Water rushes back to the vast maelstrom. [\[2\]](#)

Boom! Heaven-flooding waves smashed the ocean surface over and over. Stones were in disarray and clouds fell to ruin. Raging waves battered against the shore. Afterwards, another spraying peak transformed into a thousand snowfalls scattering. It formed an indescribable torrential downpour. Amidst the rainstorm that filled the sky, an incomparably gigantic vortex slowly took shape in the water!

Screaming and spinning... it seemed as if the door to hell had

opened! Even the edges of their lotus leaves suffered. However, the lotus leaf that they were standing on wasn't affected.

“God...” Zhao Wuye's lips were trembling, and he looked at the incomparably gigantic maelstrom before his eyes. At this moment, the power of nature appeared boundlessly majestic. As long as anyone entered this vortex, the only end was to be pulverized!

“Heavens...” Mao Ba'er's mind was in chaos. His eyes wide and tongue tied, he watched this scene in front.

Strange noises resounded from the vortex's bottom. After ten seconds, a loud rumbling followed! A water pillar, no less than several thousand meters wide, madly rushed out from the vortex! But... the water pillar wasn't the only thing to charge upwards! There was also... the infinite number of fish! They blotted out the sky and concealed the earth!

In the wake of the maelstrom's rising jubilation, azure fishes jumped out from the water's surface. After falling, they charged up and fell down again, the cycle returning to the beginning. It appeared to form a fountain of fish!

Time seemed to still in this moment. There was no speaking and breathing. There wasn't even the beating of a heart. Everyone's eyes saw that among the fish, under the binding of millions of azure carps, there was a giant silhouette that was nearly 5,000 meters long! The scales on its body beared an azure light reflected from azure flame. From the seabed, it leaped upwards!

An incomparably colossal figure occupied everyone's eyes. A pitch-black shadow shrouded everything below in darkness.

Presently, it was a devil god that seemed like a ruler overlooking the world. Due to extreme excitement, its entire bodily spiritual pressure was wildly released! Swoosh swoosh swoosh! It actually became solid! Lotuses and lotus leaves were blown everywhere in disarray! Fiery scars filled the sky! It appeared to swirl up a small typhoon!

“Spiritual... Spiritual pressure solidification... This is spiritual pressure solidification...” In the tempest, Fahui was suddenly blown away along with his flying magik artifact, but unexpectedly, he landed on a lotus leaf. After he stood up, he put his palms together in despair: “Buddha... how could you allow this fiend... to even exist in the world...”

“Is there even someone on Earth... that can subdue It...?”

Xu Yangyi’s pupils suddenly neededled.

This was It... This was definitely It! This was that giant azure carp!

“This...”

“This is...”

“Heavens... what are we looking at...”

“Is this the thing truly hidden at the bottom of Danxia Temple...? We... Is there even someone able to get out alive?”

Everyone’s gazes almost turned lifeless. Regarding Wei Zhongxian, they had still possessed the power and also the heart to fight. But against such a thing... the thought of resistance wasn’t born in anyone whatsoever!

“This... can’t be called a demon. It is... a god...” Xuan Chengzi’s eyes flashed with a wisp of battle intent, but it immediately died away into scattered ash and flying smoke.

As if they were watching a play, the ten people observed everything in front. At this point, resistance was already useless. Nonetheless, this was merely the starting gasp! As this fish soared into the air and jumped several hundred meters into the sky, a joyous screech of finally escaping Its cage was made from the carp’s mouth. Afterwards...

The scales all over the carp’s body began to twinkle with whistling azure light! In the next second, each man-sized scale

transformed into equally large feathers!!! Its fish's mouth also started to turn long and pointed. Its fins grew long as if they would cloak the world! In the blink of an eye, It broke through 5,000 meters in size! Its fins transformed into enormous wings!

The demon's tail fin started to come apart and the scales on Its belly split apart with a swoosh. A hundred meters in size, two giant claws extended. Everyone clearly saw that in less than ten seconds, this azure carp had already transformed...

Into a Kun Peng!!!

The Kun Peng strikes the water for 3,000 li, forming white silk that drives forward like a hundred thousand men! [3]

BOOM! The Kun Peng slammed into the water again. Storms and tsunamis followed. It no longer required the use of any divine ability. Its body Itself was the greatest divine ability!

“Wuuu...” A low cry bearing unconcealable excitement echoed. In the water, a giant tail no less than a thousand meters hoisted up!

“Kun Peng... This is a Kung Peng! This is a Kun Peng!!!” Because of excessive horror, extreme excitement, and great indescribable terror, Zhao Wuye had already lost his voice from screeching: “Such a thing t-t-truly exists! A Kun Peng! A legendary Kun Peng!!!”

“Daofather above...” “Buddha above...” Xuan Chengzi and Fahui spoke in concert. Apart from being entirely shocked, they were already unable to say a word.

In the Northern Dark, there is a fish known as Kun. The Kun is so large that the thousands of li It measures up to is a mystery. It transforms into a bird known as Peng. It is unknown how many thousands of li that the Peng's back is. As It soars and gallops, Its wings are like the hanging clouds of the sky. [4]

In the sky, It was a bird, and in entering the ocean, It was fish. At this moment, a Kun Peng had actually emerged before everyone!

To all of their surprise, none had expected that at the bottom of

Danxia Tempe, such a mythical thing was hidden!!!

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. Although he was also shocked, his heart was prepared because he had already seen It once. He wasn't like the dumbstruck crowd. On the contrary, his entire body's qi was mobilized to the peak.

This was because he saw... that there was still a chain, a golden chain. In the same vein, along with the Kun Peng's leap, this chain was pulled out from the ocean surface! It couldn't be clearly seen how far the chain had been pulled. It made this carp appear to be like a kite set loose from the seabed!

Now still wasn't the time for absolute despair... This azure carp still hadn't been completely freed of Its bindings! Presently... there was a sliver's chance to live, an opportunity to win a minor chance at survival!

Furthermore... Xu Yangyi's gaze was deep. Already, the first of Danxia Temple's several riddles that caused him to feel as if a fish bone stuck in his throat had been solved!

Who had caused Danxia Temple's strange transformations? Apart from It, no one else could accomplish this! Apart from this Kun Peng, who was able to cause the Core Formation ancestors to turn alarmed? Who was able to force the government to seal off Longsu Province?

Perhaps... even the distant and lofty Core Formation ancestors and the Chinese government didn't expect this. As China's Core Formation Dao Masters left to search for Quetzalcoatl, a true Kun Peng was concealed at the bottom of Danxia Temple!

The second... was that giant fish molt!

That... was certainly the fish molt left behind by this azure carp as It evolved into a Kun Peng!

[1] Poem from Southern Song Poet Xin Qiji (1140 - 1207). Describes the scene of many fireworks during the Lantern Festival.

[2] If not obvious this entire section is a poem about tsunamis. Unfortunately, I could not find the poet.

[3] Poem from Song dynasty poet Su Shi (Su Dongpo) (1037 - 1101)

[4] Excerpt from Chinese philosopher Zhuangzi.

Chapter 231: Danxia Temple (50)

At this moment, all the puzzles pieces finally floated up to the water's surface. Following the emergence of Danxia Temple's greatest secret, these puzzles pieces had ultimately formed a splendid drawing.

The ocean surface calmed down again. That leap of casting away Its prison was this Kun Peng's thousand-year longing. As this fervor was stripped away from the Kun Peng's heart, the region eventually regained its death-like silence.

Like a storm had yet to come, the sea appeared tranquil, yet it caused and brewed a heart-shaking aura. After ten seconds, Xu Yangyi's gaze moved. He looked at the ocean surface in astonishment. This was because... a thread of multicolored sunlight fired straight up from underwater!

If said it was merely this strand, there was nothing of it. However... this strand turned from a thousand into a hundred thousand! A million! An endless amount of multicolored sunlight! It seemed that ocean surface had become a sheet of perforated paper. Countless five-colored rays shot out from the seabed and transformed the ocean surface into pure and sparkling multicolored jade! Below, even the areas that were ten meters deep were clearly visible!

“Look fast! W-what is this?!” Zhao wuye dragged his wound-riddled body, and his pupils suddenly needed. He falteringly pointed down below and cried out involuntarily.

Xu Yangyi immediately looked over. Underneath... the titanic silhouette was madly surging in the water. However... at Its side, there was a shadow around three to four times smaller! In the wake of the azure carp's rolling, this figure twisted and circled together with the Kun Peng.

The multicolored sunlight wasn't radiating from the azure carp's

body but rather gushing forth from the slightly smaller shadow! And yet... as this multicolored sunlight grew stronger and stronger... they actually formed incredibly profound sanskrit characters on the ocean surface! Xu Yangyi probed and examined, yet felt his mind and vision turn faint with a glance. It was to the extent his spiritual sense felt waves of stabbing pain.

In the water... two spinning shadows gradually became bigger! In the end, a loud boom followed! An untold number of multicolored talismans were forcibly broken through! The giant figure leaped out again!

Crash. Countless water droplets sprinkled down like raindrops. A massive shadow caused everything to lose color. However, in the instant that the carp leaped out, a black claw wrapped in armor immediately rushed out from endless waters in the wake of a furious roar. The claw clamped down on the azure carp's tail!

“OLD THIEF!!!” The azure carp leaped into the air, Its voice excited. This excitement carried a smidgen of unspeakable fury. The fish could actually speak human speech: “For the last thousand years... if This Palace doesn't grind your bones and scatter them into ash today, my name as the Myriad Waters Demon King will be in vain!!!”

BOOM!!! The claw actually pulled the azure carp back into the water again! In the wake of a loud echo, the water's surface turned over like an endless tide! A giant wave over ten meters tall kicked up!

There was a second person! Everyone looked at the seabed in astonishment. In this place... there wasn't just a Kun Peng! That was surprisingly a second person!

“W-what the heck is this thing?” Underwater, two giant shadows tangled together, fighting against each other and winding about. It was difficult to tell them apart. Quan Ningyue gazed incredulously into water. None would've been able to guess that there was such a

scene at Danxia Temple's bottom!

Nobody said a word. At this moment in the sea, only seven people were still clear-headed. Xu Yangyi, Fang Cheng, Xuan Chengzi, Fahui, Quan Ningyue, Zhao Wuye, and Mao Ba'er. Everyone's gazes assembled on the seemingly transparent seabed, and they constrained their madly beating hearts. They locked their eyes on everything happening in the water.

BOOM!!! A streak of resplendent treasure light flashed at the sea floor. All of a sudden, two rocketing water pillars rushed up at the same time. One of them was swathed with an inexhaustible amount of fish. It was a full 5,000 meters in size! The other was merely less than a thousand meters. Nonetheless, the two water pillars carried a spiritual pressure that pervaded the sky. Both of them were equally matched!

"Gulp..." Xuan Chengzi's Adam's apple trembled, and he kneeled, unable to keep on containing himself. Fahui's complexion was pale. In the same vein, he went soft at the knees and kneeled. Clanging sounds that fell on the ear incessantly followed. Amidst this cascade of water... these people who had experienced the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions were swept again by a devil-god-like spiritual pressure. Apart from Xu Yangyi, not a single person was still able to maintain a standing position!

Even though Xu Yangyi hadn't kneeled, he had no choice but to sit down on a lotus leaf. These two spiritual pressures... transcended all spiritual pressures he had encountered in the past! This included the twelve Core Formation ancestors on the day of the auction! In any case, it was difficult to compare to these two spiritual pressures!

They were simply unlike... a single-leveled organism!

Swoosh! Along with the spiritual pressures rising to the sky, all the lotuses and lotus leaves were collectively flung back! The two spiritual pressures... actually formed a dreadful wind pressure!

Everyone's clothes whistled in the blowing wind!

Nonetheless, amidst the spiritual pressure and soaring water pillars, two eye-piercing radiances, one of them azure and the other golden, suddenly erupted. In the air, they blossomed into two halos of equal resplendence! After a second, two figures emerged in the midair.

Confiding in the void to resist the wind, they trod upon emptiness and ventured!

Over twenty-meters up in the sky at Xu Yangyi's left side, the water pillars surprisingly tumbled downwards like a fountain. As if it was solid, it formed a water chair. On this chair was an icy-visaged woman. Her body was cloaked with a murderous aura, and she sat on the chair with her hand propping up her delicate cheek.

She couldn't be considered very pretty, but she wasn't at all unsightly. She belonged to a kind of second-class beauty. Her eyebrows were like distant black, her lips were like cherries, and her face was like a peach blossom. Her hair was worn in a bun like that of a noble family's young lady, and she wore azure clothing in the style of ancient times. The age that this clothing originated from ought to have been a tad long ago. By no means could it be said to be ornate. At most, it could be regarded as a scholar's simplicity.

However, there was an unknown magik treasure inserted into her chest! The unseen magik treasure in itself was only a pitch-black, thumb-thick chain that extended out. The golden light of sanskrit characters spread forth from the woman's chest. However, the other end of the chain shockingly entered the sleeve of the person who was across.

At the other side... was a monk!

All of his clothing was already tattered to an unimaginable degree, just barely covering his body. His hair and beard were white, and he was old and decrepit. Nonetheless, a magik treasure

was also stuck into his chest!

It was a sword curling with azure qi, ending straight in his chest. A ribbon of silk-like qi extended out from the azure-clothed woman's fingertips.

The sea was a stretch of deathly stillness. Before coming in, no one had witnessed this scene that the Core Formation ancestors had seen. They were simply unaware that there were two monsters below the water!

However, the speculations of the Core Formation ancestors or perhaps the government were completely different. She... wasn't pregnant. The azure carp was in mortal combat with another demon! Thus, both sides appeared difficult to distinguish from each other!

Silence. After ages, the old monk's voice suddenly rang out: "Benefactors, what dynasty is it now?"

Fahui's gaze burned as he looked at the old monk. He was so excited that his voice was trembling: "Amitabha... there are no more dynasties now... It is now 2022. Dare I ask senior which high monk you are of my Buddha Sect?"

Fahui was unable not to be excited. It was no exaggeration to say that the spiritual pressures of this duo were simply akin to devils or gods! Even a sliver or stand caused him to feel his heart quiver! If such a senior returned to the Buddha Sect... then the Three Apex Sects... would quite possibly transform into one supremacy and two vassals!

The old monk glanced at him and faintly nodded: "Amitabha... Benefactors, this poor monk has already suppressed this demon here for almost a thousand years. Slay demons to defend the Dao, this is the true nature of us cultivators."

"Senior's words ring true." Fahui immediately said and joined his hands in prayer. His fingers faintly trembled.

“Have benefactors thought that if this demon king is released now... how will the world change? If I’m not here to suppress her, the cultivation world would be confronted with a great calamity!”

“Hahahaha!” Before the monk’s voice even fell, the woman across from him had already turned upwards and began to laugh: “You old bald donkey, you and I have faced each other for a thousand years. I didn’t even know that you had such an outstanding silver tongue.” [\[1\]](#)

“Amitabha.” The old monk’s expression was peaceful, merely his gaze was like fire. He glanced coldly at the woman: “Benefactors, she and I are both unable to budge right now. All you have to do is pull out the magik treasure in my chest, and I will suppress this demon for all eternity!”

“Ridiculous.” The woman’s smile vanished, and her gaze swept over each person like a blade: “Who dares?”

“Buddha said ‘if I do not enter hell, who can?’. I am surely convinced. In Buddha’s carefulness, there will surely be some junior who understand what is at stake.” The old monk glanced at her indifferently: “I knew long ago that there would be a day where you would escape the prison. On this day, so long as there is a true cultivator who cherishes the common people of the world... you won’t be leaving today.”

The woman looked at him calmly and suddenly raised a brow: “Could it be that that you believe... that all these people were summoned by you?”

“If I wasn’t being suppressed, I’d be able to grind you into flying ash with the stretch of my finger at any time. With your pitiful realm, how could you know of my methods? The woman sneered, and her expression turned grave. Her gaze brushed over each person, and she enunciated each word: “Inheritor of the Animus Armament... what are you still waiting for?”

Everyone’s gazes suddenly looked towards Xu Yangyi. Although

they didn't know what an Animus Armament was, the worldly anomaly from moments ago was still fresh in everyone's minds!

The light of Fahui's eye quickly sparked. His hand extended into his kasaya as if he wanted to take something out. However, he cast a glance and saw Xuan Chengzi also glaring daggers at him. Likewise, Xuan Chengzi's hand extended into his Daoist robe. [\[2\]](#)

In the turn of an eye, Fahui's gaze turned serene again. His hand silently pulled out. Xuan Chengzi did the same.

Along with everyone's gazes, the old monk slowly looked towards Xu Yangyi and nodded: "I don't know what relationship you have with this demon, but this fate is an ominous one. Throughout the endless ages, there has only been one Animus Armament. If not for the extreme unwillingness harbored by a monarch, there is simply no way for it to form. In destiny, blessed lands, and harmony, not a single one can be lacking."

"If benefactor releases this demon, I can only sacrifice my fleshly body. However the world's myriad masses, the cultivation world, and the entire world will fall to chaos because of it. Benefactor, by all means, please hold firm in you heart, Amitabha."

After a deep chant, the monk said no more. At this moment, the man and woman were unable to lift a finger. Like statues, they hovered in midair.

"Spud..." Without almost any consideration, Mao Ba'er said softly: "This demon can't be let out... It's obvious that she still hasn't broken away from the seal. This old monk is clearly the person sealing her. They don't know what the situation is like outside... I don't even want to think what things will be like if she undoes the seal! It's the End of Days now. If a Greater Demon like this appears, it absolutely won't be to humanity's fortune!"

"That's right..." Fang Cheng clutched at his chest and gritted his teeth. He was dripping with cold sweat: "Junior brother... I don't what's her realm... but... It's horrible... It's very horrible! I'm

standing right in front of her... Even if her realm is almost entirely sealed off, I still feel... like I'm a chicken facing a dragon..."

Xu Yangyi was devoid of any expression. In the same vein, nobody urged him. After ten minutes, he finally moved.

Swish... The old monk wordlessly raised an eye and glanced at Xu Yangyi indifferently. The azure-clothed woman pursed her lips, her gaze like fire. She studied Xu Yangyi without the slightest concealment.

"I can agree to your request." Xu Yangyi said softly.

Just as his voice fell, the azure-clothed woman's gaze was like a sharp sword: "You... want to try?"

"Amitabha..." The monk sighed in relief as if he had been freed of a heavy burden: "On behalf of this world... I thank you, young friend."

[1] Actual Chinese: "Silver Tongue" = "Your tongue bursting with lotus flowers". Too awkward to phrase in English. An idea of flowery/flamboyant speech. He is tricky.

[2] 道袍. These are the characters for "Dao robe/Daoist robe". Something to look up if you want some more imagery.

Chapter 232: Danxia Temple (51)

“But...” Xu Yangyi took a deep breath and abruptly lifted his head: “I have to look inside your robe first! That is, one end of the chain is linked to the demon king. Where is the end that belongs to you?”

“If your hand is holding it, junior will do as you say right now. If not...” Not only did he not advance, Xu Yangyi instead fell back a step with great caution: “Forgive me, but I’ll be hard-pressed to comply.”

Silence. A silence like that of death. The old monk’s serenity gradually receded and was replaced by a wisp faint meaning. It beared a terrible solemnness.

“Hahahaha!” The azure-robed woman’s wild laughter eventually rang out again: “You gutless noble! You may have kept heaven and earth in darkness, but how could you conceal it from the heart?!”

Gutless noble? [\[1\]](#)

Everyone’s gazes looked at the monk in astonishment. The monk’s expression was still without joy or sorrow, and his eyes regained serenity.

“Senior...” Fahui gasped coldly. In Buddhism there was never a figure given the name of noble. In other words...

Everyone had been deceived! This man absolutely wasn’t a monk! On the contrary, he was just borrowing this outward appearance!

“A great lie.” The old monk finally spoke. He seemed to see what everyone was thinking and uttered: “This poor monk is indeed a monk. Moreover, I have been on for several centuries. The Buddhist will in my heart is unchanging.” He finished speaking these words and looked no more at Fahui. Instead, he gazed deeply at Xu Yangyi and said after ages: “What do you know?”

What was known? What had happened? In this instant, each

person felt Xu Yangyi to be brimming with secrets. An A-rank legion commander... and just a seed at that, was capable of holding a relation with this kind of place?

Xu Yangyi didn't yield in the slightest bit nor did he answer. Instead, he cupped his hands towards the azure-clothed woman: "Dare I ask senior whether you and this senior are truly unable to move at all?"

"This Palace dares to make a Dao-heart oath..." The azure-clothed woman looked at the old monk like she was looking at a dead man yet smiled at Xu Yangyi: "I... and this bald donkey have already been suppressing each other for nearly a millennium. His realm is inferior to mine, but he is relying on nothing more than the formation that the forebearer laid down. Both of us... can't move. We can't even accomplish the external manifestation of qi."

Xu Yangyi mumbled to himself for a brief moment. In everyone's wide eyes, he stepped onto the Chasing Skylark and swiftly rushed ahead!

"Commander!" "Junior brother?" Spud! What the heck are you doing?!" Everyone cried out in alarm but were stopped by a wave of Xu Yangyi's hand.

"There's something that if I don't look at it... my heart will be uneasy." He stared fixedly at the old monk whose expression was like a lake. "Relax, there's no way that I'm going to free either of them."

When the old monk appeared, a theory was already present in his mind. The Chasing Skylark swiftly ascended above. The more it neared the monk, his skylark seemed to sink into a quagmire. Entering was like confronting endless tides. Retreating was simply impossible. It was like a hand was pulling on him.

The old monk didn't budge by a hair, standing calmly in the sky. At this moment, he appeared to be Buddha sitting cross-legged high up in the clouds. However, Xu Yangyi deeply felt that the

several thousand meters of this monk's surroundings transformed into a terrible quagmire. It wasn't that the other was opposing him getting closer but rather a kind of involuntary instinct that was refusing his approach!

"Hmph!" At this time, a cold snort echoed. Xu Yangyi's surroundings seemed to part like water. His gaze flashed and he spurred the Chasing Skylark straight to the monk.

Is this a high-level cultivator's might? Xu Yangyi stopped his magik artifact at the other's side. Presently, even he was unable to prevent sweat from wetting his back.

What kind of realm was this? Although spiritual force and spiritual pressure wasn't used, by merely relying on his fleshly body, the monk was able to trap him! It rendered the magik artifact granted to him by a Core Formation ancestor inoperable!

"Pardon junior's manners." Xu Yangyi took a good few deep breaths. As he grew closer towards the other, the more he felt like he was approaching a giant mountain. And yet, he was merely a traveler below the mountain. This sensation of unparalleled might... It would be hard to imagine if he personally experienced it.

His hand neared the monk's worn-out robe. At this twinkling, the old monk finally spoke: "Amitabha... Benefactor, think three times before advancing."

"Junior, you need not be worried. Although I don't know what you want to see... concern yourself with only lifting the robe open. I have no problem protecting you!" Azure-clothed woman laughed coldly.

Xu Yangyi nodded, steeled his heart, and pushed aside the old monk's robe!

"Hiss..." "This is..." "What the heck is going on?!"

The people roused below saw everything! Furthermore, they

dared not believe this was true!

The chain wasn't in the monk's robe. Everyone had thought that the other end was grasped in his hand, but it wasn't! The end... was deeply pierced into the old monk! It formed a strange seal! Likewise, it emitted rays of golden light!

This chain wasn't just a unidirectional imprisonment of the azure carp. Instead... a single chain was shackling two people! The old monk was in no way suppressing the azure carp on his own. On the contrary, he was unable to leave! This was because he was also being suppressed here!

Xu Yangyi's gaze flashed, and he promptly exploded back tens of meters in retreat. These two... absolutely weren't so simple as an old monk, who cherished mercy and the common people, and a Greater Demon.

"What do you know?" Silence. After a long period, the old monk finally opened his mouth and asked.

Xu Yangyi mumbled to himself for a brief period. From his bosom, he took out a shell. It was the shell that had been sealed into an ancient pelt scroll by the the Ming Clan and unsealed later again!

"If... senior's claw didn't come out of the water just now, I wouldn't think this way." Xu Yangyi studied the old monk vigilantly: "Senior's shell and color is a carbon copy of this shell." He turned his head to look at the woman: "Perhaps senior doesn't know, but this shell brought junior into an illusory realm. Someone left behind a sentence... Those words were... 'I am at the bottom of Danxia Temple, save me!'. "

The Myriad Waters Demon King's gaze softly flickered, bearing an unmasked killing intent as she looked towards the old monk.

"Since then, I guessed that there might be two people at the bottom of Danxia temple. The appearance of these words

represents that the person who left them behind wasn't a match for the existence at Danxia Temple's bottom. There was no way... that a person relying on themselves would've been able to suppress that existence and talk like you do. So..." He cautiously moved away tens of meters again and shook his head: "Junior... doesn't believe in a single word that senior just said!"

"Amitabha..." At last, the old monk slightly opened his eyes, bearing a smile as he looked towards Xu Yangyi and nodded: "An examination down to the finest detail, a talent, eh..."

"Senior..." Fahui was completely floored. He absolutely hadn't expected that Xu Yangyi would even have a shell in his hand. Furthermore, based on this shell, he hadn't expected that Xu Yangyi would actually dare to pull the tiger's whisker of a high-level cultivator!

"Who... are you?"

Silence. A deathly silence. After ages, the old monk spoke again: "This old monk's Buddhist title is Fahai. It was I that sent that information, but I don't know why it was left inside Danxia Temple."

"What?!"

"Fahai?!"

"How is this possible?!"

"My god... did I hear that right?"

With a whoosh, Fang Cheng propped himself up on a lotus leaf, but his body immediately went soft and caved. His eyes were fixed on the old monk. "Fahai... Fahai? That Fahai from the New Legend of Madame White Snake?! The Song dynasty high monk?!"

Excited, Fang Cheng was trembling from head to toe. These two words appeared calm but caused all the misunderstandings from moments ago to collapse!

Fahai... Fahai! Yes! In legend, Fahai had ultimately concealed himself inside a crab, and a crab's other name was gutless noble!!! It was also because there was just a claw that extended into the sky and pulled the azure carp!

“Junior Fahui... Buddha Child of Mount Song's Shaolin Temple pays respects to senior!” Without any hesitation, Fahui had already cast himself on the ground, prostrating in admiration. He continued to pay respects. Nevertheless, everyone's astonishment was inferior to Xu Yangyi's!

Another riddle had been solved. At Danxia Temple's bottom, the “me” in “save me” was actually Fahai! In that case... this azure carp...

He was in no way willing to proceed with this thought, because this answer was too outrageous! He wordlessly glanced at the Myriad Waters Demon King. To his surprise, the other didn't utter a retort this time!

This old monk truly was Fahai!

“Benefactor, do you now know... why I was unwilling to reveal the truth?” Fahai took a long sigh and looked at Xu Yangyi: “In that year, I descended into the waters and fought against Bai Suzhen. The responsibility lays with this monk. Karma is clear, and my cultivation was unable to advance by another inch. To justify this karma, I voluntarily entered this place to suppress this azure carp forever.”

“HAHAHAHA!” The demon king looked upwards and roared in laughter: “You old donkey, you truly are still joking!”

Fahui's gaze studied the Myriad Waters Demon King profoundly: “Whether it is true or false is up to the benefactor to judge.”

“Benefactors, listen to this poor monk's tale I have for everyone. A very long... very long tale... A story that spans several thousand years...”

“Good...” The azure-clothed woman curbed her wild laughter and looked towards Fahai with dense killing intent: “I also want to know... how you found this place that year.”

Fahai’s expression was without the stirring of great billows. He joined his hands together in prayer: “Amitabha...”

“3,600 years ago...” Fahai’s eyes finally carried a smidgen of emotion. Great changes like that of azure oceans transforming into mulberry fields.

“In the Wei River, there was an azure carp. At that time, there were countless numbers of fantastic creatures in the river. Marvellous demons of all kinds could be found everywhere... Meishan’s Seven Devils, the Three Demons of Xuan Yuan’s Tomb. All of them famous demon cultivators. There were also natural spiritual-objects birthed together with the heavens. This carp’s intelligence had yet to bloom. Day by day, it drifted in the Wei River... Benefactors, is there something odd?”

Upon hearing these words, a kind of incredulous expression was revealed on each person’s face. They gasped coldly and looked at each other on after another.

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply, his heart beating violently. Gritting his teeth, he asked his first question: “Dare I ask senior... does the history of the Godseal War truly exist?”

This was a question... that he HAD to ask! What was the picture of cultivation?

To live long and unaging, to be free and unfettered!

However... Core Formation Dao Masters were no more than 400 years old. The legendary, long-lost Nascent Soul Dao Lord had a longevity of 800 years! But after 800 years, they would still turn into a handful of yellow earth!

There was only one thing... An incomparably ancient legend. In the modern day, it had long since been called a thing of myth, to be

everlasting in the world! A legend that survived countless epochs!

Immortal!

To achieve the Dao and become immortal! To ascend to the heavens in broad daylight! This was the ever-tireless pursuit of every cultivator and even each emperor!

If the Godseal War truly existed... then that was enough to prove that in this world... there were immortals! And even gods!!!

Although their traces were no longer known in the present day, they had once existed! Truly existed! The Three Demons of Xuan Yuan's Tomb, Erlang, and Laozi... These figures weren't fabricated! [\[2\]](#)

The cultivation world... he himself would have a true pursuit! To the extent... that the entire cultivation would be revised because of this!

[1] Gutless noble is the literal phrasing, but in Chinese, this phrase has another meaning, that being “Bowelless crab”. Have you all been paying attention and perhaps looking up the things that I make note of? Is the picture becoming clearer? Hahahaha!

[2] Note about Erlang and Laozi. In the text, Erlang is also known as Yang Jian. Laozi is written down as something that might be translated as “Supreme Daoist Laojun”, Laojun meaning “Old Ruler/Gentleman/Lord”.

Chapter 233: Danxia Temple (52)

“Amitabha...” Fahai’s aged, yellow-muddled eyes looked at Xu Yangyi for several seconds, and he shook his head: “I am unenlightened. Even if Buddha is all living things, when he is enlightened with a thought, it is then that all living things are Buddha.”

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak. Fahai already knew what he was going to ask. This story was the method to tell him that cultivation was to become an immortal. If Fahai was aware, he was an immortal. If he wasn’t aware, he would then go cultivate into the legendary immortal. The so-called immortal path was vast and distant. In fact, the immortal path possessed its own standards.

Anyways, why ask about something that no longer existed in the present?

“Junior will bear your advice.”

Xu Yangyi still hadn’t talked, but Fahui suddenly spoke up.

Fahai faintly nodded: “All things possess a destiny... One day, the azure carp’s destiny arrived. At the side of the Wei River, a straight hook caught a fish. Jiang Shang met King Wen of Zhou... yet as everyone’s gazes were cast into this unprecedented meeting in history, whose gaze looked upon that azure carp?”

Several gazes looked towards the azure-clothed woman in shock. The woman’s face was devoid of joy or sorrow, as if the one being spoken about wasn’t her.

“King Wen of Zhou—Ji Chang...” Mao Ba’er gulped: “For this... this monster... to survive until now, s-she’s at l-l-least over 3,000 years old! W-what realm is this?!”

“No one paid attention whatsoever...” Fahui sighed: “In order to repay the grace of meeting the azure carp, Jiang Shang tapped the azure carp’s head three times. Henceforth, this azure carp’s

intelligence bloomed.”

“She has seen much... She has witnessed the Fall of the Shang and the Rise of the Zhou... She has seen those once supreme greater demons fall to the earth... and observed the sudden rise of each new demon clan...” His voice was seeped with a somewhat hoarse bleakness. His gaze was fairly blurred, seemingly looking back on history’s long river. [\[1\]](#)

Fahai paused for a brief moment and then followed up unhurriedly: “Her realm became greater and greater. So great that heaven and earth was unable to tolerate this greater demon’s existence any longer. At that time, a thousand years had already passed. Time arrived at that of the Southern Song.” [\[2\]](#)

“Everyone, have you read the Legend of the White Snake in the past?” His topic changed directions. He studied the crowd and said faintly: “Do you think me to be a muddled monk, treacherous and unversed in human emotion?”

No one spoke. Everyone had read the Legend of the White Snake. Fahai’s image was indeed as he said. He was a meddlesome monk who broke up a happily married couple.

“A great lie.” Without the stirring of great billows, Fahai’s expression finally rippled a little. His gaze was like lightning, looking straight at the Myriad Waters Demon King: “The Legend of the White Snake... isn’t like this at all... At the dawn of the Southern Song, a benefactor named Xu Xian came to Jinshan Temple. He stewed and sat down for several days, stating that he absolutely wouldn’t go back until he saw this poor monk. Under my questioning, I knew...”

“His wife, Bai Suzhen, kept displaying blasphemies! This was a fiend’s doing! Because she coveted his appearance, she married him. With my own hands, I then subdued her! I didn’t anticipate it, but she didn’t give up on this. Rather than be righteous together with her younger sister the azure snake, she desired to engage in

arcane combat with me for her own obscenity! I descended into the waters and fought. An enormous wave that flooded the sky caused the countless peoples of Zhenjiang to lose their homes... Benefactor!" Fahai trod a step forward, his gaze arcing straight at the Myriad Waters Demon King like electricity: "Several centuries have passed. Do you regret your sin on that day the least bit?"

Mao Ba'er whispered and asked Zhao Wuye: "Descended into the waters and fought?"

Zhao Wuye likewise whispered back an answer: "The flooding of Jinshan."

The azure-clothed woman smiled: "Go on, I want to know. How long can you keep up with this silver tongue?"

"Amitabha..." Fahai painfully closed his eyes: "Lay down your butcher's blade and give yourself to Buddha immediately. Benefactor, why are you slow to not have the will to lay down the cleaver in your heart?"

Silence. A stretch of silence.

After an unknown passage of time, Xuan Chengzi looked at the azure-clothed woman, his voice trembling: "What senior means is..."

"This senior is Xiaoqing." Xu Yangyi's voice rang out. He seemed calm, but in his heart, there was likewise a massive wave surging towards the heavens! A guess was one thing... but a confirmation was another matter!

Who would've thought... that this legendary myth truly existed? Who would've expected... that Fahai and Xiaoqing were actually still alive in the world? And who would've foreseen that there was such a scene at the bottom of Danxia Temple?!

Were it not for him looking at all of the Yellow Springs path's wall carvings, this moment of shock would be absolutely no less than everyone else's for him!

Thump... Mao Ba'er's butt sat down on a lotus leaf. The fur all over his body was shaking in disorder.

"S-s-she is Xiaoqing? The azure snake?" His tongue was trembling, and his eyes were unable to focus because of this great divergence. He stared blankly at the Myriad Waters Demon King: "Then h-hasn't she lived up to now f-for already over a t-thousand years?!"

"Amitabha..." Fahui was incredibly shocked. Ordinarily calm like a breeze and still like wave, his face at this moment carried an incredulousness that simply couldn't be masked!

"Daofather above..." Xuan Chengzi coldly gasped. He looked at the calm-faced azure-clothed woman with terrible astonishment, his voice wavering: "This... This is a true greater demon throughout the ages..."

No one spoke. No one dared to say speak. None whatsoever had expected that this azure-clothed woman was actually the nameless Xiaoqing in the Legend of the White Snake! A figure of legend truly stood before them!

"Indeed a name worthy of cherishing." After ages, the azure-clothed woman softly said: "This Palace's real name is Yu Qinglin. I was called Xiaoqing, though there was nothing wrong with that."

"S-she a-admitted it! She really is Xiaoqing?!" Mao Ba'er's eyes stared. In fact, not only was it him, everyone's eyes stared. They looked at the azure-clothed woman in a daze, their minds a tangled ball of confusion.

"Se... Senior..." Zhao Wuye said warblingly: "T-this doesn't match the Legend of the White Snake's record... a-and this senior, s-she isn't an azure snake..."

"No! This is fact!" Fahui's eyes were somewhat reddened, and he gritted his teeth: "Benefactors, I'm unaware but have you read Tales to Warn the World by the late Ming novelist Feng Menglong?"

In this... the original version of the Legend of the White Snake is written! From the start, it was never an azure snake. But an azure carp!" [\[3\]](#)

He took a deep breath and stood up, bowing deeply towards Fahai: "This poor monk has always believed this was nothing more than a myth... For the common people and all things, senior didn't hesitate to enter hell alone. Junior feels deep admiration."

Yu Qinglin coldly studied Fahui and suddenly laughed: "Fahai... I ought to send your junior, who has the character 'Fa' in his name, off to be buried with my own hands."

Fahai eyed Yu Qinglin pitifully and shook his head. He didn't respond and continued to speak: "And yet the descent into the waters and the battle were all because of me... Buddha said 'if I do not enter hell, who can?'. Although the chief evil that was the white snake was suppressed, the azure carp slinked away. Because I shouldered the enormous karma of Zhenjiang, I had no choice but to hide inside a crab... After searching through several thousand lis of adversity, I finally found a trace of the azure carp here. But at the same time I was suppressing her, I was plotted against by the azure carp. Both of us suffered defeat."

He took a deep breath, facing all the Qi Condensation cultivations and sincerely saluting: "I hope benefactors will consider the common people of the world. This demon... MUST not leave!"

Silence. A death-like silence.

Clap clap clap... After ages, the sound of applause echoed. Her expression motionless, Yu Qinglin was lightly clapping: "A good story... you almost made me think that I committed some great atrocity. Your use of this tale to deceive these little Qi Condensation cultivators is enough and then some. I didn't expect, I really didn't expect... that in these past several centuries, I still hadn't seen your talent for such fallacies."

"It just so happens that I also have a story, but it is worlds apart

from the one you told. I don't know if the present juniors have heard it. Who should they believe?"

"Amitabha." Fahai's expression was imposing and motionless, and his white beard fluttered. "When false is true and true is also false. When true is false and false is also true... Every drink and every peck, each flower and each fruit, all is determined by the heavens. Benefactors, you must judge clearly."

"Judge clearly?" Yu Qinglin coldly watched Fahai: "Those of Buddha have always said that which is pleasing to hear... Using your body to suppress a demon?"

"Just by relying on yourself?" Tilting her head, she rested her perfumed cheek on her hand and sneered: "Were it not for this Five Phases Godseal Formation, would you still be able to suppress me?" Her smile vanished and her icy gaze observed everyone: "I'll tell all of you two things."

"If not for me, it would be impossible for all of you to leave the bottom of Danxia Temple." She raised up two fingers: "The second... If you don't pull out the chain in my chest... you will all die here."

"Listen up." She was like a queen overlooking the mortal realm, simply not looking at everyone. In the same vein, a wisp of reminiscence penetrated her gaze. She paused for no less than ten minutes and then said unhurriedly: "Since the end of the Han, I've been locked up here. At that time, my cultivation was already at the initial stage of Nascent Soul." [\[4\]](#)

Nascent Soul!

Everyone collectively gasped. Qi Condensation, Foundation Establishment, Core Formation. Afterwards was Nascent Soul, long since faded away without a trace in the End of Days. Core Formation was titled Dao Master. Nascent Soul was titled Dao Lord!

Here and now, a living Nascent Soul Dao Lord was standing before their eyes! Even if they had guessed early on that the cultivations of these two people were at least Nascent Soul, at this moment, Xiaoqing had admitted it from her own mouth. Nevertheless, it still caused everyone to be terribly shocked.

No... Xu Yangyi took a deep breath. This... was a Nascent Soul Dao Lord from 2,000 years ago! What level had her cultivation reached now? No one could speak certainly!

In his heart, he inwardly calculated. The longevity of Nascent Soul was recorded to be 800 years. He wasn't all too clear what realm was after Nascent Soul, but Yu Qinglin was bound to have already advanced to the next realm! Only then would she be able to endure this endless 2,000 years from the Qin dynasty to the present! [\[5\]](#)

Yu Qinglin didn't pay too much attention to other things and said slowly: "On a certain day at the end of the Han, all cultivators... just disappeared... I speak of the most supreme ones. It seemed as if there were never cultivators in the world... All that remained were second and third-rate sects. Hehe... the second and third-rate sects I speak of would still be enough to sweep away and flatten the modern cultivation world."

Her expression turned complex: "On that day, a man sitting on a wheelchair found me. He didn't say a word and sealed me. However, even if he didn't utter a word, I still recognized him..."

She paused for a very, very long time, somewhat vexed as she pondered that person's name. Xu Yangyi clenched his teeth and said softly: "Zhuge Liang?"

Just as his voice fell, Yu Qinglin abruptly raised her head and looked at him. Her voice was incomparably icy: "How did you know?"

Fahai also lifted up his head and recited a chant: "Benefactor, how did you guess it was Senior Zhuge? This poor monk heard this

demon speak of this past matter only once in the past several hundred years.”

Xu Yangyi didn't speak, but in his heart, he was intensely shook!

Fahai didn't know? Xiaoqing also didn't know? In that case... from where did those wall carvings come from?!

Did a third person come here? No... perhaps... this person was still here! Who on earth was it? To be capable of surviving in front of two such high-level cultivations? This figure still hadn't been detected by them after so many years?

No... maybe... it was Liu Bowen? Zhuge Liang? That was also incorrect! If it was them, why would they take and seal Fahai's words of “save me” in the wall carvings?

Or maybe... Xu Yangyi deeply eyed Fahai. This in itself was Fahai pretending to be unaware?

[1] Shang and Zhou are both ancient dynasties. Shang - 1600 BCE to 1046 BCE. Zhou - 1046 BCE to 256 BCE.

[2] Southern Song is 1127 - 1279 CE.

[3] Feng Menglong - novelist during the late Ming dynasty (1574 - 1646 CE). Tales to Warn the World otherwise known as Stories to Caution the World.

[4] End of the Han dynasty is 220~ CE.

[5] Qin dynasty (221 - 206) BCE

Chapter 234: Danxia Temple (53)

Forcibly pushing down the shock of his heart, Xu Yangyi cupped his hands and said: “Junior learned about this accidentally. I hope seniors will understand.”

He didn’t speak. Xiaoqing coldly brushed an eye over Fahai. Both of them questioned no further.

“That’s right.” Yu Qinglin’s finger gently tapped the water throne, and she said apathetically: “I was enlightened by Jiang Shang. Altogether, Jiang Shang cultivated four lifetimes. The first life was Jiang Ziya. The second life was Sun Bin. Who I saw was the third life. Zhuge Liang.”

“What?! This...” Zhao Wuye blurted out in astonishment: “So much failure...”

He immediately shut his mouth.

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak... Like so... Zhao Wuye was sure to have felt... that there was certainly one side lying between Yu Qinglin and Fahai’s dialogue!

What was the objective of lying? One didn’t need to ask know... that in this duo’s strange confrontation, so long as they offered assistance, disregarding that they were initial-stage Qi Condensation, they could still allow these old monsters who surpassed Core Formation to return to glory like a dragon ascending to the skies!

It could be Fahai, but it could also be... Xiaoqing! Regardless of either one, they were absolutely able to crush all cultivators upon arriving in the modern cultivation world!

“Fellow Daoist Xu... is looking for the person who is telling the truth?” The situation seemed tranquil, but everyone understood that by no means were Xiaoqing and Fahai so idle and bored to tell them this story.

With their realms, even if they sacrificed their longevity, these figures were still able exterminate them in flash. However, neither of them did so. On the contrary, with their statuses that transcended Core Formation, they were slowly and carefully narrating to them the secret of this place.

This was Fahai and Yu Qinglin's fight for their trust! At this moment, Xu Yangyi felt Mao Ba'er write something on his hand. He closed his eyes and felt... that they were a row of characters.

In any case, the people telling the truth will be easier to deal with than the person lying.

He opened his eyes and glanced at Mao Ba'er. Soon after, he ran his eyes over everyone present. Oddly, discounting himself at this instant, and even Fang Cheng and Quan Ningyue, not a single person said that they had walked the Yellow Springs path! Furthermore, no one spoke of the wall carvings!

Xu Yangyi could guess that the others were also thinking about this.

The person lying... might turn coat and kill us... With the person telling the truth... at least there's somewhat of a hope that we'll survive. Mao Ba'er gritted his teeth and continued writing: Between the two of them... one of them is definitely lying... They only want us to let them go... Afterwards... will be the time of our death!

Yu Qinglin simply wasn't moved to care about the Qi Condensation cultivators' shock and continued speaking: "I was suppressed at the bottom of Danxia Temple. Only my incarnations could walk the world. But because of this formation, my avatars cannot hold a connection with myself... I have been stewing here... stewing... Day by day... Night by night!"

"Until... all of a sudden, there was an incarnation that was connected to me. That incarnation had no name. I had her pick name. She was known as Xiaoqing."

Everyone sucked in deeply. So it turned out... the matter of Xiaoqing was like this!

“I then knew at this moment that centuries to a thousand years had actually already passed... and arrived in a dynasty called Southern Song. I once incarnated a hundred avatars. Unexpectedly, only seven survived in the world.” She took a long sigh, restraining her fluctuating mood. Xu Yangyi keenly felt that the closer the modern age approached, the more fierce the fluctuations of her mood

“Xiaoqing was now actually following a white snake. I wanted to exterminate her with a hand, but I hesitated over and over. Ultimately, I chose to restrain myself in silence. Do you...” She looked towards Xu Yangyi: “know why?”

Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows and thought it over. He cupped his hands and said: “According to the records, Xiaoqing cultivated the Dao for 500 years. Mortals don’t know of cultivators’ realms, so they use time in instead. If the mortal story is trustworthy, Xiaoqing should’ve already advanced to initial-stage Nascent Soul by then. As for Bai Suzhen, the records say she cultivated for a thousand years. She should be...”

“That’s right.” Yu Qinglin uttered: “She had already advanced to the realm after Nascent Soul. My main body couldn’t take action, but this precious avatar didn’t give up.”

“Besides...” Her tone started to waver again, and she looked at Fahai like she was looking at a dead man: “Indeed, this old donkey spoke of the true Legend of the White Snake. But he hid one point! An extremely vital point!”

“In the Legend of the White Snake... the one who met Xu Xian at the very start... wasn’t Bai Suzhen but This Palace!!! And do you know why I met him?!” She locked her eyes on Xu Yangyi, biting her lips so that they turned somewhat white: “Because he was a person... a person who had already cultivated three lives but failed

to reach perfection! An old friend... preparing to recultivate his fourth life!”

Xu Yangyi nodded symbolically, but his gaze suddenly flashed. Without warning, his heart was roused, and he blurted out: “Jiang Ziya?! Jiang Shang!”

“WHAT?!” Quan Ningyue’s eyes quickly opened wide. She looked at Xiaoqing, not daring to believe. “Jiang Ziya... is Xu Xian?!”

“Freakin’... unbelievable...” Fang Cheng’s mouth opened wide. Unconsciously, he slightly shook his head, flabbergasted: “The Legend of the White Snake... actually has so many unrecorded things concealed in it!”

Fahui’s gaze twinkled. He and Xuan Chengzi were the same. They tightly bit their lips, not saying a word.

This story was too bizarre. It had already surpassed their imaginations!

“Xu Xian? No... it was Xu Xuan...” Yu Qinglin made a long sigh. Her teeth were gnashing in bitterness: “On that day, he didn’t know anything. Perhaps he had forgotten, but I was shut in here by him! Shut in here... for a full thousand years! He didn’t even know that my avatar walked in front of him with great difficulty... The memories of his past three lives, Jiang Shang... Sun Bin, and Zhuge Liang, were in his spiritual sense. As long as I learned from him the method to undo the seal here, I would be able to immediately escape!”

“I didn't expect...” Her face transformed into a faint taunting smile: “Fahai... this person wasn’t simple at all. He was also an ancient cultivator recultivating life... He didn’t know how to make out Xu Xuan’s three almighty recultivated lives... and moreover didn’t know how to make out that Xiaoqing was an incarnation. This person draped a Buddha’s outer skin on his shoulders but used a divine ability to bring Xu Xuan into Buddhism!”

“Descending into waters and battling... hehehe... how can such a nonexistent event be trusted in?! Leaving aside that Bai Suzhen’s cultivation absolutely couldn’t accomplish this bit, wouldn’t you continue suppressing her if she could do so, Fahai?! I’ve NEVER heard of this matter!”

The scene had already become completely quiet. So quiet that a falling needle could be heard.

None had foreseen that there would be so many hidden circumstances in the Legend of the White Snake. Such a great overturning!

Xiaoqing wasn’t a Dao Master, Bai Suzhen sought her desires, Xu Xian had cultivated three lifetimes, but Fahai... was even more lowly and shameless!

“Amitabha...” At this moment, Fahai’s chant echoed, and he looked at the crowd serenely: “Right and wrong possess their own arbitrations. Arbitration lays in the heart, possessing its own standard.”

“Hehehe...” Xiaoqing’s killing intent wasn’t masked in the slightest in her grim laughter: “These juniors might not know, but how could you not? If an almighty figure recultivates, the most taboo thing is being made out by a cultivator... Any recultivating cultivator is bound to have left behind an escape route for themselves, a treasury to make a return to prominence. Your cultivation has long since been unable to advance an inch and your aptitude is ordinary. With Xu Xuan standing in front of you, how could you not rise with thoughts of greed?”

Fahai sighed deeply, shaking his head in silence. He softly chanted sutras.

Xu Yangyi’s gaze imperceptibly looked over the duo. Between these two... someone was definitely concealing something. But as the one who saw these things, it was quite possible that he would meet eternal rest here if he didn’t pick the person telling the truth!

This was a gamble. Not freeing these two was fine. However, everyone would be trapped and die here! Release... who to release? Who was the “truth”? Who would be able to truly set them on a path of survival?!

A choice without gain and loss. There was no choice but to choose the frank person. At least... with the side who dared to act and accept responsibility, their chances at survival would be a level higher.

There seemed to be no fighting or arcane combat, but in fact, life and death merely laid between a thought! On one side was heaven and on the other was hell.

“What a pity...” Xiaoqing ridiculed as she looked at Fahai: “He guessed it to be an almighty reincarnated cultivator but hadn’t anticipated what level of might it was at all. His clumsy methods on the contrary allowed Xu Xuan’s memories to be totally awakened. He was forced to hide in a crab’s stomach. In addition, Jiang Shang had already aided King Wu of Zhou by cloaking himself with the sin of murder. He wasn’t willing to create the sin of murder. It was only then Fahai was let go once. Unexpectedly... his wicked intentions weren’t put to rest! He was unable to plot against Jiang Shang, so he instead made use of Xiaoqing to find my main body!!!”

“This was also the 1000-year-old white snake’s suppression, and the true reason that the 500-year-old Xiaoqing escaped calamity!”

The scene was silent, and Xiaoqing’s chest faintly heaved up and down. After ages, she regained her coolness and smiled: “My only chance at escape was harshly interfered by this old bald donkey and the damned Bai Suzhen... not only was everything ruined for this pittance of a single basket, it also caused Jiang Shang to remember me... hehehe... Fahai... even if I don’t leave today, you... will still remain here with me!”

Fahai smiled: “I am using my life to suppress a demon. Even if

this poor monk is accompanying you, what is there to fear?”

There were no voices whatsoever.

Fahai shut his eyes and chanted sutras. Xiaoqing’s gaze brushed over each and every person’s body.

The story ended here. However, if someone now spoke, in simply their listening of this tale, Fahai might’ve been nothing. But Xiaoqing... would absolutely slaughter this person on the spot!

Yes, the story had come to a conclusion. Now was the time to make a choice! If you don’t want to die, you must release one of these people! THIS was the wordless dialogue of this silence!

Xiaoqing was watching the others, but the others’ gazes all fell on Xu Yangyi!

Fahai hung both of his eyes low. He didn’t know what to think.

“It seems that you are these people’s bellwether.” In the end, Xiaoqing’s gaze looked towards Xu Yangyi. She glanced him a little bit carefully and nodded casually: “Your talent is not bad. Even among ancient cultivators, you are one among ten thousand.”

“Choose.” After she glanced, her gaze turned cold again: “I can promise not to act against all of you by the slightest fraction of a hair. I will escort all of you out of Danxia Temple myself. Although I cannot be regarded as a good person, I will absolutely do all that I have said.”

“Amitabha.” Fahai recited a chant and said peacefully: “Benefactor, I thought up of every possible method to attract you to enter! It appears that the thoughts of cultivators nowadays and us ancient cultivators are already different. Even now, this poor monk isn’t asking you to help me suppress this demon. As long as the seal is not undone, it is fine.”

“And I will naturally send benefactor out.”

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak. He understood very clearly that these

two cultivators were being incomparably polite to him right now. Nonetheless... in case the wrong choice was made and after the sword was pulled out, they would lay eyes upon a true demon!

Who to choose? Who would abide by their promise and bring them out? At this moment, he seemed to be walking on a steel rope. A single misstep and he, and everyone involved, would be laid out here as corpses!

If Xiaoqing was speaking the truth, Fahai couldn't be chosen by any measure or pace! How could a person who had already gone insane for cultivating their realm possible allow these people who knew his secret to survive?

But if Fahai was speaking the truth, Xiaoqing was far more ruthless than the white snake! Furthermore, she was the final boss in the Legend of the White Snake! In killing a few of them, only four words could be used to describe—following the heart's desire.

[\[1\]](#)

If she was set free, there would possibly be unexpected consequences for the entire cultivation world!

Under the cover of a nest, were eggs not completely safe? [\[2\]](#)

Xu Yangyi breathed in heavily. His gaze was like a boulder as he studied the two people. This choice of life and death was the greatest test of his cultivation to this day!

[1] Interesting to note that the author uses English “BOSS” for final boss.

[2] “Under the cover of a nest, were eggs not completely safe?” Chinese idiom. The idea of “if the main body is alright, those under will be safe”. If the main body is not okay, everyone is screwed.

Chapter 235: Danxia Temple (54)

Xu Yangyi didn't make an immediate choice. Instead, he meditated on his flying magik artifact, closing his eyes and contemplating. He carefully combed through Fahai's and Yu Qinglin's words again.

Indeed, there were still many riddles to Danxia Temple. For example, who had carved the wall carvings? Why was Wei Zhongxian here? Why would the Animus Armament be on Wei Zhongxian's person? However, all of this wasn't as important in comparison to this choice right now.

No one rushed him. Although this pittance of time seemed to crawl infinitely to Fahai and Yu Qinglin, they had already gone through too, too many years. Even if they were more anxious in their hearts, they wouldn't express this on their faces at all.

An hour passed, two hours passed... after a full three hours passed, Xu Yangyi finally opened his eyes. A wisp of absolute resolve flashed through them.

"I have a few questions that I'll have to ask seniors to answer."

"Ask away." Xiaoqing said indifferently and slightly furrowed her brows, not revealing her feelings.

Fahai recited a chant: "If it is hard to choose, then a choice isn't necessary. Why can't this poor monk die here?"

Xu Yangyi cupped his hands and asked: "Junior has already decided. But before this, I want to ask again. Was all that was just said to everyone the truth?"

The duo glanced at each other and said nothing. Instead, they carefully recalled the words that were just said. Eventually, Xiaoqing nodded: "My words are true."

Fahai also laughed: "I am the same."

Xu Yangyi's eyes flashed again: "In that case... I still have one last question. In this place, are both of you clearly aware of the outside world?"

"Only a vague awareness." Xiaoqing uttered: "My avatar's connection with myself is unable to be closely linked."

"What is the range of this vagueness?" Xu Yangyi immediately questioned: "Can you watch television? The internet? Books?"

"I cannot. I don't even know what television and the internet is." Xiaoqing replied firmly, her voice chopping nail and slicing iron: "The connection between myself and my avatar is only once every five years for one two-hour period. It's simply impossible for me to have her explain five years of material. That's not even considering these new things."

Xu Yangyi nodded and looked at Fahai: "Senior is also like this?"

"Indeed." Fahai nodded and said: "My cultivation is inferior to this demon's. I am naturally unable to do this."

"I understand." Already, Xu Yangyi's eyes were completely shining.

In the end... he had found the crucial point! There truly was... someone... who was letting loose a pack of lies!

From the very beginning, that person hadn't spoken the truth! After thinking about this crucial point... he had a new choice!

He slowly walked towards Fahai. Xiaoqing's gaze suddenly grew fiery and stared into the middle of Xu Yangyi's back like a knife. Her lips were faintly trembling. She wanted to say something, but nothing was said at all.

"He chose Senior Fahai?" Mao Ba'er didn't even dare to breathe. If a single misstep was made in this time, the moment where they would lose their lives would follow! Nobody dared not to be nervous! No one couldn't NOT be nervous!

In this twinkling, even Fahai was breathing like an ox and turning about his rosary beads as if his life depended on it.

Don't be wrong... You can't be wrong! In their hearts, everyone was praying.

Silent murderous aura and invisible tension allowed a falling needle to be heard in this space.

Xu Yangyi walked towards Fahai. All along as he walked in front of the other, he studied him deeply. Fahai's face was devoid of joy or sorrow, and he faced the sky and sighed heavily: "True and false possess their own determinations... The Will of Heaven... The Will of Heaven..."

"Senior." Xu Yangyi laughed. For the first time after Fahai and Yu Qinglin's appearances, he laughed. He cupped his fist: "Yes, the Will of Heaven."

"Senior didn't speak a word of truth. Junior really is unable to believe senior."

Fahai face that was sighing towards the sky was unable to keep on sighing. For the first time, he revealed a stunned expression and looked at Xu Yangyi who was in front of him in amazement. It seemed as if Fahai wanted to take Xu Yangyi's silhouette and project it into his mind.

Swish... The turning rosary beads in Fahai's hand suddenly came to a halt. In the same vein, he looked at Xu Yangyi incredulously.

"HAHAHA!!!" Xiaoqing was unable to restrain her supremely excited cackling. It was heard from behind: "You old donkey, this is karmic retribution... Heavens Law never forgives! After a thousand years, your karmic retribution has arrived!"

Xu Yangyi's choice... was Xiaoqing!

"It's her?" Zhao Wuye firmly bit his lip. Although Xu Yangyi's choice had already emerged... without leaving Danxia Temple in this moment, how could this kind of mood be set to ease?

The two seniors appeared to be extremely courteous to them, but they were in fact beseeching them! Were it not for the both of them being unable to currently act, they would've long since become corpses!

Fahai heavily studied Xu Yangyi for a very, very long time. After an unknown amount of time passed, he said apathetically: "How did you see?"

False?

The rosary beads in Fahui's hand all scattered down onto the back of his magik artifact with a rustling.

Fahai... The words spoken by this Buddhist senior were actually false?

"He admitted it from his own mouth..." Fang Cheng's heart raised upwards. Presently, it appeared that the right person was chosen. It was just that their hopes of survival were nothing more than a sliver greater!

After Xu Yangyi finished saying these words, he promptly sat down on the Chasing Skylark and zoomed over to Xiaoqing's side. Upon hearing Fahai's words, he cupped his hands and said: "Not only this, but junior even knows about a matter..."

"Oh?" Fahai's face was serene like a lake, even though if Xiaoqing broke away from the seal, he was doomed to die without a whole corpse afterwards!

"This matter... is very important to us." The confidence in Xu Yangyi's heart was already burning like a fire.

He... realized... Everything was realized! So it was like this... It was actually like this!

"For the time being, I won't speak of this matter. But I can tell senior that all you said was faultless. Senior Yu's realm is beyond yours, and her strength is extremely great. In case she leaves, the people of the entire cultivation world might fall into total despair.

She herself is the greatest worry. But... you said one word wrong.”

“Oh?” Fahai laughed as well: “Which word?”

“This Sage Lord had been here for centuries, pondering all the time how to escape this prison after someone entered. How could there be a mistake with my words?”

Sage Lord!

Everyone’s gazes shivered. Core Formation, Dao Master. Nascent Soul... there were ancient texts that titled it as Dao Lord. Sage Lord... what kind of realm was this?!

Xu Yangyi cupped his fist and deeply bowed. This wasn’t a taboo of the other’s status but instead a respect towards the other’s realm. An esteem towards Fahai for being able to cut through bramble and thorn to reach this step.

“It was precisely because you were thinking about this matter all the time. You only used methods that you believed to be the most favorable to yourself... Do you remember that you once said the phrase of ‘descending into the waters and battling’?”

Not waiting for Fahai to speak, his gaze brightened as he continued to speak: “I’ll ask again. Senior Yu said that she is unable to access outside things for too long. You are further unable to. In that case... how do you know this phrase in countless operas and books from later generations?”

With one word, the scene fell into silence! Everyone felt sudden enlightenment blooming clearly in front of their eyes. That was right... if neither of them had the time to pay attention to these things, then how... did Fahai know of “descending into the waters and battling”?

Xiaoqing also thought about this point and said deeply: “I dare to make a heart-devil oath that this event of ‘descending into the waters and battling’ absolutely doesn’t exist! At that time, Bai Suzhen had just merely advanced. She was fundamentally

incapable of mobilizing such a great tide!”

“You only spoke this phrase twice.” Xu Yangyi studied Fahai seriously: “We modern cultivators have an even more blunt saying—the Flooding of Jinshan!”

Fahai took a long sigh: “Just because of this?”

“Yes.” Xu Yangyi deeply cupped his hands: “So, I’m sorry.”

“Perhaps the common people back then also called it like this?” Fahai said neither slowly nor hurriedly: “There have also been operas passed down since ancient times. This Sage Lord didn’t necessarily not have this saying on that day.”

“Yes...” Zhao Wuye’s brows began to furrow, and he lifted his head to look at the sky. From where he was, he could see behind Xu Yangyi.

“Maybe there also was this saying in ancient times...” His voice yet to fall, Mao Ba’er was already firmly pulling on him! With his utmost effort, he shot a meaningful glance at Xu Yangyi!

Puzzled, Zhao Wuye looked carefully but was immediately dumbfounded!

At this moment, Xu Yangyi was located in front of Fahai and behind Xiaoqing. No one could see what he was presently doing. In fact... these two seniors had long since been sealed of their spiritual senses. They furthermore couldn’t use spiritual sense to probe.

They saw... that Xu Yangyi’s hand was making an “OK” gesture.

“O... K?” Zhao Wuye’s brows furrowed, but Mao Ba’er was terribly grave.

With an extremely low whisper, Mao Ba’er moved close to the side of his ear and gritted his teeth: “It’s not OK... This is three! It’s three!”

Three? Three... Three?! THREE!!! Zhao Wuye almost jumped! In

shock, he looked at Xu Yangyi's back. The other was using this method to tell him that there was a third person here?!

Sage Lord... it was unknown what realm this was! Fahai titled himself as a Sage Lord, but Xiaoqing's realm was even higher than his! A 3,000-year-old demon king! There was actually still a third person? One that even survived between the two of them!

However, his mind quickly brightened! He understood... He understood! Each word that Xu Yangyi had just spoke was perhaps towards what Xiaoqing and Fahai said. Nonetheless, the addition of this gesture was directed to what they said!

Because of an unknown reason, these two people had been sealed here! If there was an avatar walking the human realm, the information brought would be much faster in comparison to the 800 years of the ancient times! It absolutely couldn't be some opera or book. On the contrary, they urgently wanted a method to free themselves! Otherwise, they simply wouldn't have spare time!

And yet Fahai actually knew about this. In that case... who had told him?

There was bound... to be someone who had vaguely communicated with Fahai for a long period. Only then was he able to understand the modern world and modern era so clearly!

"Could it be..." In his heart, an absurd thought suddenly welled up. He looked incredulously behind him.

Descending into the waters and battling originated from the late Ming edition of Tales to Warn the World... Since the other party had brought up the late Ming version... Ming... Ming dynasty...

"Hahaha!" In the sky, Xiaoqing's great laughter rang out, pleasantly surprised to extremes: "How many years... How many years?!?! There was still a day where This Palace would see the light of day once more!!!"

"Fahai... could it be that you believe that you were only one to

make preparations?” She gazed at Xu Yangyi with incredible satisfaction: “Did you know... five years ago, I met this child.”

Xu Yangyi’s eyes flashed.

Five years ago... His disappearance of three years...

As expected, only this almighty figure would possess such a nigh-miraculous divine ability!

Chapter 236: Danxia Temple (55)

Riddles were solved one by one.

“Senior met him long ago?” Fahai gritted his teeth and said. His expression was already terrible gloomy.

Xiaoqing sneered, not looking at him at all. Instead, she looked towards Xu Yangyi and laughed: “Junior, do you know why the first four of the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions didn’t affect you?”

Xu Yangyi forced everything about his expression to be calm as usual and shook his head: “No.”

Yu Qinglin gently waved her hand: “Look at your lost left arm.”

Xu Yangyi lowered his head and looked. His gaze suddenly glimmered! This wave seemed to disperse a seal on his body. He shockingly discovered... that the place where his arm was severed wasn’t bone! On the contrary...

It was a lotus root! A snow-white lotus root! As for his flesh, bones, and blood, a kind of texture of lotus leaves and seawater actually emerged in his wounds!

“Several years ago, you came here.” Yu Qinglin studied Xu Yangyi’s wounds in satisfaction and said indifferently: “At that time, you had already been seriously injured by an unknown junior. If I hadn’t acted and recasted your entire body with lotus flowers, do you think... that you would be able to live up to now now based on the condition of your wounds from back then?”

“This is my sect-exclusive demon art, the Lotus Reincarnation’s first boundary. In this magik are profound mysteries unable to be narrated.” She smiled: “As long as you help me escape... I am ready to completely hand over this divine ability to you.”

“This has long since not been our first encounter.” She turned her head and looked towards Fahai whose face was deathly ashen: “On that day... I squeezed in a bodhi seed in this junior’s mind as

one of my back-ups. This object... is a rare treasure. His thoughts were incomparably faster and more careful because of this. Junior...”

Pleased, she studied Fahai’s expression and turned her head to look at Xu Yangyi: “In these past years, haven’t you thought that you are usually calm and unperturbed? Similar to the thoughts of Foundation Establishment and even Core Formation juniors? Even if they were more quick-minded, others wouldn’t be able to think of things. But you can think of them in the blink of an eye, can’t you?”

So that’s how it was!

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply. His nature was inherently cool-headed. He didn’t feel too much regarding this, but his mind did indeed infer many things from a single case. The might of his fleshly body was also far greater than in the past!

Unexpectedly, he had acted as Xiaoqing’s chess piece and had his body transformed in those three years. Another riddle was solved again!

He wordlessly eyed Xiaoqing. I really don’t know... if you waited until you knew my choice... knowing it was because of your bodhi seed that made me think of so many things... what kind of reaction would you have?

“Pull out the sword in my chest.” Xiaoqing’s gaze had long since become incomparably scorching. A wait of 3,000 years... was at last going to become a reality... Upon thinking of this, she was almost unable to restrain herself from looking upwards and shouting!

“I promise you that as long as I escape, I will accept you as a personal disciple. The people here...” Her gaze faintly swept through: “I promise to protect their advancement to Core Formation.”

Core Formation!

Everyone's breathing became unsteady. What kind of realm was able to speak bluntly about protecting a person until Core Formation? At this time, two rays of red light shot out from both of Fahai's eyes without warning! With a speed Xu Yangyi was simply incapable of dodging, it arced forth like electricity!

However, Fahai seemed to still want to sharpen this spiritual light's might. Nonetheless, his cheeks twitched and he was no longer able to budge. Yet even like so, as these two rays of light shined in Xu Yangyi's eyes, he knew that avoiding it was certainly beyond his means!

The rays appeared not be large, only the as thick as an arm, but they contained a kind of power that caused Xu Yangyi's heart to shudder! Leaving aside being swept a little if he let these two rays hit him, the end result would see him annihilated into cinders!

"The great courage of a dog." Xiaoqing sneered and likewise spat out an azure light from her mouth. Unexpectedly, even though it was launched last, it arrived first. It intercepted the two red glints ahead of Xu Yangyi. Immediately...

BOOM! A violent shaking rang out! Xu Yangyi hadn't made any preparations at all. Or perhaps it should be said that while he prepared, his body was essentially unable to follow suit. In front of his eyes, a giant orb of spiritual light suddenly exploded!

The two moves formed a qi fluctuation. Xiaoqing didn't move by a hair, yet in an instant, the wave stopped at Xu Yangyi who was in his original position. It was akin to a squall blowing towards a bird's nest. In a twinkling, he was directly flushed out several hundred meters away!

"Puh!" Xu Yangyi sprayed out a mouthful of blood. The front of him was all gold and black. He couldn't see anything clearly at all. His chest felt as if it had been struck by a 10,000-catty heavy hammer! He didn't scream because even now his mind hadn't reacted. It was because the fall-back speed of this impact was too

fast. In the sky, he actually took the shape of a straight line!

“Angry because you’re ashamed?” Xiaoqing giggled, her laughter like silver bells. She spat out an azure ray again. In the next second, Xu Yangyi’s eyes flashed and the surrounding space dazzled. To his surprise, he oddly returned in front of Xiaoqing!

“Puh!” Beyond his control, a mouthful of blood sprayed out from his mouth. A scorching pain was felt in his chest and the speed of his heartbeat was strangely fast. His complexion seemed as white as paper.

Fahai gazed at him icily, not saying a word.

Xu Yangyi piloted the Chasing Skylark and flew thousands of meters away with the fastest speed. Xiaoqing laughed grimly: “No harm, stay behind me. His trifling divine ability is unable to wound me by the slightest fraction.”

“Senior.” Only when Xu Yangyi saw that he was a sufficient distance away did he take a deep breath. He cupped his hands: “But junior isn’t planning on undoing the seal for Senior Yu.”

In an instant, a deathly stillness, bringing the heart to palpitate, enveloped the entire landscape. After a brief moment, Xiaoqing’s voice faintly echoed: “To dare take This Palace as a joke... you are the first.”

“You know, you’ll be trapped here forever if you don’t undo the seal. You know... if there is no follow-up to the Lotus Reincarnation divine ability, you will stop at the first level for all eternity?”

Xu Yangyi laughed. Neither side’s seal was to be undone, yet Fahai and Yu Qinglin absolutely wouldn’t let go of such a good opportunity! They truly wouldn’t act to injure the present people at all!

People would eventually hold concerns. If they held concerns, they would hold misgivings. The concerns of these two people

were greater than everyone else's! Their misgivings... were also greater than all others!

“But we might not necessarily be trapped here forever.” Xu Yangyi curbed his smile and gritted his teeth: “Junior still wants to try.”

Xiaoqing laughed mirthlessly again and again. Try... Come, try... This is the bottom of Danxia Temple, the people who have entered cannot be considered many! They can be counted on one's fingers! Escape was her long-cherished wish. She had already waited for several millennium. She didn't care to wait another century! Maybe...

She coldly eyed Xu Yangyi. Maybe when you advance to Foundation Establishment, you'll ask to leave... Even if you're unable to reach Foundation Establishment, I'll still guide your Foundation Establishment myself. It'll be no more than thirty years. I... can still wait.

But in the next second, her pupils suddenly needled!

Xu Yangyi faced behind and shouted out: “You're not coming out now? What are you still waiting for?”

There's someone here? Xiaoqing nearly broke out into a cold sweat. How was this possible?! Those who she couldn't detect were all ancient cultivators who had lived longer than her! Nonetheless, hadn't all these ancient cultivators disappeared?

Immediately, she shook her head. Impossible... From the information brought back from her avatar, she also knew. This era was the End of Days. Core Formation was already apex. Of those who lived even longer than her, which one wasn't a legendary myth? How could they still be alive on Earth?

The sky was a silent domain. After ten seconds passed, a delicate voice quietly rang out: “Immortal-Master Xu's thoughts are meticulous. You have my unmatched admiration.”

“It’s you?!” At this time, Xiaoqing and Fahai simultaneously cried out in alarm!

Yes... they were both concealing the truth... Fahai was hiding the Legend of the White Snake’s truth. The instant the seal was undone, he was bound to kill everyone. Yet Xiaoqing... was hiding this person. And also... the enormous secret hidden and buried behind him!

“You actually still haven’t died?” Fahai’s face had already transformed into a stretch of icy-coldness: “Why didn’t This Sage Lord and senior not sense your existence? If you’re alive...” A clenching noise echoed from Fahai’s grinding teeth: “Why... You answered me but didn’t come to rescue me!!!”

The others were all dumbfounded. There was someone else... There truly was someone else! Xu Yangyi’s deduction... surprisingly wasn’t wrong! And this person... They had actually heard his voice! Not too long ago!

Wei Zhongxian! Li Jinzhong!

A figure stepped on the water, unhurriedly floating. He had yet to arrive, and his hand gently waved. A brilliant dagger had already flown above Xu Yangyi and the rest. Following a humming sound, a golden protective-screen activated and confined everyone inside it!

“Emperor Armament!” In an instant, Xiaoqing’s complexion was seized by ugliness. Wei Zhongxian... his authority had overturned both the imperial court and the common masses. The Emperor Armament that he brought out was absolutely uncommon!

At the very least... she felt a brilliant imperial might from this sword! This was an Emperor Armament that she couldn’t break and moreover kill everyone in her present sealed state!

It seemed to be considering her current realm, like it was taking her measurements for an order!

“The corpse... is alive?” His eyes vacant and tongue tied, Mao Ba’er watched Wei Zhongxian. Wei Zhongxian appeared like he had just walked out from his coffin, vivid and lifelike. Furthermore, both of his eyes weren’t lifeless but rather expressive and twinkling.

At the moment, he possessed consciousness!

“This slave Wei Zhongxian greets master.” Wei Zhongxian floated below Xu Yangyi. Without pause, he kneeled down and knocked his head on the water’s surface.

“It’s him... It’s really him!” Zhao Wuye trembled all over in shock and confusion. Moments ago, he had thought... that if there was a third person said to be here, this person would be able to take a late-Ming composition and give Fahai such a detailed explanation. In that case... this person could be no one else but Wei Zhongxian!

Xu Yangyi took a step back and shook his head. Chaotically tangled and unbroken by shears, this thread had finally exposed Wei Zhongxian’s true and whole appearance.

Three people... In this place, there were three people from the very beginning! One human, one demon, and one dead man. As Wei Zhongxian appeared, the last riddle also received an answer!

Xu Yangyi was able to guess with a seventy-to-eighty-percent certainty that Wei Zhongxian’s reverence was bound to be related with the Animus Armament. Nonetheless, he couldn’t take such respect as a matter of due course. At the very least, before he clarified the other’s intentions, he absolutely couldn’t. Especially...

If he could make Wei Zhongxian kneel in front of him and obey... then what was he regarded as?

Such a feeling was quiet subtle...

“I am not a cultivator.” Wei Zhongxian’s smile was unique like it had been intentionally practiced. It caused those who saw it to feel

that this smile was akin to spring winds brushing the floor. He faced Xu Yangyi and bowed deeply: “I am only a mortal. How could I stand shoulder-to-shoulder with the immortal master? You are a celestial-like figure above the nine heavens. For me to be able to see your visage is already the blessed fortune of several cultivated lifetimes.”

“Wei Zhongxian...” Xiaoqing closed her eyes, her teeth grinding as she shouted out his name: “Since you’re alive... why didn’t you fulfill your promise from that time?”

“Oh my... this could be said that I was hard-pressed to do so.” Wei Zhongxian’s old face was smiling as before: “I am only His Majesty’s dog. Whatever His Majesty had me do is what I did... Could the two celestial immortals be unaware that in the Imperial Palace Courtyard, His Majesty’s prestige, concerning we who acted as dogs and horses, was much stronger than an immortal’s...?”

“Wei Zhongxian.” Fahai used an ice-cold gaze to study him: “Then why... didn’t we feel your existence?”

“Of course the immortals wouldn’t sense my existence...” Wei Zhongxian laughed: “I am a dead man. You two are immortals; how could you possibly sense a dead man’s qi?”

No one spoke any further. In the end, everyone who was alive in Danxia Temple—or perhaps not people—had all gathered together.

The thing Xiaoqing and Fahai were concealing... was ultimately about to be exposed on the water’s surface. The current mood was incredibly solemn. Xiaoqing and Fahai didn’t speak. Wei Zhongxian was a person good at discerning thoughts from body language and moreover wouldn’t speak. As for the people on Xu Yangyi’s side, they were still more astonished by this strange assembly before their eyes. For a while, they didn’t know what to say.

After ages, Xu Yangyi took the lead to speak: “Grandpa Wei... was it you that did the wall carvings?”

“To answer master’s words.” Even now, Wei Zhongxian hadn’t stood up from the water’s surface. Upon hearing Xu Yangyi speak, he said softly: “It was this slave that carved them... but I just heard both of the immortals tell a story. It just so happens that I also have a tale. I am unaware if master wants to listen.”

Chapter 237: Danxia Temple (56)

What Wei Zhongxian wanted to speak of was certain to be Danxia Temple's true secret! That was the section that Xiaoqing and Fahai were both concealing together! Perhaps this was the true reason why the Animus Armament was connected together with this place! It was also the thing that Xu Yangyi wanted to hear about the most!

"Please." Xu Yangyi said lowly and made an inviting gesture.

"Shut your mouth..." Fahai's voice was heard from the sky, faintly trembling: "Wei Zhongxian... if you dare speak a word of nonsense... This Sage Lord will use a thousand blades cut you down to shreds!"

"Wei Zhongxian..." Xiaoqing's voice also came out through her teeth: "If you don't fear death... go ahead and try."

Wei Zhongxian seemed not to have heard anything and stood up. He brought up his figure and said: "During the Ming dynasty, His Lord Majesty... wished to become an immortal and cultivate so much that he yearned for it even in his dreams... Master, you should've seen the two words 'Dao Scripture'."

Xu Yangyi nodded.

"Dao Scripture is the collective term of all of Daoism's works, the sum compiled through the imperial household. Before this slave died, it just so happened that the Dao Scripture's Eighth Section came into the world." Wei Zhongxian's face gradually turned serious: "In this section of the Dao Scripture, my master back then, His Majesty Guangzong, discovered a disastrous secret"

Solemn-faced, Xu Yangyi listened. This story had already arrived at its core!

Guangzong... the Taichang Emperor, again, it was this era! Again, it was this name!

Animus Armament... Everything pointed directly to Taichang and Tianqi's two years! That was the father-son pair of Ming Guangzong and Ming Xizong! [\[1\]](#)

At this moment... history's dust was on the verge of uncovering its hidden truth!

The surroundings were unusually quiet. Wei Zhongxian instinctually cast a glance at everyone's expressions and immediately continued to speak.

“Following His Majesty Shenzong's Eighth Section of the Orthodox Dao Scripture, His Majesty Guangzong promptly urged the state teachers of that time and the Fiftieth-Generation Celestial Master Zhang, Dragon-Tiger Mountain's Old Immortal Zhang Guoxiang, to quickly finish the Ninth Dao Scripture. This was also the Wanli Emperor's Dao Scripture. [\[2\]](#)

“And on that day the compilation was finished, I took a page from the Wanli Dao Scripture and came here.” Wei Zhongxian said softly: “I don't know how His Majesty knew what was here... Perhaps even Old Immortal Zhang wasn't necessarily informed of it. Yet on that day, my journey was smooth and unhindered. I also met the two celestials here...”

He subconsciously glanced at Xiaoqing and Fahai in the sky: “On that day, they were also like this... they wished for me to help them undo the seal. But after I gave them the page that His Majesty brought to look at, they didn't mention it again...”

“Shut up!!!” All of a sudden, Fahai yelled angrily. With his utmost power, a streak of red light spat out from his mouth and directly attacked Wei Zhongxian. However, the red beam only struck the golden light-screen and then automatically scattered away.

Xiaoqing didn't say anything. There was merely a never-seen unsightliness on her face!

With lingering fear, Wei Zhongxian glanced at Fahai and continued speaking: “But on that day, I received a secret imperial decree. I was to carve those set of wall carvings here. Furthermore, based on that which His Majesty entrusted, I was not to carry out a thing from this place at all. This slave also placed the shell that the celestial gave me into the wall carvings’ mechanism. In the end... a deal was made with the two immortals.”

“Li Jinzhong...” Xiaoqing closed her eyes, her lips faintly trembling because of her gnashing teeth: “If you dare speak of that matter... This Palace... if I escape... I will be sure to completely exterminate your Wei Clan... not a chicken or dog will be left!”

“Immortress is over thinking this.” Wei Zhongxian bowed deferentially: “I am but a castrate. I have no descendants.”

Xiaoqing didn’t say another word, but it could be seen from her expression that if she could move now, perhaps not a single person present would be able to survive.

“The two immortals hoped that His Majesty Guangzong would help them escape. His Majesty also agreed, but the exchange condition was to help him find the location of the titanic secret in the Dao Scripture’s Eighth Section. At the time of parting... this immortress gave me an object. It was a jade leisure-scepter... but, I never expected...” Wei Zhongxian’s body began to faintly shiver: “because his majesty discovered that secret... a savage calamity was provoked!”

Finished speaking these words, he seemed to recall some scene and trembled from head to toe. The smile on his face was also terribly stiff. Cold sweat spilled out from his forehead.

Xu Yangyi mumbled and interrupted him: “Was it a sword that attacked Guangzong?”

If he hadn’t guessed incorrectly... this savage calamity was bound to be that scene of the Xuan-Yuan Sword furiously slaying Ming Guangzong!

This secret... was certain to hold an absolute connection with cultivation! Otherwise, that era's swordmaster of the Xuan-Yuan Sword simply wouldn't have done this disgraceful matter!

This secret might've already touched upon a little bit of cultivation's soul. It caused the other no choice but to act like this!

In the end, what kind of thing was hidden in the Dao Scripture's Eighth Section?

"An enlightened sage is no more than his master." Wei Zhongxian regained his wits and wiped away at his cold sweat. His voice was wavering: "On that day... it turned out that when I returned from this place, Guangzong secretly summoned me. I... witnessed this scene with my own eyes."

"That truly was... an immortal-like scenery... Golden muslin filled the sky and the ground bubbled forth with golden lotuses... It is a mystery as to how many imperial guards shouted out that there was an assassin, yet they were just... just unable to block that sword... It was too dreadful... like heaven's edge was going to be cleaved open..."

"Xuan Yuan..."

Just as his voice fell, Fahai produced a low and incredulous shout at the same time. However, the expression of Xiaoqing who was at the side was exceptionally serene.

It appeared that she had foreseen... once this secret was discovered, that sword was fundamentally unable to tolerate those who knew of it to live in this world... even if that person was a true dragon, the Son of Heaven!

There was not one exception!

Xu Yangyi coolly studied Xiaoqing's face. So... Xiaoqing had only then bestowed a magik treasure? She had long since guessed all of this or inadvertently done so? However, this magik treasure hadn't even resisted a single blow from the Xuan-Yuan Sword?

The present scene was somewhat oppressive in silence. Wei Zhongxian seemed to be immersed in the terrible worldly anomaly of that day. After a long time, he continued to speak, his face slightly pale. Nevertheless, his next words caused everyone present to coldly gasp in unison!

“However, His Majesty possessed the heaven’s blessed protection... Although His Majesty suffered grievous wounds with the protection of this immortress’s magik treasure, he did not die as a dragon ascending to the heavens.”

“WHAT?!” At this moment, even Xiaoqing’s expression changed: “Ming Guangzong—Zhu Changluo—didn’t die?! He actually received the Xuan... This blow and survived?!”

“This is impossible...” Fahai’s face was ashen: “Even we dare not speak of welcoming the Xia-Yu Sword’s might! Unless, what came at that time was...”

He stopped his mouth and strangely traded glances with Xiaoqing. Xu Yangyi’s heart flashed, and he also guessed what they wanted to say.

A fake!

All that had come was a fake... Under this sword’s might, only then could Ming Guangzong survive from the hands of this ancient godly weapon!

Zhao Wuye contemplated. Upon hearing this, he jumped in shock and immediately sat down, his legs growing soft. His voice trembling, he said: “You’re saying... that after the Case of the Red Pills, Ming Guangzong didn’t die!”

No wonder he was astonished! In history, Ming Guangzong had died in the Case of the Red Pills, one of the Ming Palace’s Three Great Cases! This was an ironclad fact! Yet now... the eunuch who had served Ming Guangzong was personally telling them that Ming Guangzong hadn’t died!

History had been overthrown!

In that case... did Ming Xizong who ascended the throne afterwards know? And the following history... how much of it was true? How much of it was fake?

“This...” Astonishment coloring his entire face, Fang Cheng sharply inhaled: “This really is... too frickin’ unbelievable...”

“He didn’t die...” Wei Zhongxian breathed in deeply a few times, as if he wanted to extract his mind from the terrible scenery of that day. He bowed and said: “His Majesty Xizong was unaware. In all of China, this slave was the only person who knew. Otherwise... from where would I get the capital to suddenly receive favor during Xizong’s Tianqi era?”

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak. He silently stroked his storage ring. Inside... was a very strange sword point. Its might... was even exactly the same as the Xuan-Yuan Sword’s!

If a counterfeit slayed Ming Guangzong on that day, then in that case, there was a primary one... and his was...

“Soon after, His Majesty went into hiding in a dragon vein below the Forbidden City...” Wei Zhongxian’s complexion became somewhat pale again: “However... His Majesty absolutely hadn’t expected... that s-seven y-years later... that sword actually realized His Majesty hadn’t died and found him again... It seemed... if His Majesty wasn’t slain, it would never stop...”

“Hold on...” Zhao Wuye suddenly said, his expression grave: “Seven years... Seven years later...”

Xu Yangyi’s mind brightened, and he raised his head and said solemnly: “The Tianqi Explosion!”

“An enlightened sage is no more than his master!” Wei Zhongxian appeared to still hold a lingering fear and said tremblingly: “It w-was... It was the Tianqi Explosion!”

“The Tianqi Explosion is by no means an unsolved mystery... I-

Instead, when that sword came slashing with full power, it brought forth a worldly anomaly! Master! I speak not a single lie! Even I dared not to believe on that day! A sword's might... strided across infinite space and was actually able to detonate the entire imperial capital!"

Xu Yangyi breathed in deeply a few good times. This story was too long and bizarre. Even though Wei Zhongxian narrated it like so, all could sense that the complications within it shocked the heart and stirred the soul.

He realized... why Wei Zhongxian's divine ability was the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions. He also realized why the Animus Armament had come into being. Furthermore... he also confirmed that the Tianqi Explosion was the Xuan-Yuan Sword's true might! In order to get Ming Guangzong, this person who had vanished like a cicada leaving its shell, to no longer search for the grand secret that even distressed the Xuan-Yuan swordmaster, it hadn't hesitated to personally take action!

All that remained was one last riddle that hadn't been solved! And that... was what on earth did Ming Guangzong discover in the Dao Scripture? Causing the Xuan-Yuan Sword not to permit his proliferation of this secret? To make him so unwilling at death's door and actually form the Animus Armament with his life? To be passed on a millennium later?

In vagueness... in his heart, he held an extremely veiled and cryptic guess. Maybe... Possible... It should've been...

Immortal!!!

This was a never confirmed legend. Or perhaps the modern era had affirmed it to be a word eternally shrouded in mist and without footprint!

"If that's how it is... then... everything has been said..." Xu Yangyi's thoughts revolved like electricity. The bodhi seed that Xiaoqing placed in his mind caused his thinking to be

incomparably nimble. Perhaps Xiaoqing simply hadn't expected that because of this bodhi seed, it caused Xu Yangyi to walk out on a third path between two difficulties today!

Xiaoqing and Fahai also hadn't foreseen this at all. After Wei Zhongxian had been dismembered, he had remained here!

“To make a Supreme Lord of the Nine Quiniums unwilling to let go... A thing that the imperial throne didn't even hesitate to search for... Even confronted with mortal danger, he still wanted to search. Even after the Xuan-Yuan Sword's strike, he still had no regrets...” Xu Yangyi shut his eyes and sucked in deeply: “Apart from the immortals of legend and long life—the eternal heart tribulation of history's emperors—I can't think of anything else... Only like this can it be said why Ming Guangzong was so unreconciled after death and created the Animus Armament...”

“Obviously, the trace of an immortal had already been discovered, but he was killed. The relentless pursuit of countless emperors... Only this kind of emotion and reason is thoroughly explained...”

[1] Ming Guangzong is a name that everyone should be somewhat familiar with this point. Ming Xizong was his son, also known as Tianqi, or as I had translated for the Six Erosions, “Heavenly Opening”. Tianqi = Ming Xizong (Era name versus Temple name). He was born in 1605 and died in 1627.

[2] The Wanli Emperor is the father of Ming Guangzong AKA the Taichang Emperor. Zhang Guoxiang is a real figure, the fiftieth generation Celestial Master Zhang. In history, this is an actual event. The Wanli Emperor had him compile a Dao Scripture (Daoist Canon). These topics can be found on wikipedia.

Chapter 238: Danxia Temple (57)

Xu Yangyi didn't persist with his thoughts. The clues were too few. Moreover... if Ming Guangzong had truly discovered such a thing, the cultivation world... would fall into upheaval; complete chaos! The entire foundational theory of Cultivation Civilization would suffer an intense attack. Even the philosophies of many cultivators would collapse.

An immortal was the supreme apex of those who cultivated. A vague and traceless existence in legend. This word's allure was enough to cause the entire world's Cultivation Civilization to turn heaven and earth upside down!

Regardless of whether it was China... India... Greece... The West...

It couldn't be more of a guess, yet even if it was, Xu Yangyi felt his heart wildly throbbing. He almost dared not imagine what he would do... if there existed an infinitesimally minor chance... that the clues that Ming Guangzong had discovered were honest-to-god related to this concept.

"Where did you put the page that Ming Guangzong made you show to them?" He asked lowly. No matter what the secret was, all the clues had to be gathered together first.

"To let master know." At this moment, Wei Zhongxian had already regained his wits and bowed: "Before His Majesty died, he gave me one last secret imperial decree. He ordered me to guard this place forever and use my life to form the seal here. I am unaware of how it was done. Celestial Master Zhang did nothing more than give me an exceptionally ancient talisman..."

"Celestial Master Talisman..." Xiaoqing clenched her teeth as she closed her eyes and murmured: "Daoism's Three Supreme Treasures... He really was even willing to part with this... but Guangzong died... not even permitting me to leave!"

Xu Yangyi wordlessly glanced at her. Regardless of how Ming Guangzong searched for an immortal, he was an emperor first. He still had to consider the Zhu Clan and the world. He made a deal with the devil and now that he was dead, how could he possibly release these two monsters?

As such, he acted in accordance with an emperor's basic course of action. Thus... although Wei Zhongxian had come here, the secret imperial decree didn't allow him to bring anything out.

"Meanwhile, His Majesty told me..." Wei Zhongxian bowed even deeper, took a glimpse at Xu Yangyi, and said flatteringly: "In the future... someone was certain to come here with the Emperor Armament in hand... His Majesty's original words were to 'greet this person as if we ourselves were there'."

"As for the page... His Majesty Guangzong took it into the Thirteen Ming Tombs. But at the same time..." Wei Zhongxian gritted his teeth and looked at the water beneath: "The Great Ming Palace... had a 100,000 eunuchs. All the eunuchs who were connected to this matter were buried here back then... Altogether... it was 54,862 people. And all of them... did it to reinforce the formation here, but I am the formation's core."

"I got it!" Zhao Wuye's gaze was like fire, and he laughed heartily: "I knew I wasn't wrong! I said earlier that the yin qi under this place was extremely heavy! There's no question that it's a 10,000-man pit! 50,000 people... A whole 50,000 people!"

At this moment, all riddles had been completely solved. Those that had vexed Xu Yangyi in the past. Such as what was in Danxia Temple, the origin of the Yellow Springs path, and the strange dimension inside the Yellow Springs path. Following the last person's emergence, everything was already broad and level without the slightest concealment.

The Dao Scripture was merely the surface. Upon hearing of this, Xu Yangyi understood a bit. The Dao Scripture's Ninth Section, the

Dao Scripture compiled by Celestial Master Zhang Guoxiang, wasn't a secret Dao canon on the market. Instead... it was a true cultivation secret belonging to the cultivation world! This included the great crafts and the grand collection of all kinds of apex divine abilities!

“So... this event was known as ‘Wanli Replenishing the Dao Scripture’ in the overall scope of history, but there was no true object marked as the ‘Wanli Dao Scripture’. Maybe it could be said...” Xu Yangyi parted open his clothing, and his gaze looked towards his chest pensively. He had already hung the dagger over his chest: “This... is Wanli’s Dao Scripture! The one that Wei Zhongxian talked about is the one that Ming Guangzong was able to let him see, the ‘Wanli Dao Scripture’ believed by mortals!”

“Perhaps it can be said... that this page is the real ‘Wanli Dao Scripture’!” Xu Yangyi murmured, and his gaze faintly twinkled: “This page is the object that the Emperor Armament wants to tell me about!”

“And the Thirteen Ming Tombs...” He raised his head, his gaze seemingly penetrating through all of Danxia Temple to look at the distant imperial capital: “might be where you really discovered a trace of that legend...”

“Master...” Wei Zhongxian’s eyes brightened: “This sword... is rather familiar. Where has t-this s-slave seemed to have seen it?”

“Where?” Xu Yangyi stopped his ponderings and immediately asked.

Wei Zhongxian seemed to wrack his brains for an answer and suddenly nodded: “Yes... after the Dao Scripture was done being compiled, His Majesty summoned Celestial Master Zhang on the night of that very day. I was waiting at the side. It seemed to flicker past my eye. On a piece of paper that His Majesty handed to Celestial Master Zhang, this object was drawn... and it wasn’t limited to just an appearance. Allow me to think...”

After a brief moment, he said positively: “That’s right, after that day, His Majesty ordered me to take that Dao Scripture page and hurry over here!”

Xu Yangyi mumbled to himself as he studied the dagger on his chest. All of a sudden, he laughed.

It didn’t matter. At this moment, all riddles had been more or less solved. There was only one true great secret remaining. This was much, much greater than anything that was still a mystery when he had just entered Danxia Temple. Wordless, he stood up and swept his eyes over the crowd.

Over a thousand people had entered Danxia Temple. In the end, they were the only ones to survive. Less than ten people... How many elites had lost their lives here? But ultimately, Zhao Wuye, Mao Ba’er, and Li Zongyuan—not elite cultivators by any stretch of the imagination—had come out alive.

He didn’t think about avenging these people. On the contrary, it was because of them that Xu Yangyi’s Dao-seeking heart had been casted and built with such incredible stability on this endless journey.

This was a kind of mental optimism.

“Seniors.” Xu Yangyi cupped his hands towards the sky: “I have a deal. I am ignorant but are seniors willing to listen?”

“Hehe...” The killing intent of Xiaoqing’s laughter was dense and eerie: “You still dare to talk of deals with This Palace? Are you using your life?”

Moments ago, she and Fahai had been incomparably terrified. That secret’s relation... was too great... even leading straight to ancient cultivators... and the ancient era! Perhaps before early ancient era! The Age of Enlightenment! [\[1\]](#)

However, they soon discovered that Wei Zhongxian didn’t understand the true picture. Xu Yangyi and the others were simply

unable to deduce the great secret's truth from those scaled claws. Despite the knowledge that Xuan-Yuan Sword was forced to take immediate action because an emperor had discovered a trace of this secret, what of it?

The most important thing... was leaving as soon as possible and welcoming the descent of this titanic secret! Already... there wasn't much time!

"If seniors open Danxia Temple for junior..."

"Hehehe..." The killing intent contained in Fahai's smile was even more frank, exposed down to the bone: "Will you even dare to come next time?"

"I will bring in all of the modern cultivation world's information each month."

The duo's voices came to a sudden halt. From centuries to a thousand years of misgivings and the lock on their qi seas, cultivation had become an extravagant hope! Nonetheless, the most painful thing wasn't being unable to cultivate but rather the infinite and endless loneliness.

Bitterly tormented by the second and minute, day and night, and month and year... they understood loneliness better than anyone else. The meaning of the two characters that were loneliness.

In an instant, this sentence rocked their thoughts. With a speed akin to a spring sun transforming into snowfall, the terrible killing intent in their hearts vanished quickly! It was to the extent that they didn't even detect the sliver of their barely remaining killing intents.

"What do you want?" Ten minutes later, Xiaoqing coldly said.

Xu Yangyi's eyes brightened: "Seniors... should have stashed behind a come-back treasury, right?"

"Impudent!!!" "What gall you have, junior!"

Speaking out at the same time, the two seniors mirrored nearly the same sentiment. This was too shameless... From the start, Xu Yangyi wanted their treasuries? Well, you're not going to snatch it!

Xu Yangyi laughed. From the conversation just now, he had confirmed a matter...

Perhaps these two people were essentially ignorant as to how rich the life of modern entertainment was. The word "grounded"... was too fitting with their present situation, practically tailored. [\[2\]](#)

"Seniors, perhaps you still don't have much of an understanding regarding the outside world to date, yes?" He cupped his hands and laughed: "Grandpa Wei died in the late Ming era. Do seniors know what the current era is after the late Ming era?"

Xiaoqing and Fahai didn't speak. In the same vein, this was something they urgently needed to know. However, each time they connected with their avatars, there was only so little time, not enough to explain the things that they wanted to know the most! In the future, this word of "urgently needed" was to be eliminated.

"You have a way?" After ages, Fahai said, his voice seemingly indifferent.

"Junior possesses a magik treasure, an item that can observe the approximate happenings on the present Earth. Furthermore, it can accurately reach every location. Its just that it can't pinpoint where seniors are."

"Oh?" Fahai's gaze flashed. He feigned serenity and said: "What is its name?"

Xu Yangyi paused and gently coughed: "Tele! Vision!"

"COUGH! Cough, cough, cough!" Fang Cheng broke into a fit of coughing. His hacking collapsed mountains and split the earth. Each cough was beyond control..

The others also wore expressions on their faces as if they had seen a ghost. Using television to exchange for a treasury... A

television worth several thousand Chinese dollars... treasury that defied both estimation and appraisal... This... How was it to be calculated... It seemed rather unequal...

“No... That’s not right...” Xuan Chengzi suddenly laughed: “Think about it, everyone. Apart from us letting them go, what else does everyone think that the two seniors fancy?”

Zhao Wuye pondered and shook his head. Indeed, there was nothing.

“But... television is different.” Xuan Chengzi glanced at Xu Yangyi in admiration: “We’re already so used to it that we don’t even want to watch it anymore. But to these two great demons, it is incredibly new and odd. And... we can get to them to explain what we want to know now.”

“Although it isn’t thorough enough, it’s like putting an oasis in a desert here. Besides explaining things to them, it can even help them get past their time of suffering. Everything has its own use. It just depends whether it’s used in the most appropriate place.”

Searing hot, he gazed towards Xu Yangyi: “In this place, the television is a god-send!”

Xiaoqing and Fahai shared a look. Their eyes held a sliver of vacantness.

Evidently, they didn’t know what television was!

“Is this magik treasure truly as you say it is? It can allow us to observe the world in this place?” A few seconds later, Xiaoqing said: “According to what I know, even those almighty figures couldn’t accomplish this. I know that this world is incredibly vast. Wei Zhongxian said that there were various countries beyond the ocean...”

Xu Yangyi forced down the smile in his heart and interrupted the other. He said with a solemn face: “This world is a sphere-shaped. Not only can the world of all the many foreign countries be

watched on the television, so can the major events in each of China's provinces. The magik treasure that is the television possesses a channel... No, a divine ability called 'CCTV' that reports each important matter that happens in China all day. There are several other divine abilities that can see the sceneries of the entire world and even those outside the Earth." [\[3\]](#)

"Beyond the Earth?" Fahai's eyes brightened and looked towards the crowd afterwards: "Is what he said true?"

In their hearts, all of them resisted the urge to smile. They nodded their heads as if they were pecking at rice.

The was a knowledge gap, eh...

"It's a good thing that it's Cultivation Civilization now..." Quan Ningyue sighed: "Otherwise... we would be bored out of our minds and bitterly cultivating just like them..."

[1] "Age of Enlightenment" is the direct translation of the characters that the author uses but it doesn't quite make sense in this context because most people know "Age of Enlightenment" as 17th to 19th century. What might actually be the era specified is that of "Xia Yu/Yu the Great" (2200 - 2100 BCE)

[2] "Grounded" kinda hard to find an equivalent for "宅" meaning "staying at home". I tangled with ideas like "staycation", "house arrest"

[3] CCTV is China Central Television, China's primary state television broadcaster.

Chapter 239: Danxia Temple (Finale)

“Child... you say... this world is shaped like a sphere?” Xiaoqing’s heart was beginning to waver.

Endless solitary, several thousand years of loneliness. She was even more lonesome than the star-crossed beauty of Cui Hu’s rosy affair! [\[1\]](#)

These things wouldn’t be useful to her if she didn’t escape one day.. Although a new and odd magik treasure failed to achieve parity in trading her treasury, using a few things she didn’t need to trade for this magik treasure called “television” was a great boon to her current situation. Furthermore, she would be able to understand all kinds of various matters around the globe.

These days, she no longer considered the question of leaving in the near future. In order to construct this 200,000-square-kilometer secret realm, she and Fahai had already used up all the qi that they were capable of mobilizing. Yet who could’ve expected that Wei Zhongxian was surprisingly left here by that mortal Ming Guangzong!

A millennium later, the emperor’s designs were finally exhibited to these two supreme greater demons!

“Not a single one of junior’s words are false.” Xu Yangyi had already committed himself fully to this drama. He sincerely cupped his hands and said: “Everyone is trapped here. I speak the truth; come heaven or hell, I dare not let either of you out. However, junior can still offer some benefits to the both of you.”

Everyone who was still conscious silently turned their heads and spat on the ground, sharing the same sentiment. Even Mao Ba’er was no exception.

Listening to such... competent marketing was all that they thought about. It was merely a pity... that if Fahai and Xiaoqing

were able to leave... it was unknown how they would feel upon seeing a street packed with televisions and then making a comparison to the items they had paid out...

“Very well.” A myriad schemes and strategies in her heart, Xiaoqing faintly nodded after several minutes: “I want to see this magik treasure in thirty days. If a single word that you’ve spoken is false...”

She gazed coldly at Xu Yangyi: “My escape is merely a question of time. At the longest, another five centuries will past. At the shortest, another two to three. If you are deceiving me... even if you flee to the ends of the Earth, you will still be within reach of This Palace’s hand.”

Finished speaking, she opened her mouth and spat out an azure writ medal. Xu Yangyi immediately heard Xiaoqing’s voice echo at the side of his ear: Xiang Province, Tianzi Mountain. This item will lead you to find the treasury I left behind. You may take one treasure with this writ medal.

As expected, Xiaoqing had left behind a back-up!

In his heart, Xu Yangyi laughed. He took the writ medal and stowed it into his storage ring. This was the treasury of a demon king who transcended Core Formation! It was unknown which one of her avatars had constructed this treasury, but an item able to enter Xiaoqing’s discerning eyes was in all likelihood no less than the Rootless Nine Bends Aqua!

“In that case, junior will be certain to bring the television within the month. But remember, this treasure mustn’t touch water.”

“With all speed.” Xiaoqing suppressed her heart’s longing and said indifferently.

“Yes.” Xu Yangyi didn’t leave: “I have another treasure that’s able to chat with people a thousand miles away. As long as the receiver’s information is stored inside this magik treasure and the

device can be orientated, contact can be made at any time. The time lag doesn't exceed three seconds..."

"What?" This time, Fahai's complexion changed: "You actually have this strange treasure?"

Once more, everyone turned their heads back and spat, all of them holding the same thought. Listening to Xu Yangyi's words, they guessed what the item was...

A cell phone!

Good... Once the television is finished, it's the cell phone. But after the cell phone is done, what else is there? Anyways, you can't bring in a computer for them, right?!

"This treasure... What is its name?" Fahai questioned, his gaze like fire.

"Cell phone." Xu Yangyi cupped his hands and said: "Junior will bring all the magik treasures together that form a set."

Such as headphones, data cables, and so on...

Fahai spoke no more. He simply hung his eyes low, sunk into deep contemplation.

Xiaoqing... He wasn't worried about the people she was acquainted with. Was there any among them that hadn't already passed away? Who would she be able to find?

However... he was different! Good or bad, he was the master of Jinshan Temple! Even if Jinshan Temple had died away, Buddhism had many burning joss sticks and disciples! Even if hundreds or thousands of zealots were sacrificed, as long as one of them arrived before him, all situations would surely cycle back in reverse!

This treasure... He HAD to obtain it!

He ceased the machinations in his mind. The passion of his gaze lightened by a sliver and his heart smouldered. However, his mouth became even more gentle and weak like clouds and winds:

“Young fellow... you know, if you’re deceiving me... If there is a day when This Sage Lord escapes, I will completely obliterate you in mind and soul even if you flee beyond this world.”

“Junior dares not.” Xu Yangyi cupped his hands even more sincerely: “But this treasure also can’t come in contact with water. In addition, this treasure doesn’t allow senior to make one-way connections. The other party has to also have this treasure for communications to work.”

“Not just this, the other party’s secret connection code is required, and senior’s secret connection code has to be known to other. Once both sides establish a connection, it’s impossible for the connection to be lost unless the magik treasure in the other’s possession is damaged. Even during seclusion, this connection is certain to be immediately received!”

There was actually such a convenient treasure!

Fahai’s pupils needed. In the modern cultivation world, wasn’t it said that qi was becoming progressively weaker and the era had entered the End of Days? Yes... this should’ve been so. They had no choice but to develop the crafts. Nonetheless, thanks to this, how would they otherwise be capable of possessing such a fast magik treasure? Even he still required a period of time to prepare a connection with someone who was separated by a vast distance.

“Continue speaking.”

“Yes.” Xu Yangyi nodded: “This treasure is divided into three ranks. The first is called Telecom. Their signal... No, their communication quality is the worst. Usually, the sound quality will be fuzzy. The second is called Xiaomi. There’s no question about communicating within the country. The third is called iPhone. One can even communicate with foreign cultivators. But likewise, you have to know the other party’s contact details.” [\[2\]](#)

The gears of Fahai’s mind turned ever so slowly.

In his thoughts, Xu Yangyi laughed grimly. Even if you think more, you still won't be able to imagine the subtleties in this! You really think this era is called Cultivation Civilization in vain? Even if our realms are worst than ancient cultivators, which item these days wouldn't be considered a treasure by ancient cultivators if it was put forward?

That wasn't to mention the sects of the past. To what level of sect cohesion would they have to improve to in order to accomplish the feats of a single man with a cell phone? How many vassal sects of rogue cultivators would come forth from a room equipped with a television and computer?

"Telecom, Xiaomi, and iPhone. The names of this treasure is rather strange... It is not according to any kind of naming method that I know of." Fahai mumbled to himself and glanced at Xu Yangyi: "Could it be that you are deceiving me?"

"Junior dares not." Xu Yangyi gestured at the crowd of people behind him: "All the people here use this treasure. Senior can ask as you wish."

Once more in concert, everyone nodded their heads like young chicks pecking rice.

Fahai leveled a steely gaze at Xu Yangyi. After several seconds, he coldly snorted and a copper key floated out from the crown of his head and flew towards Xu Yangyi.

Below Jinshan Temple, look for a golden brick. Like Xiaoqing, his voice was secretly relayed: This key can only take one treasure. Moreover, you must do as I say and find an old friend of mine. If he is still alive in this world, you must get his information and inform me of it.

However, Xu Yangyi didn't take the key. He murmured to himself for a short moment and said awkwardly: "Senior, this isn't enough."

“Junior...” Fahai gnashed his teeth and forcibly suppressed the thought of using his life source to slap Xu Yangyi into dust and ash. He was a grand high-level cultivator. How can any one of my stored treasures not be enough for a Qi Condensation insect like you to enjoy for the rest of your life?! How can you be so picky!

“Know contentment... only then can you live long and prosper.” Fahai finished saying these cold words.

Nevertheless, Xu Yangyi replied neither slowly nor hurriedly: “Senior, that’s just how it is. I still don’t know which rank you’re going to choose. That’s the first. The second is that how much energy would I have to spend to help senior find your good friend from back then? Manpower? Rather than this, I might as well not come through with this deal.”

Crack... A crisp sound was heard from behind Fahai. It was the sound of his fists tightly wringing together. He was unexpectedly being haggled by a Qi Condensation insect! A kind of extreme disgust surfaced in his heart. After a long time, he said coldly, his voice strange: “In that case, it depends on what you see, yes?”

“Junior naturally recommends the iPhone. This device was crafted by a foreign senior, a Grand Artificer named Jobs. Xiaomi and Telecom both have the problem of having a short usefulness period...”

“Then it is the iPhone.” Fahai seemed to study Xu Yangyi as if he saw everything clearly: “As expected, an artificed magik treasure of a foreign cultivator. Jobs was it? Could he be a descendant of Qidan’s Qiao Clan? iPhone? He takes the phoenix as his totem? Each name is stranger than the last.” [\[3\]](#)

In a flash, a kind of IQ-crushing feeling arose within all the present people’s reverence towards this senior, indescribable in its ascension. Fahai remained taciturn for several seconds and then sighed. His gaze flashed and the copper key flew back. A silver key flew in front of Xu Yangyi.

“My treasury has altogether twenty-six treasure. With this key...” He gritted his teeth somewhat painfully: “You can take three items from within. But, you must also deliver this magik treasure called a ‘cell phone’ within the month.”

“Very well.” Xiaoqing said indifferently: “If there’s nothing else, be quick and scam from Danxia Temple... Besides...” She eyed Xu Yangyi, absent of an iota of emotion: “Boy... you best pray that you don’t come across This Palace again.”

She had pondered very much, contemplated many ways to entice Xu Yangyi. Danxia Temple continued to filter out countless people, but unexpectedly, she and the sole living people had struck up a deal in the end.

A human’s mind was odd like so. After Wei Zhongxian appeared, she immediately realized that perhaps her thoughts of escape this time were hopeless. However, under the worst premise of this hopelessness, an acceptable proposal had suddenly appeared. As for hatred, she did admittedly hate these people. Surprisingly, they hadn’t saved her. And yet such hatred was strangely far less severe than what she had imagined.

“If so, this slave will bring everyone out.” Wei Zhongxian laughed.

“Hold on.” Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows: “We have another a companion. After we entered, we didn’t see him.”

Originally, Yao Xintan had come in together with him yet failed to appear again.

“Master, I am powerless regarding this matter.” Wei Zhongxian shook his head: “This land, the deepest part of this place, is a space transformed by the two immortals. There are endless perils. If he didn’t emerged at the start, he was probably incapable of appearing...”

Xu Yangyi sighed, bearing a faint sorrow as he surveyed all

around. The end... Everything had come to an end.

This Danxia Temple journey, braving the risks of entering the last inner temple... finally came to an end here... The billowing climaxes, the mutual deceptions, and mortal struggles along this path were akin to smoke passing the eyes. A thousand people had entered, but all who ultimately survived were these people.

“The path of cultivation has always been a tribulation of bristle and thorn.” These words slipped out from his mouth, and he glanced at the bottom of Danxia Temple again, nodding: “Let’s go.”

“But before this, I hope to help master with all my power.” Wei Zhongxian laughed. His hand flickered. In an instant, Fahui’s head fell to the ground!

Fahai merely glanced, simply aloof. Xiaoqing was further unmoved.

Although Wei Zhongxian wasn’t a cultivator, he had been forcibly promoted by someone to a Foundation Establishment cultivation. At this moment, this cultivation still remained. Killing Fahui who had already received heavy injuries didn’t need too much effort.

“This man harbored evil in his heart. He was not of the same path as master’s.” Wei Zhongxian pursed his lips: “Is master satisfied?”

Xu Yangyi shot an eye towards Fahui’s corpse and nodded. Leaving this person behind was a calamity.

Wei Zhongxian laughed: “Before leaving, this slave still has one last question.”

“Can master sense the Animus Armament?”

Xu Yangyi gently felt outwards and suddenly lifted his head. To his surprise, he discovered... that he could actually sense Wei Zhongxian’s “life” inside!

It was state that was difficult to describe. Wei Zhongxian was obviously a dead man, yet here, Wei Zhongxian was akin to an object of his creation! Xu Yangyi could destroy the other at any time! But most importantly... Wei Zhongxian was just like Li Zongyuan, communicating with his spiritual sense!

Now wasn't the time to ask about these things... Xu Yangyi's gaze wordlessly glanced at everyone. In his heart, he directed a final command at Wei Zhongxian and nodded: "Go."

A streak of white light brightened. Everyone disappeared from where they stood.

[1] "Cui Hu's rosy affair" is a story concerning a literary talent named Cui Hu and a beautiful unnamed girl. It takes place during the Tang dynasty. There are several versions of the story I have seen, but they always start out the same. Cui Hu arrives at home and knocks on the door for water, thirsty. A beautiful girl arrives, and he is dumbstruck by her beauty. She hands him water to drink, but because he is so dumbstruck he doesn't say anything the entire time and only asks for more water. He never speaks to her, but there is a clear feeling between the two. He eventually leaves, the peach blossoms "tapping" his shoulder to remind him (this is why the poem is known as A Face and a Peach Blossom. The ending then diverges:

1: Cui Hu returns a year later on the same day because this girl is continuously on his mind. When he returns, he learns that the girl married and his opportunity is missed. He writes a sad poem to express his feelings and leaves. (One version sees that the girl has already married when Cui Hu returns so he writes the sad poem) Cui Hu returns a year later on the same day but doesn't find the girl. He leaves behind the poem to express his feelings and takes his leave. The girl then reads the poem and fall ill because she thinks she has missed an opportunity to meet a good man. Cui Hu finds out and the pair are united. They marry.

2: Cui Hu Returns a year later on the same day but doesn't find

the girl. He leaves behind the poem to express his feelings and takes his leave. The girl reads the poem and is so sad that she dies. Cui Hu later on hears her father's crying and talks to the man, blamed by the father for having killed his daughter. Cui Hu meets the girl and she is revived. They both get married and live happily ever after.

[2] Telecom/Xiaomi are what I believe to be Chinese Mobile companies. Well, I think iPhone would be self explanatory, but it is an Apple product.

[3] 爱凤 - Chinese slang for iPhone. The second character here is phoenix. This is why Fahai is getting confused/making assumptions about Steve Jobs. Literally means "Love Phoenix" The Qidan people are said to be turkic/uyghur in origin.

Chapter 240: Severed Arm

A slight dizziness emerged in Xu Yangyi's mind. As he opened his eyes, he had already arrived once more at the initial starting point of the Yellow Springs path. Of those who were alive... there was him, Fang Cheng, Mao Ba'er, Xuan Chengzi, Quan Ningyue, and Zhao Wuye; the six of them were still awake. The unconscious Li Zongyuan, Yi Old Five, and Sister Nine had been delivered on the floor besides them.

Everyone closed their eyes and meditated. Wei Zhongxian and Xuan Chengzi followed at Xu Yangyi's side like shadows. Wei Zhongxian's gaze beared a frosty glint. Discreet, he swept an eye over the surroundings, lowering his head and saying gently: "Master. How about I take action and handle them..."

He had a smile on his face as he lightly dragged a finger over his neck, yet his facial expression was without the slightest change.

Xu Yangyi raised a brow. Wei Zhongxian truly was deserving of being the great and crafty official of that bygone era... Among all the present people, or perhaps a Foundation Establishment Senior... the cumulated number of lives they had taken would fall short in comparison to this old fellow. Those unloyal to Xu Yangyi were to be killed. Those who didn't follow Xu Yangyi were to be killed. Those who couldn't be controlled were to be killed. This title as "Nine Thousand Years" was in no way undeserved. In killing people, regardless of whether or not they were cultivators, there was no question that Wei Zhongxian wouldn't be mentally burdened in the slightest.

However, Xu Yangyi didn't nod immediately. Apart from the Xingtian Legion, both Yi Old Five and Sister Nine were open game on the chopping block. Sister Nine was moreover a person of the Ming Clan. And yet...

He shook his head. He couldn't kill them. As he called these

things to mind... it was unknown how many clans and powers were outside and impatiently waiting for people to come out. If only the Xingtian Legion walked out through those doors... then where did everyone else go? Did they died? How did they die? Why was it that over a thousand people had entered, but only nine had come out alive?

Presently, the Xingtian Legion was too young and inexperienced. They were simply unable to weather such roaring winds and pounding waves. But if those of the Ming Clan, Yi Clan, and the Dao Sect came out together as well, the primary focus wouldn't be on him, even if the Xingtian Legion had the most people alive.

Cultivation had never merely considered the concept of realm as supreme. For each person, there existed a time when they were weak.

Upon seeing the minor fluctuations of Xu Yangyi's gaze, Wei Zhongxian quickly cajoled and laughed: "Whatever master says is what this slave will do. Master's considerations are superb. The powerful lineages naturally have their own responsibilities. We only need to hide behind them from the coming elements and tribulations."

The crook of Xu Yangyi's mouth twitched, and he lowered his voice: "Alter their memories about what they saw inside. I know you can do it. Your identity can't be revealed in particular. There's also my business."

"An enlightened sage is no more than his master." Wei Zhongxian laughed, tacitly understanding. Following a wave of his hand, he isolated the others' sense of hearing: "In accordance with master's command just now, I had already done so when we transferred out. These matters were of His Majesty's considerations. Apart from the ancestral hall of Dragon Tiger Mountain's Zhang Clan, none can remove Celestial Master Zhang's secret sealing technique... but may I be so bold to state that the best method would be to take commander's subordinates..."

Wei Zhongxian's eyes flashed with an ominous glint. Xu Yangyi brushed an eye over the group. Hesitating for a moment, he ultimately shook his head, firm.

“Master...”

“I can't.” Xu Yangyi sighed deeply and looked towards the top of the cavern: “Everyone has their own path. Erasing a part of their memories about me is the best way to go about it...” His eyes suddenly fell, and he studied Wei Zhongxian: “Am I soft-hearted?”

Wei Zhongxian laughed wryly, not answering.

“Or maybe.” Xu Yangyi stood up, leaned against a wall, and lit a cigarette: “Yes, the most reliable way would be to kill the witnesses and leave behind the ones who passed out and can't be killed... but I, I have my own path.”

“Even if it's wrong, I'm willing to fix it again after it brings me pain.” He gazed at his cigarette butt: “I'll give them a chance. And I'll behind a conscience in my heart.”

Wei Zhongxian spoke no further. Someone as astute as him understood all too well about the word “bottom line”. Not everyone enjoyed passing judgement on others.

However, he disapproved of Xu Yangyi's way of handling matters. A general's merits were achieved through the sacrifice of countless withered bones. Didn't these people take his master as “countless bones? What other use did they have apart from being “withered”? [\[1\]](#)

Xu Yangyi took a bit of the spicy smoke into his chest. This then caused his mind to shake, pulling him away from his thoughts. He gazed towards his left arm. Looking at it for a long time, he didn't speak. In silence, Wei Zhongxian stood deferentially at his side.

“Commander.” At this time, a woman's voice softly rang out: “Are you worried about your severed arm?”

At some unknown time, Quan Ningyue had stopped meditating

and followed Xu Yangyi's gaze, her sight landing on his arm. Studying the ugly yet glorious scar for a long period of time, she suddenly laughed: "So now you know what worry is? And here I believed that commander would always be carefree."

Xu Yangyi held his cigarette in his mouth and laughed: "If I didn't do it back then, none of us would be standing here right now."

"Do you regret it?" Quan Ningyue chuckled and asked: "Body part loss causes a cultivator to be unable to perform the most basic seal-forming. Mortals can just buy a walking stick or get a cast... but not us."

"Without the various meridians in this body part, how can a full qi cycle be cycled? How can someone cultivate without cycling? Besides, how can seals be formed without a hand? How can certain divine abilities that require hand meridians be used?" She looked into Xu Yangyi's eyes: "You really didn't think about this back then?"

Xu Yangyi sighed and extinguished his cigarette butt: "If I said I didn't regret it, then that would be a lie. But there are some things that you have to do even if you're well aware that you shouldn't."

Quan Ningyue deeply studied Xu Yangyi's eyes—such a contemplative expression on a lolita-looking woman was somewhat unbecoming. After ages, she said nothing. Instead, she stood up and formed a Dao-seal with her right hand. In an instant, her left hand slowly opened up like a machine.

Whir... Following a nearly silent mechanical sound, rays of mysterious blue light penetrated through from the opened crack little by little. This was her greatest secret. Although it could no longer be considered a secret after Danxia Temple, this was the first time that Xu Yangyi had viewed Quan Ningyue's "interior" at close range.

The inside was densely spread out with profound talismans... In

the next second, the machinery within Quan Ningyue's arm revolved without warning, starting to assemble and install. In less than two seconds, her left hand shockingly transformed into a man-sized shield! The shield's surface was engraved with a powerful and fierce beast. Even Xu Yangyi didn't clearly see how her arm transformed into a shield.

"This shield contains a divine ability. Its name is Vajra Unbreakable." Quan Ningyue didn't look at Xu Yangyi but rather continued to speak, minding after herself: "It can resist three strikes from a half-step Foundation Establishment. At and under late-stage Qi Condensation, this shield can block over 80% of injuries."

Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to respond, her right hand formed another seal. The front of the shield glimmered with tens of blue rays. As the brilliance disappeared, Quan Ningyue's left hand, the region below her elbow, had shockingly transformed into a strange longsword!

"This sword is a supreme-grade magik artifact." Quan Ningyue still didn't look at Xu Yangyi. She raised her left hand and gently cried out. An azure light suddenly twinkled and the water in front of her exploded into a several-tens-of-meters-tall tide with a rumble.

"It's not that I can't outfit into even better magik treasures, but my 'fleshly body' just can't take it." Quan Ningyue stowed her gaze and observed her sword pensively. She whispered: "My left hand has a total of three forms. The other one is a cannon. It's also a supreme-grade magik artifact. Moreover... this magik artifact contains a divine ability called..."

"The Spirit Extermination Cannon." Xu Yangyi seemed to understand what Quan Ningyue wanted to say and calmly looked at her hand: "You're saying..."

"My left hand's design is called 'the Three Moongazers'. It's a

schematic left behind by a Qing-era Foundation Establishment senior.” Quan Ningyue turned around, pursing her lips as she looked at Xu Yangyi: “My body is weak. But... according to what I know, master has five schematics in his possession. The best model was bestowed by Ancestor Skybearer. It is known... as the Ketu-Rahu Sword.” [\[2\]](#)

The light of Xu Yangyi’s eyes was already starting to flicker. He completely understood what Quan Ningyue wanted to say. She hadn’t selected a blunt explanation but was instead telling Xu Yangyi through practical means that even if his arm had been severed, he was in no way powerless to act!

“Master once allowed me to read the schematics for the Ketu-Rahu Sword. It...” She inhaled deeply: “is the heartblood of an ancient cultivator’s work... to call it the arm of a qilin is no understatement... commander.”

Both her hands formed seals at a dizzying pace. Her left hand droned as it opened, yet in this instant, Foundation Establishment qi madly torrented out from her left arm!

Blue runes fluttered like butterflies and lingered over her hand, but both of her hands had shockingly formed a cannon! A thumb-sized light orb was shimmering in her palm. In the wake of this brightening, Xu Yangyi, Quan Ningyue, and even Wei Zhongxian, who was standing with his hands behind his back, lifted their heads in astonishment!

The surrounding qi was like a gale screaming! At this moment, the winds actually solidified! It caused their clothes to wildly dance!

“The Spirit Extermination Cannon... can slay half-step Foundation Establishment.” After several seconds, Quan Ningyue released a pent-up sigh of relief, her forehead wet with cold sweat. Both of her hands automatically disassembled, returning to their original states. She looked gravely at Xu Yangyi: “And the Ketu-

Rahu Sword... can fight... a true Foundation Establishment Senior!”

“But, the Ketu-Rahu Sword requires an exceedingly powerful constitution. A spiritual sense that transcends that of a genius! Furthermore, the materials are rather precious. In these many years... master has never found a person that could bear this magik prosthesis. It’s possibly the present cultivation world’s most classical schematic.”

“Its might... is at least ten times greater than the Three Moongazers schematics!”

Xu Yangyi nodded with heavy understanding. In this extremely dangerous Danxia Temple journey, he had realized his greatest flaw. That was his great lack of divine abilities and magik artifacts. Perhaps he was enough against his chosen legionnaires, but confronted with the geniuses of all the noble lineages, he was absolutely inadequate!

Danxia temple was only his beginning. In the future, who knew whether or not he would go to the Dragon Hole? The Heavenly Pit? Kunlun’s Death Valley? Could it be that the two greater demons, unknown to both sun and sky, were sealing each other every time? Each occasion relying on the back-up that Ming Guangzong had left behind?

“Strength...” He tightly clenched his fists, his thirst towards strength turning hot and firm in his heart once again.

“Master, to tell the truth, this slave has a few words. I am unaware whether or not they should be said.” Wei Zhongxian said discreetly in understanding, peering at his master’s face.

Xu Yangyi curbed his thoughts. While strength was admittedly important, it wasn’t something that could be reached with an increase in speed. He was one to cultivate step by step.

“Please speak, Grandpa Wei...”

“Oh dear~ Master can just address me as your humble servant, but if you truly wish to display your affections, my childhood name was ‘Whitey Brows’. If master is not disinclined, call me by this name.”

No frickin’ thanks! Xu Yangyi almost spat on the ground. Whitey... Brows? This really fucking was... cringey as hell! Nonetheless.. the one who caused him such discomfort was a true Foundation Establishment cultivator... who was also quite possibly much stronger than other Foundation Establishment cultivators...

“I’ll keep on calling you ‘Grandpa Wei’, alright?” There was no way that Wei Zhongxian could be called ‘Whitey Brows’. If this got out and the name of ‘Whitey Brows’ slipped out, everyone would definitely believe that such a picturesque name belonged to a supreme beauty.

And then three seconds later... the peerless enchantress Wei Zhongxian’s old sagging face would emerge...

This scene was too beautiful. He dared not imagine it.

[1] “A general’s merits are achieved through the sacrifice of countless withered bones.” Poem from late Tang Poet Cao Song. 828-903 CE

[2] Ketu and Rahu are both lunar nodes in Vedic (Indian) astrology. These nodes just happen to be the points when eclipses are possible. Without astronomical/religious connotation, Ketu-Rahu Sword could be very well named “Eclipse Sword”.

Chapter 241: Immortality Everlasting

Upon seeing the twisting and cramping on Xu Yangyi's lips, Wei Zhongxian quickly flattered and laughed: "This slave has overstepped himself... but you must remember by all means, master, that you're body has been reformed by Immortress Yu."

"Who is this?" Quan Ningyue faintly knitted her brows. She felt... that this person... was quite familiar. Where had she seen him? Her impression of him even seemed to be quite deep? Nonetheless, she still couldn't recollect him in her memories.

"I'll talk about it later." Xu Yangyi laughed: "Fellow Daoist... Wei, you can continue."

Quan Ningyue glanced at Wei Zhongxian suspiciously. She felt him to be above the Great Circle of Qi Condensation... Who was this person?

"Yes. When I was in the palace, His Majesty was obsessed with cultivation. But it wasn't that he had never met a so-called Foundation Establishment cultivator. Even if master finds it ridiculous, there were a total of thirty Foundation Establishment seniors in the palace during His Majesty Guangzong's reign. Yet even altogether, they would be no more than a ten-thousandth of Immortress Yu in power."

"I fear that Immortress Yu has indeed long since neared the omniscient realm of the demon immortals in legend... On that day, I accepted His Majesty Guangzong's secret imperial decree to enter this place. Apart from requesting the two celestials to unravel the secret, there was another secret order..." He narrowed his eyes: "His Majesty was infatuated with cultivation... How could he possibly relinquish such an opportunity? The secret imperial decree he gave me was: 'if possible... do your utmost to trade for the two celestials' cultivation methods'!"

Xu Yangyi and Quan Ningyue grew solemn. The prime arcane

effort of a true demon king. Merely its name was a secret of supreme importance!

Wei Zhongxian also tactfully lowered his voice: “Although this deal didn’t fall through, I do indeed know the arcane effort that Immortress Yu cultivates. Her arcane effort...” He took a deep breath: “is known as... the Azure Emperor Demonification Art!”

“However, Immortress Yu seems not to have obtained the complete edition. She changed the name to the ‘Azure Lotus Demonic Art’. In this art, there is a move... called ‘Azure Lotus Reincarnation’.” He finished speaking and bowed respectfully towards Xu Yangyi.

Azure Lotus Reincarnation? In a twinkling, Xu Yangyi’s eidetic memory gained from the pill spirit found the source of this name. His gaze flashed: “This Azure Lotus Reincarnation... is the arcane effort that Senior Xiaoqing used on my body?”

“If my guess is not incorrect, this was the move used on master’s body.” Wei Zhongxian said solemnly: “It just so happens that on that day, Immortress Yu once spoke to this slave about the Lotus Reincarnation in order to lure me into undoing the seal... This arcane effort is the Azure Emperor Forbidden Art. It can reverse Yin and Yang, regrowing a severed limb!”

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak. Wei Zhongxian’s intention was obvious. If he could completely read the Azure Lotus Demonic Art once, perhaps... he would truly be capable of regrowing his left arm!

“Lotus Reincarnation, huh...” The fingers of his right hand unconsciously stroked his left arm’s wound, yet in this moment, an idea suddenly took root in his heart. It germinated and swiftly bloomed, bearing fruit. Growing tall to touch the heavens, a great tree was born.

“The Azure Lotus Demonic Art... Lotus Reincarnation...” He took an extended drag of his cigarette and shut his eyes. Far too many people had died this time. Those who should’ve died and those

who shouldn't have. In Danxia Temple, all living things were equal. Only those two supreme greater demons were the true kings. The adventuring cultivators held the will to persevere and the dream of cultivation. Yet in order to seek destiny, they had been buried here.

From among a thousand people, less than ten remained. How miserable was this? Xu Yangyi cared not for others, but although he hadn't been acquainted with Zhou Tingting, Cheng Jianfeng, Yang Xueqing, Gao Wuguo, and Yao Xintan for long, and even if his feelings towards them couldn't be said to be profound, he had a responsibility.

Being tall, handsome, or having stubble wasn't enough to be called a man. On the contrary, only through this responsibility and execution of duty could one be called this word. Otherwise, it was only a shallow varnish.

Since the Lotus Reincarnation was able to save he who was dying on that day... then couldn't it bring the others back to life? Once this thought emerged, it bloomed madly like a weed.

After ages, Xu Yangyi opened his eyes. They were a tranquil expanse, yet this tranquility concealed a wisp of lamentation that was hidden to the utmost depth. Quietly, he gazed at the abyssal tunnel that lead towards the Yellow springs path.

Never mind it... These matters were still too distant from him. Too far away... Now wasn't the time to seek Xiaoqing and ask for the Lotus Reincarnation...

For the time being... I'll just bury everything here... This blood-drenched path, this period of mortal combat, and this perilous Danxia Temple journey to seek destiny, bury all of it here...

Regardless of Zhou Tingting, Yang Xueqing, and no matter what concerning Cheng Jianfeng and Yao Xintan... or perhaps the two supreme greater demons, just let the secrets of this place and the bitter blood-dyed memories of the great clans exist here forever...

The day that I, Xu Yangyi, assail this place, is the day that I'll have the true qualifications to face Xiaoqing—the day that this absolute demon will propose looking over the Lotus Reincarnation!

“Wait for me.” He cupped his fists and bowed lowly to the floor, facing the deep and quiet cavern. He didn't straighten up for a very long time.

Over nine hundred lives... The lives of over nine hundred cultivators, at the mere selfish desire of two eternal greater demons, they would accompany Danxia Temple's greatest secret, sealed here for all eternity.

Everything was slowly undone. Xiaoqing had been imprisoned here and discovered the reincarnation of Jiang Shang who was Xu Xuan. In his recklessness and haste, Fahai had taken action to seek a breakthrough for his realm. He had sought this place yet played an “unhappy couple” with Xiaoqing. Along with Ming Guangzong's emergence and Wei Zhongxian staying behind to settle business, all these events had crafted today's calamity of Danxia Temple.

In the midst of these designs, a complete network of arteries and veins was already on full display, down to the finest hair, even if there were some aspects that were unclear.

“I hope your valiant spirits don't disperse. Wait until I come back...” Xu Yangyi paused for several seconds. His voice seemed gentle to the ear, yet it was incomparably resolute: “By my banner, I will raise a hundred thousand and slay King Yama. We will return victorious.” [\[1\]](#)

Finished speaking, he used his lone arm to mobilize his spiritual force. A crashing sound rang out, and countless brownish-yellow stones fell down like feathers in its wake. These stones tightly sealed off this infernal entrance.

“Go.” Xu Yangyi took one last glance at the entrance leading to the Nine Nethers. He turned around without the slightest

reluctance: “Let’s go back to the Featherwood Guard. Fellow Daoist Quan, help me contact Grandmaster Gao Muya. I will pay respects to the senior myself.”

“Of course.” Quan Ningyue laughed: “A suitable candidate for the Ketu-Rahu Sword has never been found. If there’s chance that commander can handle it... I want to see what it looks like. The appearance of a schematic that master has never forged.”

The place they were was the original location where they had slain the livyatan. The giant whale corpse was still floating in the water as before. Xu Yangyi suddenly halted, turned his head, and said: “After we leave, what path will Grandpa Wei take later on?”

Wasn’t the implication of these words asking Wei Zhongxian whether he could hurry on and take his leave if there was no other pressing matters?

Wei Zhongxian looked at Xu Yangyi in surprise: “Master, y-you don’t want me?”

“...” Ever so discreet, Xu Yangyi and Quan Ningyue didn’t reply.

“Master...” Prompt in action, Wei Zhongxian kneeled deferentially on the ground: “His Majesty said... after I meet my new master, we must immediately leave for the Thirteen Tombs. To respectfully welcome master’s esteemed arrival.”

“Oh?” Xu Yangyi smiled faintly: “How does he know that I’ll go?”

“That is something that this slave is unaware of.”

Cool and collected, Xu Yangyi swept his gaze over the kneeling Wei Zhongxian.

The Thirteen Ming Tombs... If his theory was true... No, it could be said now that only this kind of explanation was the most fitting concerning Ming Guangzong’s attitude back then! In that case... amidst his unwittingness, the emperor had possibly long since touched upon the entire cultivation world, an entity that no man had discovered despite searching for over a millennium!

And that... was an illusory legend! As for the clue to this legend, there was a chance that it laid within the Thirteen Ming Tombs!

All of a sudden, Xu Yangyi felt that everything in his surroundings seemed to come about by accident. In this moment, this thought in his mind occupied his entire spirit.

This train of thought unconsciously surfaced as if it was alive. He pondered much... His cultivation was for the sake of vengeance, against the foe he had yet to encounter to this day. The Featherwood Guard possessed its own merit system. Upon returning this time, his achievements were sure to hold the qualifications to examine the SSS-rank demons database. So long as that crow appeared... he would soon know who It was!

And yet... what came after vengeance?

Through cultivating to this very day, his cultivation had already become his breathing. Inhaling and exhaling had become habit ages ago. After his vengeance, could it be that he would assume the guise of an ordinary mortal?

“No...” His gaze glimmered: “I’m already standing on the mountain top. Why walk down?”

“Besides...” He smiled and gently waved his hand. The wall across from him thudded as a hand-sized fist imprint appeared on it. The surroundings were ready to come rumbling down at any time. He calmly looked and gently shook his head: “This society can’t contain a true dragon...”

He quietly murmured to himself. Quan Ningyue and Wei Zhongxian didn’t speak. This was a minor moment of enlightenment. They understood rather well that they couldn’t disturb Xu Yangyi now.

Xu Yangyi crouched down and picked up a stone off the ground, casually squeezing it in his palm: “And I don’t want to return to my original path and carry one... I’m gonna keep on climbing up

and cross through the dangerous peak that many call ‘realm’. If there’s even a billionth of a chance that it’s real in my imagination... then I have a solid target! A true goal!”

He felt the sharp nooks and corners of the rock in his hand: “As a cultivator, it’s a goal worth struggling an entire lifetime for.”

Let’s take a look... at cultivation’s end, at that vague legend, if a man is allowed true immortality! Whether or not it truly transcends the Earth, the immortal realm enshrined in legend!

If immortals truly existed why hadn’t there been a single confirmation across several thousands of years?

If immortals didn’t exist, then what could Xiaoqing be considered? Zhang Daoling, Xuanzang, Wei Boyang, and Sixth Patriarch Huineng... These figures had certainly existed in history. Great cultivators who were fully capable of welcoming the modern age with their lifespans, where had they gone? [\[2\]](#)

“Eternal life.” He opened his hand. The stone had already become fine powder. He gazed at it, somewhat spellbound, and laughed without warning: “Really... I’m still just a regular guy. Something that can move an emperor’s heart... That’s right... I’m tempted too...”

Maybe it was due to the effect of the lotus seed that Xiaoqing had buried in his mind or this desperate journey, but his heart of cultivation was rather touched. In this instant, he almost wasn’t aware of the people surrounding him. He had entered a realm of his own.

As the final word of his innermost being was completed, his brows moved. He then seemed to notice that Wei Zhongxian and Quan Ningyue looking at him with a kind of bewildered gaze. He laughed: “What’s up?”

“Noth... ing...” For a brief moment, Wei Zhongxian studied Xu Yangyi with full attention. In the end, he bowed reverently: “This

slave congratulates master for finding enlightenment in a few things.”

“Enlightenment, huh...” Xu Yangyi clapped his hands: “You can think of it like that.”

[1] “By my banner, I will raise a hundred thousand and slay King Yama.” This phrase is part of a larger poem by Chen Yi (1901-1972), a politician of the PRC. The original intent is to strike against the nationalist (Kuomintang), but in general, it is an idea of “going to hell to rally the spirits of the deceased to fight” A rallying cry.

[2] Zhang Daoling and Wei Boyang should be familiar figures. Zhang Daoling is also generally titled as Celestial Master Zhang. Wei Boyang is the creator of the Eternal Alchemy Canon. Xuanzang (602-664) is a Buddhist monk famously known for going to India to collect the original Buddhist texts and translating them into Chinese. Sixth Patriarch Huineng (638-713) is considered the Sixth Ancestor of Chan Buddhism. A mummy of him (allegedly) is placed in Nanha Temple in Shaoguan.

Chapter 242: Foundation Establishment Descends

“Master, it’s not that simple. Wei Zhongxian said seriously: “Cultivation is to cultivate a solitary lonesomeness. To cultivate a pride and arrogance akin to plum flowers defying snowfall. To cultivate an eternity to stand as long as heaven and earth, a true made whole, not void. Amidst this, a great cultivator looks on as azure oceans become mulberry fields. To gaze at the rise and fall of dynasties. A delivery of far too many stirrings to the people.”

“In China, there is an old saying. Walk a journey of a thousand miles to experience the world and read ten thousand books to learn of it. In fact, it really isn’t speaking of walking a thousand miles and reading ten thousand books... but instead the flowers and grasses, the people and creatures during this journey that change a man oh-so secretly. The emotions of a man’s heart. So as a cultivator’s realm becomes higher, it’s easier for a kind thing to appear...”

“A heart devil?” Xu Yangyi chuckled. Presently, he still didn’t know why he felt like this. He had obviously lost an arm, yet his mood was quite relaxed. Perhaps it was the gain of this new objective, to have something worthy of him to work towards to that caused him to shine with a second wind...

Just like when he had originally entered Heavens Law...

“Indeed.” Wei Zhongxian bowed and said: “As high-level cultivators become fewer and fewer in number, the heart devil thereupon becomes an entity even harder to break through than the bodily limiter for cultivators who have cultivated for over two centuries. Thus, there are none among high-level cultivators who lack an indomitable will and steadfast wisdom.”

Xu Yangyi nodded: “Did Fellow Daoist Wei... come up with these words?”

“No...” Wei Zhongxian coughed: “This was said by His Majesty Guangzong...”

Ming Guangzong again... Xu Yangyi's gaze faintly rippled. Ming Guangzong was undoubtedly a mere mortal, yet his understanding towards cultivators was so clear. Danxia Temple seemed to uncover all of the Animus Armament's secrets, but in fact... after this veil was removed, an even greater riddle was hidden below!

In the end... what had Guangzong discovered? Was there a chance that it was just like he had imagined... a spider's thread of that unspeakable entity? Else not... why would the Xuan-Yuan Sword desire to slay Guangzong? And why would the Xuan-Yuan Sword want to prevent Guangzong from searching?

“What are you guys talking about?” Quan Ningyue was confused, curiosity evident in her eyes. She remembered... that everyone had been killed by an azure carp. Only they had escaped. So why was she totally unable make sense of each word that the other was saying?

“Nothing.” Putting a stop to the diverging thoughts, Xu Yangyi gazed at the flipped-over livyatan in the water and laughed: “I'm still too inexperienced right now... Fellow Daoist Wei, may I ask if you have a method to collect this corpse?”

“Of course.” Wei Zhongxian laughed respectfully: “After I was transformed into a corpse puppet by Celestial Master Zhang, an independent space was crafted into my mouth. The good sir said that I relied on this mouth to reach the peak throughout my life, so I would do the same in death. He increased my memory...”

Both of his hands formed a seal, and his mouth suddenly grew to be a meter a size! A muffled droning quietly spread forth in the wake of his mouth opening. Following this sound, the lake water in front of him began to mysteriously sweep about with ripples. However, on the ground, a cracking tremor unexpectedly caused stones to hover in the air. Yet in the water... the tremendous

livyatan's body... started to oddly float up little by little!

Swoosh swoosh swoosh... Countless streams fell down from the spinning livyatan's body like creek water. As Wei Zhongxian's seal-forming speed became faster and faster, the livyatan's incomparably colossal body began to actually shift in the air. The corpse slowly moved towards their side.

At this time, Xu Yangyi's gaze sparked: "Hold on."

"What is it, master?" Wei Zhongxian immediately stopped his actions and asked.

"There's someone here." Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes: "You don't sense it?"

Wei Zhongxian shook his head: "Master, I'm not truly a cultivator. This body's cultivation is all thanks to Celestial Master Zhang's blessing. My use of qi is indeed unskilled."

This was the use of spiritual sense... Xu Yangyi nodded. Wei Zhongxian had long since met his maker. Whether or not he possessed such a thing was difficult to say. After all, spiritual sense was equal to the soul. It could only exist within a living person.

It was because Xu Yangyi's spiritual sense greatly transcended those in the same stage that he was able to feel... that inside the livyatan's mouth, there was a ball... A seemingly very familiar qi, a silken qi, that was in a state of unconsciousness!

Who was it?

Without a spare thought, Xu Yangyi immediately jumped onto the livyatan's back. He sensed familiarity from this qi. Was it possibly a teammate who was once alive?

"Commander." Just as he jumped on the corpse's back, Quan Ningyue also hopped on. In the same vein, she had sensed it. Her young, childish face carried blatant excitement.

This journey was one of blood and tears. At this moment, if they

could still see their former comrade... Words could not describe such a feeling. The duo shared a glance and nodded. Without the slightest hesitation, they rushed towards the livyatan's mouth.

Wei Zhongxian had already opened the livyatan's bloody maw that was tens of meters wide. Inside, there were rows of sharp teeth like small hills.

"There!" Quan Ningyue's eyes flashed, and she yelled and excitedly pointed towards a region inside the mouth.

At the edge of several teeth, there was someone... a man who had already lost half of his body. He was badly mangled, his flesh and blood indistinct, and both his eyes were tightly shut. One simply couldn't make out whether he was dead or alive. Only a feeble spiritual sense was felt, reminding Xu Yangyi and Quan Ningyue that he still hasn't died!

Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply and suppressed the stirring emotions in his heart. Wind Brandishes Traces revolved around his entire body, and he charged ahead with almost his fastest speed. Quickly and carefully, he supported the man with his hand.

The other's body was moist and slick with the livyatan's disgusting saliva, radiating a nauseating stench. Nonetheless, Xu Yangyi was absent of a hair's hesitation. He held in his breath and wiped away the bloodstains on the other's face with the utmost care.

"Gao Wuguo?" As Quan Ningyue hurried and trailed over, she saw the man's face. She sucked in sharply, her voice somewhat trembling. However, this trembling was due to great excitement, not grave fright!

Back then, they hadn't found his corpse. They had only seen was his gloves floating up on the water. In the battle against the livyatan, there had been too many casualties and the water was several hundred meters deep. There was no way that a group of Qi Condensation cultivators could find him. They had believed that

Gao Wuguo had already died, but unexpectedly, he had been swallowed into the livyatan's mouth! No wonder they couldn't find him!

Happiness rose up in Xu Yangyi's heart. If they were another hour late... perhaps Gao Wuguo would've truly been separated apart from the rest by the heavens. Xu Yangyi scooped up the other, but at the same time, he suddenly felt a stab of pain from his qi sea!

“COMMANDER!!!” Her excitement yet to recede, the faint smile on Quan Ningyue's face abruptly froze. In this fleeting moment, she sensed the world turn somewhat white!

Qi sea destruction! It was impossible to restore any cultivator who had their qi sea destroyed! One could only become a true cripple! She expected that the unconscious Gao Wuguo would suddenly act against Xu Yangyi at all!

Xu Yangyi also looked towards his lower abdomen with a fair amount of incredulity. Gao Wuguo's hand had already sunk entirely into his dantian!

Fast! Extremely fast! There hadn't even been the ghost of a warning! A cultivator of the same stage was fundamentally incapable of evading his spiritual sense. However, against the unconscious Gao Wuguo, he just hadn't sensed the circulation of qi on the other's whole body! In the blink of an eye, his qi sea had been penetrated!

“Ten Cardinals Red Lotus!” Xu Yangyi threw the other off. Gao Wuguo's cold and gloomy eyes had already opened, the crook of his mouth bearing a mocking smile. Against the coming fire dragon, he sneered. Yet on the brink of crisis, he seemed to be carefree and idle, extending a finger. Because of Xu Yangyi's grave, sudden injury, the fire dragon's bulk was already several times smaller. Gao Wuguo welcomed it with his relaxed finger.

“Break.” Gao Wuguo uttered. Following a rumbling explosion,

the entire fire dragon immediately detonated inside the livyatan's mouth. Akin to a black hole, the beast's mouth seemed to be illuminated by the blast at each nook and cranny!

Boom! The hare leaped up and the falcon descended. Xu Yangyi took advantage of the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus's explosion to leap back in an instant. As he fell on the ground, he immediately took a knee. Blood gushed out from his mouth and the bloody hole on his stomach like a waterfall!

"Gao Wuguo!" Quan Ningyue cried out in disbelief, her left hand swiftly turning into a lance and taking aim straight at the other's back: "What the hell are you doing?!?!?"

"Stop..." Xu Yangyi opened his somewhat reddened eyes. He wanted to shout, but discovered his entire bodily spiritual force was unable to rise!

Gao Wuguo gazed icily at the tiger-mad Quan Ningyue. All of a sudden, a faint curve emerged at the crook of his mouth: "Freeze..."

Like so, Quan Ningyue oddly stopped in the air, not daring to believe as she looked at Gao Wuguo!

"He's not Gao Wuguo..." Xu Yangyi sprayed out a mouthful of blood. This person... was truly vicious and merciless. "Gao Wuguo" had acted with the intent to cripple him. The other clearly demonstrated that he wanted to wipe them out here!

Moreover... was the other's realm... He was actually unable to sense the fluctuations of the other's spiritual force mobilization. A single finger to destroy the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus... This absolutely wasn't the Qi Condensation realm!

If Quan Ningyue rashly made a move, there was no question that she would die!

"Who are you?!" The sound of Quan Ningyue's gnashing teeth echoed. As if she had been frozen in the air, she locked her eyes on

Gao Wuguo who was in front of her.

Gao Wuguo's gaze dimly swept over her face. He beared a cold smile as he gently shook his head: "A pity."

Unexpectedly... both of his legs appeared, and he began to slightly float above the ground! Three seconds later, he was free of the void, resistant to the wind! Without the aid of any magik artifact, he stood at the highest point of the livyatan's mouth!

"This..." Quan Ningyue exhaled sharply. Her heart grew cold.

Freedom in emptiness and cast apart from the winds... Approaching waves with subtle steps... This was...

A Foundation Establishment cultivator! A true Foundation Establishment cultivator!

"Had you not entered, you would've been the sole person able to leave here alive for the sake of Grandmaster Gao Muya's esteem." Gao Wuguo's eyes were without a sliver of emotion: "How unfortunate... You cannot walk heaven's path, yet from the start, there was never a door to hell to be cast into... This Throne takes no joy in ruining flowers."

This Throne!

Quan Ningyue shut her eyes in despair. A Foundation Establishment cultivator... This was a bonafide Foundation Establishment cultivator! And as for a Foundation Establishment cultivator's might?

Wei Zhongxian's corpse... had killed all the geniuses until only nine remained! It had to be known that there had still been several tens of people who were present during that occasion! Which one wasn't a genius from a great power?! Yet in the end, only nine had survived!

With great difficulty, Xu Yangyi endured the sharp pain of his abdomen. His clenched teeth were dyed blood-red: "Who... are you?"

“Humans... are still better than muddled ghosts. It’s no good being too smart...” Like he was looking at a dead man, Gao Wuguo eyed Xu Yangyi: “You arrived in Longsu, and I followed. As you killed these monsters, I quietly watched you from behind... I have no choice but to applaud you... You were actually able to come out alive...”

Realization dawned on Xu Yangyi: “Thousandedge?!”

Chapter 243: Final Resolution (1)

“It’s ‘Senior Thousandedge’.” No longer masking his identity in the slightest, Thousandedge faced upwards and cackled wildly. In the wake of his mad laughter, his face swiftly transformed. In less than five seconds, Thousandedge, a branch master of the Featherwood Guard who Xu Yangyi had heard much about, was already standing in front of him and Quan Ningyue! Waves of Foundation Establishment spiritual pressure swept the ground like autumn winds, impeding the duo’s breathing!

The world’s events followed each other cyclically. He had waited for so long... Three years, a whole three years! To ultimately accomplish this! Just as he had said to Nameless, if he couldn’t do so, then there was none in the world that could!

“How did you get here?” Xu Yangyi asked, his voice low. He fiercely grinded his teeth, blood overflowing from his mouth like spring water.

“No screams or madness... Tsk, tsk... To my surprise, this gorgeous curtain call finds itself without the most important musical instrument. How truly disappointing.” Thousandedge gazed deeply at Xu Yangyi, and his smile vanished: “Commander Xu, you still haven’t passed out now, how rare indeed... For a man about to die, I will be good for once.”

“Just as the Xingtian Legion set out, I too secretly arrived in Longsu Province.” Thousandedge looked coldly into Xu Yangyi’s eyes, but the regret and astonishment that he had anticipated didn’t emerge. He said somewhat disappointedly: “In the end, that heavenbound door restricted cultivators above Qi Condensation from entering. But...”

He said sinisterly: “While over a thousand entered... who among the clans—no less than several thousand to nearly ten thousand people—would pay attention to the Xingtian Legion? Was there

anyone not making the final preparations for their own clan?”

“Besides This Throne... my gaze never left you. But by no stretch of the imagination did I expect that none of you went through the heavenbound door!” Thousandedge looked at Xu Yangyi like he was looking at a dead man: “I’ve waited here for a full several days. You finally came out... Truly, using this place as your burial ground can be no more beautiful.”

“HAHAHA!”

Before he even finished laughing, Xu Yangyi’s hearty laughter rang out at the same time. Thousandedge’s smile vanished, and he looked coldly at Xu Yangyi: “Did you know... from the very first time I laid eyes upon you, your arrogance sickened me.”

“Now...” Thousandedge looked on at Xu Yangyi piteously: “kneel down and plead for all of my past penances. Perhaps I will grant you an insect’s death... instead of having your limbs strewn apart by five horses.”

Boom! Thousandedge’s voice yet to fall, a spiritual pressure erupted with a loud rumble. With a raging scream, a ray of blue spiritual light rushed straight at him!

Thousandedge’s expression didn’t change. There wasn’t even so much as a stir. The spiritual light exploded at the side of his body, and he dimly brushed an eye over the roughly panting Quan Ningyue: “Insect... you should understand your status. Kneel down and wait for death. I will leave you with a complete corpse. This can be considered an esteem for Grandmaster Gao Muya.”

“Thousandedge...” Without any misgivings, Xu Yangyi sat on the ground and covered his wound. His mouth oozing with blood, he smiled wretchedly: “have you ever heard...”

“Oh?” Thousandedge smiled and said.

“The reason why the villain loses...” Xu Yangyi wiped away at the blood at the corner of his mouth and also stared at Thousandedge

like he was looking at a dead man: “is because he speaks too much!”

Thousandedge’s brows slightly furrowed. In this twinkling moment, he suddenly realized that on the ground, over a dozen meters below his feet... that there was surprisingly another silhouette! At the same time, a sense of extreme danger instinctively raked across his spiritual sense. He was almost without any consideration, his vision shrinking back and his hands forming Dao-seals! In an instant, he vanished from where he stood!

CHOMP! At the same moment he dodged, a terribly massive mouth, over a full meter in size, snapped down at his original position! Thousandedge could even hear the crunching sound of teeth echo in midair!

At the same time, his figure floated over to the other side. His hand fluttered gently, and a beam of white spiritual light screamed forth. Like arcing electricity, it went towards his original position. Halfway through the white ray’s flight, it swiftly transformed into a dagger emitting spiritual force!

Swish! In a spark of flint, the dagger had already reached Thousandedge’s original position. Soon afterwards, the knife split from one into two, from two into three, and from three into a legion of daggers. All of them formed silver blades of spiritual light that were the size of willow leaves. Silver blades soared all over the sky and formed a spiritual force cage that was roughly four to five meters in radius! Spirit blades shuttled back to and fro. If a person was within this blade frenzy, they were bound to become mincemeat!

Quan Ningyue gritted her teeth. Just as she was about to stand up, Xu Yangyi pulled her down with his bloodied hand.

“Don’t go...” He bit down, aching in pain as he was drenched in cold sweat. Threads of frosty air and blood seeped out from in between his teeth: “This isn’t something that we can join in on...”

Quan Ningyue didn't speak. She simply took a deep breath and tightly locked her molars together. With her eyes closed, her entire bodily spiritual force was cycled to the peak! If she stepped aside... she wouldn't be worthy of the loss of Xu Yangyi's left arm!

In any case... today spelled out their doom! Who present was capable of obstructing a Foundation Establishment cultivator? They were better off paying back this grace before dying and heading towards King Yama's palace with a clear conscience!

She hadn't seen, but in the wake of this ocean of spirit blades—cuts so impenetrable that not a single hole could enter—Thousandedge's face actually became increasingly solemn! Bulging veins appeared on his hands that were controlling the spirit blades.

Foundation Establishment! This is a Foundation Establishment cultivator!

The spirit blades seemed terrible and awesome, but Thousandedge himself knew the truth. Not a single one had cut into this opponent's body!

How was this possible... How could there be a Foundation Establishment cultivator in this place?! Moreover, one that was evidently standing at the side of that little bastard! No... most importantly, there was obviously Foundation Establishment cultivator here, but why had his spiritual sense been unable to detect the other?! Only when this opponent appeared behind him did he become aware!

In an instant, offensive and defensive positions switched!

He had wasted Xu Yangyi's qi sea with a palm. If Xu Yangyi didn't die... there was no shadow of a doubt that he would be unable to survive after leaving! Plotting against a Core Formation master's disciple was enough to bring his death ten million times over! Even if Ancestor Ancientpine didn't utter a word, those cultivators at the same realm of Foundation Establishment would overturn the earth to find him in order to offer tribute to a Core

Formation ancestor! A blade would run him down!

It could be said... that there would be no place in the world for him to stab his heels into! It would be an even greater suffering than death!

“How... could there be a Foundation Establishment cultivator in this place?! One who even came out from the secret realm at that?!” Thousandedge didn’t even clearly see who the blade light was binding. His heart grew resolute, and he inhaled deeply. He suddenly clenched his right hand, and five talismans emerged at his five fingers!

“Heavenly Door Open...” His gaze was grave. He pointed towards the several meters of space that fluttered like white butterfly spirits: “Earthly Door Open...”

Creak... Above the blade light, an ancient phantasmal door surprisingly emerged. The surface seemed to stuck all over with crimson talismans that seemed as if they would be blown away by a single gust of wind. The door was no less than two meters tall. At this moment, a soft echo followed. The ancient door slowly opened and countless talismans floated, yet the hair-raising wailing of spectres was heard from within.

“From within a thousand miles, children deliver their souls...” Thousandedge’s fingers slowly extended. As each finger extended, the door opened up a fraction more.

[“The roaming souls dwell, the three Hun long since come and the seven Po in approach...”](#) His chant was long, but in fact lasted for barely three seconds. Thousandedge roared angrily: “Five Demons Capture Souls!”

Boom! Following this sound, the door behind seemed to morph into a black hole! With all of its might, the door sucked everything in, yet strangely, this wasn’t a true attractive force. Perhaps it could be said... that while this was a true attractive force, it didn’t absorb physical objects!

Quan Ningyue's pupils soon went lax. Xu Yangyi's eyes flashed, and he quickly grabbed the dagger hanging on his chest. The dagger pierced straight into Quan Ningyue's arm!

"Argh!" Quan Ningyue's pupils shone again. She promptly shivered and gazed incredulously at the battle magik in the air. Even though she was so far away, she had never expected that she would be affected!

"This is a soul capturing." Xu Yangyi gasped for air. Although Thousandedge's action from moments ago was but a gentle motion, it felt as if all his meridians were being shredded, a pain striking bone-deep into his marrow.

Quan Ningyue gritted her teeth and wiped away at the cold sweat on her head. She quickly raised her head and stared fixedly into the silver light: "F-Fellow Daoist Wei... He... He..."

This place didn't permit the entry of Foundation Establishment cultivators. At most, she believed the other to be half-step Foundation Establishment! Yet under such an offense, how could he have possibly survived?!

"No worries..." Xu Yangyi barked with grim laughter. Pain caused his voice to slightly warble, and he snickered ruthlessly: "He... will tear Thousandedge straight into pieces..."

Buuuuzzz... The ancient door trembled violently. From pleasant surprise, Thousandedge's complexion transformed into bewilderment and then shock. Five seconds later, cold beads of sweat were already dripping down from his forehead drop by drop!

How was this possible?! The Five Demons Capture Souls... reaped souls! Yet this person... had no soul!!!

BOOM!!! Following a tremendous bang, white and black spiritual light erupted in concert! All the blade light dispersed, and Wei Zhongxian clasped an official seal in his hands. He had never budged a step.

In the wake of this explosion of black and white spiritual light, a halo of pure gold spiritual light exploded! Like a tide, it caused all of Thousandedge's qi to scatter apart like dead weeds and rotting wood. As if he had encountered a squall, Thousandedge was fiercely blown away in ceaseless retreat.

"Fellow Daoist, who on earth are you?!?" Thousandedge quickly stabilized and glared daggers at the person in front of him!

Dressed in ancient robes of a crimson shade, hair stark-white... This person obviously possessed an initial-stage Foundation Establishment cultivation, yet he was ridiculously strong!

"I..." Wei Zhongxian seemed study the golden seal fondly, reluctant to part with it. He raised a brow, sweetly covering his mouth and laughing. With his thumb and middle finger joined and the rest of his fingers extended, he deliberately pointed at Thousandedge: "am the person who will kill you."

In a flash, Thousandedge's complexion turned ashen. He firmly clenched his teeth and displayed a storage ring in his hand: "If Fellow Daoist does not participate in this affair, you may invite yourself to two-thirds of my savings that I have spent years amassing."

"Grandpa Wei..." At this moment, Xu Yangyi, covered all over in blood, helped Quan Ningyue stand up on her feet. Like a wolf, he trained his eyes on Thousandedge: "kill him... obliterate his mind."

"Yes."

"Junior..." Thousandedge took a deep breath and turned his head. He gnashed his teeth as he looked at Xu Yangyi: "Just now... I should've killed you..." Thousandedge could no longer spare the effort to ponder why Wei Zhongxian was obeying Xu Yangyi.

"Right now... you can come and give it a try..." Without the slightest weakness, Xu Yangyi stared down Thousandedge. There

were no well-meaning words or cordial exchanges. Both of them had patiently waited in silence for three years. Currently, the map had long since been tossed aside and the dagger in plain view, the scheme was already afoot!

Thousandedge's chest heaved up with a heavy breath.

He was old, very old. Today, he wore an ancient changpao. In the air, he stood with his hands at his back, wind blowing on his long brows and white beard. He appeared like a descending immortal, yet his eyes were without a trace of benevolence. All that existed was killing intent, not masked in the slightest!

"Is Fellow Daoist determined to stick his head out for this Qi Condensation insect?" After ages, Thousandedge looked towards Wei Zhongxian without a sliver of emotion.

"A slave should naturally share tribulation with his master. This is my duty." Wei Zhongxian covered his mouth and giggled.

"Good..." Thousandedge studied Wei Zhongxian indifferently: "In that case, I will deliver the whole lot of you to be reunited!"

"Pure Yang..." His hands formed Dao-seals at a blazing speed. As he started forming seals, cold threads of sweat spilled out from his forehead. However, his spiritual pressure began to overflow the entire cave, simply uncontrollable!

Beyond words, a mighty pressure emerged at Thousandedge's back. It carried a feeling of great changes, that of azure oceans transforming into mulberry fields. As his seal-forming became faster and faster, an azure scroll, no less than five meters in width, surprisingly took on a faint shape behind him.

"**WORSHIPS SWORD!**" In the instant that scroll formed, Thousandedge furiously shouted. His hand grabbed and released at empty air. With a swish, the azure scroll quietly unfurled like a great banner, over twenty meters in length! On the surface was a portrait of [Lu Dongbin](#). In the wake of this picture scroll's

unfolding, hundreds of sliver-white rays of blade qi gushed out like a fountain! They saturated the entire space inside the livyatan's mouth!

1. From what I found, this entire chanting sequence comes from some sort of Daoist death ritual.

2. Lu Dongbin is a Tang dynasty scholar and poet, born 796 CE. He was elevated to mythical status as the leader of the Eight Immortals.

Chapter 244: Final Resolution (2)

Swoosh swoosh swoosh! Sword qi filled the air! That of a realm completely different from Qi Condensation! Each ray of sword qi painted a half-meter-deep trench inside the livyatan's mouth! In the blink of an eye, the inside of the beast's mouth was drenched with blood!

This was the might of Foundation Establishment! Qi used to attack enemies! The pairing of bodily arts was unneeded!

Thousandedge's hair and beard were long. His originally kind-looking face had long since become that of a devil's! Wreathed in sword qi, a qi vortex blasted his clothing and caused it to flutter in the wind. At this moment, the veins on his arms were all exposed. Following the sudden withdrawal of both his hands, hundreds of sword lights unexpectedly swirled to form a tremendous sword formation that was fifty to sixty meters in radius. They illuminated the entire space down to finest hair, everything in view! In harmony, all of them aimed towards Wei Zhongxian and thrust forth!

"Senior!" Quan Ningyue couldn't help but to cry out in alarm.

She didn't know why, but unexpectedly, Wei Zhongxian was at Foundation Establishment and moreover seemed to obey Xu Yangyi. Nonetheless, now was their only chance to survive!

At this time, Thousandedge's gaze widened. With great sleight of hand, he produced an incredibly small and fine silver bell. The bell lightly swayed.

Jingle... An incomparably profound noise reverberated in the air. Quickly following... hundreds of blue electric arcs leapt forward from Thousandedge's hands! He seemed to become a lightning god, surging thunder and lightning towards all living beings without the slightest fear of consequence!

Crackle snap fzzt! In a matter of moments, lightning bolts overtook the sword formation. The sword formation, fifty to sixty meters in size, shockingly became a lightning formation in little time! It brought forth a boundless heavenly might and pierced downwards at Wei Zhongxian!

Bang bang bang! Sword qi yet to arrive, the ground was already marked with countless pieces of rubble. The sword qi's power was fully revealed! Yet now, there wasn't one bolt, but ten bolts! A hundred bolts! Infinite bolts!

"I command you... TO DIE!!!" Thousandedge's angered howl echoed, and the silver bell swung again. On the brink of crisis, the lightning had even become pure white in color!

Boom boom boom! Following his shout, the entire sword formation blossomed with pure-white radiance a meter all around Wei Zhongxian! The untold number of sword formations were like countless rain showers. In this moment, following clanging noises that were akin to large and small pearls falling upon a jade platter, qi flowers blossomed in the air! They dyed the entire region into a pure-white heavenly palace! A perfect likeness of the Earth's protective force field that aliens attacked in science fiction novels!

"This..." Thousandedge's faith was in this surefire move. Like a [clay ox entering the sea](#), his hopes of return were dashed, and his eyes saucered in disbelief. He shouted lowly and two rays of spiritual light shot out from his eyes. They punctured this region of almost a hundred meters of qi and detonated against the barrier!

He couldn't accept this!

The Pure Yang Worships Sword Painting... was a supreme-grade magik artifact that he had obtained! It was copied and manufactured from some true magik treasure! How was it possible that the bulk of power was unable to get closer?! He was even one boundary greater than this opponent!

And yet, he couldn't see anything. Just as his divine ability had

launched, a dazzling golden light had focused him and sparked, causing him to yell angrily and shut his eyes in panic!

“WITNESS MY MOVE!!!”

Nothing was visible in Thousandedge’s eyes. Quick to act, his spiritual sense was released! At the same time, all his magik artifacts at hand droned and erupted! They completely shielded him!

Against his expectations, the world-shattering blow didn’t come. A few seconds later, he opened his eyes, dripping with cold sweat, yet he shockingly discovered... Wei Zhongxian was right where he always was, respectfully looking at him.

Wei Zhongxian hadn’t attacked... Why hadn’t he attacked?

“Honored celestial.” Wei Zhongxian chuckled: “Do you have any other divine abilities?”

At this time, a wooden machine qilin appeared in front of Thousandedge and wrapped around him, revolving. It was a full ten meters long and completely encircled Thousandedge. However, the qilin held an opened picture scroll box in its mouth. On its back, a blade and ancient bracelet was set. At the top of its head, there was a black box tightly sealed with a red seal.

Thousandedge grimly stared at the other, his face choked with a deep-red blush. He had taken strict precautions to defend himself, yet the other hadn’t made a move! Was this opponent... looking down on him?

The other’s realm—the initial stage of Foundation Establishment—was lower than his own... How could this foe’s cultivation be at such a level of power?!

It wasn’t that he hadn’t seen geniuses before... but such an [impenetrable](#) and resilient body could contend with the ancient cultivators of legend! How was such a cultivator connected to a little bastard like Xu Yangyi?! Wei Zhongxian had taken a firm

stance to help the other!

“Grandpa Wei...” Xu Yangyi had already opened up a pill elixir and drank it, licking his lips. As if he was looking at a dead man, he gazed at Thousandedge: “don’t drag this on.”

Thousandedge didn’t offer so much as a sneer at these words. He... had long since acknowledged Xu Yangyi’s strength. The ability to mobilize a Foundation Establishment cultivator, this too was the other’s strength!

Regardless of how Xu Yangyi managed to bring this character into play, Thousandedge only knew that if he didn’t break out now... there was a real chance that he would meet his demise here today!

He licked his lips and waved his hand with extreme solemnity. In a flash, the box atop the wooden qilin’s head appeared in his hand. With incredible gingeriness, he opened it. All of a sudden, a dense, heart-shaking hum echoed. A red cloud rushed out and spiraled around Thousandedge!

“These are... Soul Devourer Insects?!” Xu Yangyi and Wei Zhongxian hadn’t reacted, but Quan Ningyue bounced on her heels and gasped. She looked at the cloud with terrible graveness: “S-Senior, be careful... be careful!”

“What’s the problem with it?” Xu Yangyi asked lowly.

Quan Ningyue glanced at Xu Yangyi. In her heart, she held peerless admiration. Who could continue to hold such composure after becoming a cripple? Unexcited by billowing waves? No, it could be said that this matter wasn’t easy to take to heart! Xu Yangyi seemed to have suffered an injury, but it was merely his qi sea that had been wounded.

“This insect... isn’t an ancient cultivation remnant but a kind of spirit insect that the CSIB and Heavens Law synthesised through genetic technology. It’s also a familiar... The insect’s head is just

the tip of a hair in size, but it can devour qi! Once it wrap around a cultivator, it'll absorb all the qi inside the cultivator's body! It'll keep going until the target dies!" Reining back her mind, she immediately explained.

Not waiting for Quan Ningyue to finish speaking, Thousandedge's hand pointed and a red cloud flew straight at Wei Zhongxian.

"The Pure Yang Worships Sword Painting was of no use against you. I want to see if you fear this insect... No... Gasp..."

His final remark was the sound of his cold gasp. This was because Wei Zhongxian hadn't moved at all! He was still standing in his original spot, allowing the insects to swarm him!

Thousandedge's heart went ice-cold! Without the slightest joy on his face, he had paid an enormous sum to gain the Soul Devourer Insects! However, Wei Zhongxian's failure to dodge was the manifestation of his total confidence! Just like the Pure Yang Worships Sword Painting from moments ago... he felt that there was no reason to avoid these insects!

Buuuuzzzz.... In Thousandedge's shivering eyes, all the Soul Devourer Insects flew away in less than two minutes! As for Wei Zhongxian... he was still completely unharmed, standing in the same place!

"What... What kind of fucking monster is this?!" The grinding sound of Thousandedge's teeth rang out. This time, without any hesitation, he turned tail and fled!

Escape! He had to escape! This was too strange! His number of battle magiks absolutely weren't few. On the contrary, he had killed his way step by step to the branch master's position, yet he had never once encountered such a strange cultivator!

Was this person even human?!

"What are you running for?" Xu Yangyi glared at

Thousandedge's back as the latter fled out from the livyatan's mouth in rush. He laughed coldly: "Since Fellow Daoist has already made three moves, how about trying one of ours?"

"Grandpa Wei." He nodded towards Wei Zhongxian.

Wei Zhongxian chuckled: "Be at ease, master. He will not escape."

From behind, gentle chuckling was heard. Thousandedge was wet with cold sweat. Not sparing a moment's delay, he flew away even faster! However, in the next second, he was completely dumbfounded, a floored expression made its way on his face!

This was because... a snowflake had fallen on his face. His hand slightly trembled, feeling the snow incredulously. Indeed, it was a snowflake, pure-white snow. It was just that this snowflake had appeared within the livyatan's mouth!

"No... Impossible... This is impossible!" In a frenzy, he turned his head, his eyes reddened: "A worldly anomaly... not even a Core Formation divine ability can bring forth a world anomaly!"

Behind him, as far as his eyes could see, the inside of the livyatan's mouth... had already become swathed in ice and snow! Below, a sheet of ice quickly spread forth! Above... a great blizzard actually filled the interior of the livyatan's mouth!

Wei Zhongxian sneered as he looked at Thousandedge. Wei Zhongxian's hands were devoid of any spiritual force fluctuations. His next few words were like the pronouncement of a death sentence.

"Heavenly Opening... Second Erosion..."

Pale, thin, and withered, his hands were like chicken claws. They suddenly clenched together, and a cracking noise similar to a bullet striking bulletproof glass strangely echoed in the air.

"Devour... Blood!"

Thousandedge had long since become astonished. He was simply without the thought to flee.

Impossible... This was too outrageous... What was this divine ability? Not even the Core Formation ancestors dared to say that their divine abilities leading to Core Formation would produce a worldly anomaly. This foe's move... The initial stage of Foundation Establishment! Wei Zhongxian was merely initial-stage Foundation Establishment! How could this be?!

How could such a mighty figure... not have a brilliant reputation? What the hell had this lowly mongrel Xu paid to get the other to slavishly act on his behalf?!

Medicinal pills?!

Nonetheless, he simply didn't have the time to think of anything else. In the next second, his pupils constricted without warning, and his mouth wordlessly stretched wide open. It was to the extent that his entire face had become outlandishly deformed. Both of his hands frantically clutched at his heart! Without warning, he crashed downwards!

Devour Blood... drew out all blood! Once a person's blood disappeared... the heart would stop beating! The advent of this lone move had killed him in a second!

"You..." Thousandedge's voice carried a kind of hoarseness akin to a grinding metal sheet: "Who... the hell... are you...?"

"Make your way to the netherworld, you will gain a rough understanding." Wei Zhongxian chuckled. His eyes flickered with the desire for cruel murder. His hand gently clenched: "The..."

"Fellow Daoist Wei." Xu Yangyi's calm voice was heard from behind.

Wei Zhongxian immediately switched over to a smile, his hand waving softly. Like a rag puppet, Thousandedge flew over, his throat delivered into Wei Zhongxian's hand. He then dragged over

Thousandedge, smiling: “What is master’s command?”

Like he was looking at a corpse, Xu Yangyi studied Thousandedge. It had been three years. On this day, this moment, the feud between the two had finally come to an end. He didn’t even have take action himself. Such an event was beyond Thousandedge’s expectations, as well. Thousandedge had spared no effort to find them yet was met with such a situation.

“Can he still move?” Xu Yangyi asked indifferently. He seemed not to have heard Thousandedge’s words.

“Be at ease, master.” Wei Zhongxian deeply bowed. “If he can move, I will break my own hand.”

Master?! Thousandedge’s vision blackened. He had almost lost consciousness! A little Qi Condensation mongrel... actually had a such a terrible cultivator at his side... Furthermore... it wasn’t due to employment nor enticement... but a relationship of master and servant!

This unknown cultivator cried out the word “master” with incomparable delight! Without a shred of unwillingness! At the crook of his mouth, he wore a terribly bitter smile. This... was too fucking illogical...

“Good...” Xu Yangyi’s eyes glimmered with an unknown meaning, and he lifted his chin. Wei Zhongxian bowed deferentially, his hand doing the same. Branch master of the Mingshui Province Featherwood Guard, the ordinarily no-nonsense Senior Thousandedge, slid on the floor like a dog.

A shadow emerged in front of Thousandedge. Serene, Xu Yangyi looked down on Thousandedge. Thousandedge gazed forward, only seeing Xu Yangyi’s military boots.

“Little bastard...” Wei Zhongxian eased up on his divine ability for a few seconds. Thousandedge’s heart knotted in complexity, and he shuddered as he opened his mouth: “I... regret not killing

you back then...”

“Otherwise... how would you have been able to last to this day...?”

1. “Clay ox entering the sea” Is a phrase from a text known as The Transmission of the Lamp by Shi Daoyuan during the Song dynasty. It is a figure of speech to describe something that does not return, since a clay ox cannot walk back out of the sea.

2. “Impenetrable” The actual chinese here is “salt and oil do not go in (油盐不进), generally meaning that the person is very stubborn/obstinate.

Chapter 245: Final Resolution (3)

“Branch Master.” Xu Yangyi stood before Thousandedge, towering above as he gazed at the other: “Didn’t you think about the price of killing me?”

Thousandedge raised his head with difficulty, his gaze carrying boundless hatred. He glared daggers at Xu Yangyi, yet suddenly began to laugh in a terribly frightening manner: “The price? How... could you garner such a thing... hehehe... HAHAHAAH!”

Following his mad laughter, his mental state unexpectedly recovered somewhat from the clutches of the Heavenly Opening Second Erosion. He glared at Xu Yangyi and sneered: “Yes... This Throne fell head first into your hands, I admit it... but what about yourself?”

“From here on out, you’re just a dog...” Struggling with great might, he propped himself up and looked at Xu Yangyi as if he wanted to eat him. Grim laughter came from between his teeth: “Even a cultivator in the initial phase of drawing qi into their body will look down on you... You’re nothing more than trash that’s fallen from the cultivation world’s beautiful dream into the mortal dust...”

Before he finished speaking his words, Xu Yangyi pinched both of his cheeks.

“Did you know?” Xu Yangyi grinded his teeth as he laughed: “I’ve thought about doing this for a long fucking time.”

“Hehehe...” Thousandedge’s burning gaze looked straight at Xu Yangyi, and his lips trembled. He wanted to say something, yet no words were said. He only cackled sinisterly.

Xu Yangyi laughed coldly and said towards Wei Zhongxian and Quan Ningyue: “You guys can head out first.”

Wei Zhongxian raised a brow in understanding. Likewise, Quan

Ningyue said nothing. One who destroyed another's qi sea could be said to be a mortal foe! Thousandedge had severed Xu Yangyi's cultivation foundation! There was no greater torture!

Quan Ningyue and Wei Zhongxian took their leave. Xu Yangyi raised his hand and waved, completely isolating space. He then released Thousandedge.

"Hehehe..." Thousandedge lifted his neck and burst into laughter, yet because of Devour Blood's might, his voice hissed like a viper. From the outside, nothing could be heard at all. Finished laughing, he glared at Xu Yangyi with reddened eyes: "Just... you... cough, cough... you wild dog... of a Qi Condensation... mongrel. Do you... want to torture me... as well?!"

"Torture?" Xu Yangyi laughed and sat in front of Thousandedge. He shook his head: "You look down on me too much."

"Before I send you on your way, I have one last thing to ask you." Xu Yangyi removed the dagger hanging on his neck without the slightest remiss: "My talents aren't bad. Under your lead, you and I would've originally complemented each other pretty well. But from the start, your murderous heart has always been stirring. Do you regret it?"

Thousandedge seemed to be daze for a second. Afterwards, he hissed in laughter: "There is only death for those who block my path, no mercy."

"If you died... it would've been a proper death for the Grand Dao of I, Thousandedge... You should be besides yourself with joy because of this!"

Xu Yangyi nodded. In the next second, Thousandedge frantically propped himself up on the ground. His lips were shivering uncontrollably: "You... You! You actually!"

Thud! Before he even finished speaking, Xu Yangyi had stomped down on his back without the slightest mercy. He ruthlessly

stomped him into the livyatan's mouth.

“No... No! NO!!! This can't be real!” Thousandedge's face was stuck to the livyatan's foul-smelling tongue. Nonetheless, he seemed not to feel anything at all in this moment. He struggled with his utmost effort, wanting to raise his head as he roared hoarsely. As if he had gone mad, his eyes were trained on Xu Yangyi's sole remaining right arm.

There... a blaze was ascending!

“How... is this possible?!” His voice was trembling, his vigor seemingly restored: “Your qi sea was destroyed... How you can you still use qi?!”

“Yes...” Xu Yangyi smiled as he studied his hand. He then looked at Thousandedge whose entire face had ashened in an instant: “how is this possible?”

“In one of Master [Jin Yong](#)'s novels, someone's heart was in the right side of their chest.” His laughter was rather calm. Thousandedge's lips began to tremble violently. “Don't tell me that I didn't tell you... that my qi sea isn't in my dantian?”

The Eternal Alchemy Canon! Xu Yangyi's qi sea had been displaced long ago!

As if he had fallen into an ice cellar, Thousandedge shut his eyes in despair. A lone sentence had plunged him the depths of hell. In the end, even his pride could no longer hold on.

Xu Yangyi had just used the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus, but moments ago, his qi sea had been destroyed. The presence of qi still in his meridians explained everything.

Yet not even in his dreams had Thousandedge expected... that Xu Yangyi's qi sea hadn't been ruined! Instead, he had made a total error in finding the right location! It was precisely because of this that Xu Yangyi didn't wish to reveal this secret, so he ordered everyone else leave.

So in the end... Thousandedge managed to accomplish nothing. From the start of the head to the tip of the tail, all of his hopes and efforts were futile, like using a wicker basket to draw water. Such a devastating feeling was like a poison freely spreading through his heart!

This devastation of confidence caused his expression to become dull. His faint breathing was like airy silk. He had already lost his fighting spirit in its entirety.

“But there’s still a very minor question that I haven’t solved yet.” Xu Yangyi smiled and laughed: “You said that you had a friend called Nameless. If you die here, and he goes off and tells Floatingcloud, things will be pretty hard for me.”

Thousandedge’s expression was sluggish, and he said nothing. It was unknown whether or not he had heard. Maintaining his expression and posture, he sat there like a wooden carving.

Xu Yangyi laughed and approached the other’s side: “Sometimes, realm doesn’t represent strength. Your teacher should’ve have taught you these words when you entered the cultivator world.”

“But this isn’t what I want to ask. What I want to say is if—and I’m saying if—wouldn’t it be much easier if you and Nameless were the same person? Floatingcloud’s last thread that he could act against me with would be completely severed. Mhm?”

Xu Yangyi was none the wiser if Thousandedge had heard him. After no less than five minutes had passed, he furrowed his brows. At this time, Thousandedge’s entire complexion fell into ease.

“Huff...” Thousandedge seemed to take a long sigh yet suddenly knitted his brows together. He looked towards his body in confusion and then quickly raised his head up in disbelief. He glared at Xu Yangyi like a wolf.

This fleeting glance caused Xu Yangyi’s entire bodily qi to surge! Unrestrained in the slightest, spiritual pressure was released,

fiercely pounding him like a hammer!

If not for the fact that Thousandedge was presently not far from death, this mere glance would've caused Xu Yangyi grave harm!

“Junior.” As Thousandedge spoke, his voice had become completely different. His expression was also incredibly natural: “Was it your hand that moved against me?”

Sure enough, the situation was like this!

Xu Yangyi slightly narrowed his eyes. The Animus Armament that had evolved into a black dagger was flying along his fingertips. “I can tell you why, but you have to tell me who you are right now.”

“Impudent.” Thousandedge sneered. Ultimately, he pursed his lips: “This Throne is Nameless.”

Just as Thousandedge's voice fell, Xu Yangyi's black dagger sunk into his throat without the slightest hesitation.

Swoosh! Cold light suddenly appeared. In the wake of bloody arrows dashing through the air, Thousandedge, or perhaps it should be said Nameless, opened his eyes wide in disbelief. He clutched at his throat and fell down.

“Dissociative identity disorder.” Xu Yangyi apathetically took the dagger and used the other's clothing to wipe it clean. Blowing on the blade, he hung it on his neck again without any care. He glanced at Thousandedge in pity: “Maybe it can be said to be... the division of a cultivator's spirit. Otherwise known as... a heart devil!”

“I thought it was weird back then. You two didn't use spiritual sense to communicate but talked to each other instead. The mouth is one of the seven orifices on the head. Once the mouth opens, there's bound to be qi leakage. You weren't careful enough in hiding it, but I sensed it oh-so carefully. There wasn't even a sliver that could be felt.”

“Because of this, I specifically combed through your entire life. Your talents were outstanding, but because your arcane effort wasn’t enough you, just couldn’t advance to the late stage. But at some unknown point, this Nameless appeared. Not a single person in the entire branch had met him... There was no problem hiding this for ten years... but you actually did it for somewhere around thirty to forty. I couldn’t help but suspect whether or not this person existed.”

“When you finally made me take on a mission, I finally discovered that two people’s voices were coming from where you were. What a shame...” He took one last glance at Thousandedge’s corpse: “In order to enter the late stage, you had already walked through the fire and into the devil. At the end, your long-term planning transformed into a heart devil. There was no difference between you being alive or dead.”

As he reached the entrance, Xu Yangyi was against the light. He turned his head back, his expression unclear: “That’s right.”

“At the very end, it’s still better for me to send you off on your journey, Senior. I hope you can satisfied that I’ll be seeing you off to your coffin.”

With a wave of his hand, the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus roared into being and turned Thousandedge’s corpse into flying ash. Afterwards, Xu Yangyi’s finger gently hooked and Thousandedge’s storage ring flew into his hand as it refracted the sunlight.

.....

In the outside world, the vicinity of Longsu Province’s Nanzhou was under the martial law of several thousand troops. Nanzhou had long since become an empty city.

In a place that mortals couldn’t see, there was a tremendous heavenbound door. Supporting heaven and earth, it stood tall, and rays of incomparably pure qi revolved around it. Looking at it in the distance, it seemed to be the door to the kingdom of heaven.

After everyone entered, the door had shut tightly again. Presently, it was daytime, roughly around four in the afternoon.

Rustle... An aged figure rose into the air. In contrast with the gigantic door, his silhouette was more or less the size of a grain of sand. However, at this moment, none dared to ignore him.

“Deputy Clan Elder of the Ming Clan.” In the air, atop a giant tortoise-styled Core Formation palace, in a quiet and solitary space at the throne’s summit, Daomaster Ancientpine’s brows faintly stirred. His eyes were shut, and he was propping his head against his hand at an angle. “Troublesome old coot... why has he come as well?”

“Ancestor, it’s not just the Ming Clan. The second-in-commands of several great lineages have all nearly arrived. Almost all of the major clans have come.” A voice rang out in the empty and grand palace hall.

Ancientpine slightly nodded: “Jadesun.”

“Disciple is present.”

“Can you still not probe what the internal situation is?”

“Yes, master-ancestor.” Jadesun answered respectfully: “Since everyone entered... everything appears to have been cut off. There’s nothing I can sense. I’m afraid... that we’ll have to wait until the junior brothers and the others exit to find out.”

Ancientpine said nothing and waved his hand. Jadesun’s spiritual sense noiselessly withdrew. After a long time passed, he dimly opened his eyes: “That is, if they... can come out...”

“A deadland for all eternity... even I was wounded and had to leave... so how could they have a chance to come out?”

At this time, both of his eyes snapped wide open! With a loud rumble, black qi erupted! Two streaks of smog-like black qi charged straight out from his eyes towards the summit! Furthermore... Core Formation spiritual pressure wildly swept

through the entire palace hall!

“This...” In the next second, he suddenly emerged in the air and looked down below incredulously!

Rustle rustle rustle... The door, which hadn't budged for the past several days, had now actually cracked open by a seam! Inside... myriad rays of white spiritual light glimmered with a loud bang! They rushed straight towards the horizon!

It was as if... the sky had been cut open!

“The door... has opened...” He gazed deeply at the marvel below, a scene not met once in perhaps a century: “and... there are actually people coming out alive! I can sense... the existence of spiritual sense inside!”

“In the end, who... can actually leave an eternal deadland?!”

1. Jin Yong is known as one of the three great Wuxia novelist. The other two authors are Gu Long and Liang Yusheng. If you haven't read them, there are quite a few completed Gu Long novels on Wuxiaworld!

Chapter 246: Leaving the Temple

Crack crack crack... Ear-piercing cracking noises rang out as the heavenbound door slowly opened. Inexhaustible light quickly dyed the entire sky white. At the same time, all the talismans in the door's surroundings lit up!

In the past several days, countless flying magik artifacts and cultivators had floated before the endless heavenbound door. From far away, they appeared to be a colony of insects on a green leaf.

Swoosh! A formless ripple of wind blew forth, and a pure-white world slowly unfolded. In the beginning, it was an expanse of silence. After an unknown passage of time, following a white light that transformed from a thread into a ray, there was finally a person weaving seals in the silence. A swallow-shaped magik artifact soared and issued a hum, transforming into a streak of jade radiance as it rocketed.

In the next second, a green firework exploded in the air. Even after a long time, it didn't disperse and formed the enormous character of "Zhou" (周).

"The White Horse Zhou Clan..." On a centipede-shaped magik artifact over twenter meters long, the hair and beard of an old man billowed all over, and his clothing rustled. However, he didn't fall back by half a step and even slowly opened his eyes.

No one could see, but his hand inside his changpao was tightly gripping a jade slip. His fingertips were somewhat white.

It hadn't shattered... the young master's jade slip still hadn't shattered! Not only this... but among the twenty people who had entered, not a single one of their jade slips had shattered yet!

"Second Steward..." On the centipede, there were three other equally old men sitting down. One of them was a thin old man who was so excited that his face was flushed. He gritted his teeth and

said: “Our Ye Clan is one of the three top clans... if fourth young master’s party of twenty-one people all come out, we...”

The second steward took a deep breath. His eyes were already brimming with spirited light. He forcibly suppressed his speeding pulse and said lowly: “Make the signal.”

“In the very first moments we get the fourth young master out of the secret realm, we’ll see where our clan stands...” He finished speaking, his vision fixed on the scene like a hawk: “We’ll also have to take note of a few shady disciples... especially the Five Great Demon Clans.”

“Yes!”

Swoosh! The second ray of brilliance answered. In the same vein, it was jade, but this ray was evidently much more dazzling than the Zhou Clan’s first ray. Countless motes of spiritual light trailed behind the ray’s tail as it whizzed. Along its path, it left a scratch in the air like a writing brush. In the blink of an eye, a jade bamboo was floating in the sky.

“This is the Ye Clan.” On the other side, a hawk-nosed middle-aged man with slit pupils sneered and turned his head back: “Make the signal... welcome the sixth young master’s return to our Nangong Clan!”

“This time... not a single jade slip of sixth young master’s squadron broke during this exploration of Danxia Temple’s secret realm. Truly an unexpected delight. We must welcome back sixth young master with the grandest scene!

“Yes!” “Understood!”

Following this reply, four golden light pillars charged out from the Nangong Clan’s encampment with the momentum of a thunderbolt evading ear cover! Under the blood-colored [peng](#) in the sky, they constructed a majestic golden peng!

In an instant, the land sparkled with treasure light and a

thousand streaks of prismatic qi. In the sky, all kinds of clans emblems sketched out incredibly glorious images. In front of the door, they seemed to be in chaos. Following the emergence of these clan emblems, they neatly took root in each and every encampment.

Below, the clamors of several thousand people roared. The region several thousand meters above also seemed to be infected by this roiling heat.

Thousands of meters high in the air, cold wind whistled. Hidden in clouds and mist, a mountainous figure was faintly visible in the clouds.

Daomaster Ancientpine sat cross-legged in the air. Not a single person below dared to act out of turn. This was because... the total might of Core Formation pressure was already spilling out as if it had solidified. Even if there were only threads and strands, this might was still enough to make the area below appear to be calm and in order.

“Naive...” After an unknown amount of time passed, Ancientpine seemed to speak to himself: “Everything from the outside world is isolated... Nothing comes out from the inside... The connection between life slips and cultivators was cut off long ago. Do you truly believe...” He slowly opened his eyes, bearing a smirk as he looked down below: “that an eternal deadland... will allow so many people to come out?”

“Even a showing of a hundred people can’t be thought of as poor...”

Rustle rustle rustle... Amidst a nearly solidified state of passion, the door gradually opened. Countless eyes stared fixedly at the door. As the door kept on opening, the white light inside flourished more and more! The light was so dense that it couldn’t be transformed in essence!

Swoosh... Without omen, at this moment, silence triumphed

over sound. As the great door opened up by a third, a halo of white qi swept over everyone!

On the centipede, the gaze of the Ye Clan's second steward was like fire as he gazed at the door. In this fleeting instant, his expression froze. Resembling a stone carving, he sat on the centipede. This second seemed to freeze. Half a second later, he began to tremble from head to toe. His hand trembled as if he had suffered a stroke. He falteringly stretched his hand out from his sleeve and felt the life slip of the Ye Clan's fourth young master in disbelief!

Where it touched his hand was ice-cold. Nonetheless, on this deathly silent icy-coldness, a shocking scar split the entire jade slip into two pieces!

Ye Old Four... had fallen!

This unforeseen event was too sudden. His face paled, and he uttered not a single word. He instinctively raised his head like a machine and look towards his other companions. And yet, as far as he could see, everyone was looking at him with a kind of even more aggrieved expression.

His lips trembled. In an instant, great joy had become great sorrow. He said shakily: "How many... survived?"

Several seconds later, not a single person answered!

"Not..." His face became white as paper: "a single person?!"

It was still silent, a deathly silence!

The second steward appeared as if he wanted to stand up, yet tumbled over several times. He simply didn't have the strength to prop himself up and stand.

The Ye Clan... All of them had been wiped out! But... how could this be?! How was this possible?! When the door closed, had the secret realm actually isolated all probing? Ridiculously, he had still believed... that not a single person from the Ye Clan had died!

At the same moment of utter extermination, not only had he not quietly departed, he had instead cast the clan's emblem with great fanfare. Now... whether or not he disposed of it, it was already a massive joke!

No... It wasn't like this... His gaze reddened in an instant and looked towards the great door. Those of the Ye Clan had all died... but the door had opened... In that case who was coming out from within? How had the Ye Clan been wiped out?! Did these people know?!

No... even if they didn't know, an answer still needed to be acquired from their mouths no matter the amount of times it took!

Bang! At the same time, in the Nangong Clan, the hawk-nosed middle-aged man suddenly bolted up on his feet. He looked at the jade slip before him in astonishment!

The Nangong Clan was dead silent! Moments ago, the middle-aged man had took out Nangong Xiaoran's jade slip, yet it suddenly broke apart into pieces in the air! If the slip broke apart into two parts... it meant that the corpse still existed. If it shattered into pieces... then the person in question had been rendered into scattered ash and smoke!

"Who... Who is it!!!" The man was dazed for a full five seconds. He gnashed his teeth and said: "Who... Who actually dares to break ground ahead of the Nangong Clan!!!"

Were it not for the other cultivators, how could he possibly leave any of those dregs behind?! The life slip's broken state was evidently due to someone's actions against the Nangong Clan!

The sixth young master... The sixth young master who had awakened an elysial divine ability! He had actually fallen in Danxia Temple's secret realm! Although such preparations had been long since made for those who chose to enter... confronted with the truth before their eyes, it was still hard to accept!

The amount of resources that a genius occupied up... was enough to rear a hundred ordinary talents!

“Was it from among the Five Great Demon Clans, or...” His gaze cut through the other present lineages like a blade: “the other human lineages of equal standing?”

“F-Fifth Elder...” At this time, an old man said tremblingly: “You... You must brace yourself...”

“Speak.” The fifth elder gritted his teeth and said. There was something capable of being even worst? Nangong Xiaoran’s talents were astonishing. Although his battle experience couldn’t be considered great, it was by no means meager! Even if Nangong Xiaoran had fallen, this was already the most disastrous outcome!

“Fifth Elder...” The old man clenched his teeth and sighed deeply: “besides the sixth young master... the other... the other jade slips... have all... all...”

Swish! In a flash, the fifth elder had already drawn close to the old man, his voice somewhat light: “You don’t mean to tell me... none of them... made it?”

The old man lowered his head. After ages, he gritted his teeth and replied: “Yes...”

The fifth elder’s vision went black!

From the Nangong Clan... so many people had entered! There were also the two half-step Foundation Establishment retainers, Qiao Wu and Quan Liu! Ultimately, all of them been utterly defeated!

It was a mystery as to how many jade slips had exploded from each clan! The group of thousands that were still eagerly waiting moments ago were now collectively silent.

The casualties had been too great... Of those dispatched, who wasn’t a leading figure in their clan or power? At this moment, they absolutely hadn’t expected that there would be almost none

who survived!

“Heavens...” A middle-aged cultivator’s face was black like the bottom of a pot. He firmly gazed at the heavenbound door. Their clansmen had all been completely annihilated. Even the seeds that they looked favorably upon hadn’t exited!

“Could this be... the entrance of hell...?”

It was dead silent. Grave heaviness swiftly pervaded the grounds in the wake of the shattered jade slips. Nonetheless, everyone’s gazes then became even more burning!

Someone was coming out... Everyone could sense that someone was coming out! The number of people were few... but they wanted to see who it was! Who was able to leave Danxia Temple with their lives?!

“This Throne wants to see...” The Nangong Clan’s fifth elder grinded his teeth and said: “Xiaoran has died... Who were the last to survive...?”

“This truly is a place to rear Gu...” Her face ashen, an old woman brushed aside the support of her young maid: “Could it be that the last to come out is the [Gu](#) king?”

“The entire Mo Clan was wiped out, yet there are still those capable of leaving. Is it the Ye Clan? The Yi Clan?” A masked man restrained his aching heart and locked his eyes on the great door: “This Throne does not believe... that the geniuses of the Mo Clan are inferior to others by the slightest fraction!”

In the sky, Daomaster Ancientpine slightly opened his eyes. Under the endless crowd’s focused gazes, the great door became larger and larger. Finally, after a white light glimmered, the entire heavenbound door actually began to transform into a spiritual light eruption that filled the sky!

“This is...” The light of Daomaster Ancientpine’s eyes flashed, and he abruptly stood up: “a return to the Earth... Qi circulation?”

As expected... this was an artificial secret realm!”

After the collapse of all cultivator’s divine abilities, these skills would transform into qi and return to the Earth. However... a cultivator’s divine abilities were merely traces, yet this heavenbound door’s return... caused Longsu Province to immediately become a heavenly paradise!

Swoosh!!! Rays of spiritual light rose up in the air. The skies had turned pale in color. This return to the world was first sign of a secret realm’s disappearance!

RUMBLE! Spiritual light pierced through the denseness of the clouds. From the ground, a boundless light tail dragged onwards to the sky. Nonetheless, in this twinkling, nine silhouettes finally emerged in everyone’s sights in the wake of this collapse of spiritual light!

1. The “Peng” in Kun Peng. I thought about translating this as roc or garuda, but decided against it, since we have an actual character who is a Kun Peng.

2. Reminder. Gu is sometimes considered a super poisonous insect. Other times, it is considered the last surviving poisonous creature in a battle between multiple poisonous creature. This last creature standing is thought to possess extremely potent venom.

Chapter 247: Survivors

The amount of great lineages were estimated to be over a hundred, yet the teams that they had brought contained no less than tens to a hundred personnel! Presently, several thousand gazes all converged on the door.

None had expected the jade slips not to break. Not everyone could survive. In the fleeting instant the enormous heavenbound door opened, the terrible might of the Eight Great Deadlands was truly displayed!

Swoosh... Following this flash of light, a dog's head sneakily popped out. Just as the dog saw the door, he was promptly startled. As he planned to turn back, it seemed that he was kicked by something from behind. All of a sudden, the dog took on a power stance, adopting the attitude of a deputy wolf. His front paw dug at the ground, and he extended his neck and began to wildly howl.

“AWOOO! AWOOOOO... Awooo~.”

It was unknown how a husky could make a wolf's howl, but the dog had accomplished it.

No one laughed. Everyone deeply gazed at the door. Indeed... someone had exited. They needed to see who this person was! Which great lineage was it?!

White light flashed again. The second person to come out was a young single-armed man. He appeared young, very young. His monotone camouflage had long since become tattered. Several long marks hung on his upper body, and his left arm had been moreover severed at the base. There was no lack of blood and scars left behind by divine abilities displayed on his body. What kind of ruthless combat had this young cultivator experienced within Danxia Temple? However, in the eyes of the tens of Foundation Establishment Seniors present, his spiritual pressure caused their

brows to suddenly jump.

“Late-stage Qi Condensation...” A seemingly young cultivator trod in the sky and breathed in deeply: “Based on his skeletal age... he’s less than thirty. He actually has the promise for Foundation Establishment?”

“Which clan’s genius is this?” An old man fixed his eyes on the young cultivator and lowly asked the person at his side: “This Throne... only feels that he is somewhat familiar. We examined and counted the core cultivators from the clans before, but his face wasn’t there.”

“This is the commander of the Xingtian Legion, Xu Yangyi, late-stage Qi Condensation.” At his side, a young man in glasses pushed back on his spectacles out of habit and gritted his teeth: “I really didn’t expect... that all the jade slips of our Zhu Clan would break, but the trifling commander of an A-rank legion actually managed to come out...”

In the sky above, Ancientpine suddenly opened his eyes and looked down incredulously. His seventeenth disciple... had actually come out?

He had already lost a few disciples to Danxia Temple. Which one wasn’t a branch master of the Featherwood Guard? Yes, if a game had to be used as a comparison, now was the Qi Condensation level. His disciples that had passed on were at the Foundation Establishment level. However, this was merely a lowering of level! The difficulty hadn’t changed at all!

“He actually...” Ancientpine took a deep breath and stood up. This was the second time, and also the first time, that he truly carved Xu Yangyi’s silhouette into his heart.

As a cultivator, not as the pill master’s agent.

“Master-ancestor.” Jadesun’s voice was heard from behind. In the same vein, it carried disbelief and a shred of rejoice. He said

happily: “Congratulations, master-ancestor. Seventeenth disciple truly managed to come out alive. This Danxia Temple journey will become one of his most valuable treasures on his cultivation path.”

Daomaster Ancientpine was quiet and intensely studied Xu Yangyi. After ages, he veered off topic, diverting to a completely unrelated matter.

“Cultivation and arcane efforts are not difficult. The number of geniuses are many. Tell me, why are there only over a dozen of us who have reached Core Formation?”

Jadesun bowed deeply: “Please tell, master-ancestor.”

Set over Xu Yangyi’s body, the black qi in Ancientpine’s eyes surged and billowed. He pointed at his chest: “There is nothing else... merely the heart.”

“Several years, ten years, decades, a century, several centuries... bitter cultivation year in and year out, day after day to pursue destiny. Dancing on a razor’s edge... Only such a cultivator can forge a great heart. Only then would they possess an unswerving seeking heart. Only a cultivator who has crossed through life and death can ascend this world’s apex...”

He stowed his gaze and said lowly: “Those who survive the Eight Great Deadlands hold great destiny. Yet the great destiny that you all speak of points to arcane efforts and magik treasures. I see it just as great wisdom and great courage tempered through life and death. Steady continued survival and the determination to explore above and below is the true treasure.”

“This child... His future has no limit.” He spoke no further. Jadesun waited respectfully. A few seconds later, Ancientpine spoke again.

“Jadesun, do you think he can serve as Longsu Province’s branch master?”

“Master-ancestor?” Jadesun coldly gasped. In the past, there

might've not been too many people willing to come to Longsu Province. The area wasn't wealthy or prosperous at all. From the mortal world's perspective, its GDP ranked at the several bottom places in the entire nation. To the cultivation world, the region was barren, containing part of the Gobi Desert and numerous other deserts. Likewise, it wasn't a very suitable place for cultivation. Thus it could be said that this area... was a difficult undertaking.

However... it wasn't the same now!

Jadesun forced down the shock in his heart. He lifted his head to look at the enormous heavenbound door that was in the process of returning its qi... Such a massive secret realm... A supreme secret realm that was over 200,000 square kilometers in size. Once this qi returned to the world... then...

It could be said that apart from the capital, Longsu Province's qi would reach the most terrifying level in the entire country! Perhaps it would even surpass the capital!

Presently, the city with the heaviest qi in China was the capital! The second was [Haojin](#)! The third was Jinling! These were ancient capitals that had experienced five or six dynasties! And there was a chance that following the completion of this qi return, Longsu Province would transcend these places! The branch master and minister positions for this place were bound to be the most contested seats in the Featherwood Guard!

“Master-ancestor.” After coming down from his astonishment, Jadesun pondered and said: “Currently... there has never been a late-stage Qi Condensation cultivator who has been bestowed the glory of a branch master's position. That's not to mention that there are several Foundation Establishment greater demons in Nanzhou. If seventeenth disciple serves as branch master, I'm afraid that he will be unable to suppress them. Besides...”

He sighed: “Seventeenth disciple's left arm has already been done

away with...”

“If I say it is to be done, then it will be done.” Ancientpine uttered: “I am the master of the Featherwood Guard. Could it be that the desires of This Dao Master must still hearken to the comments of Foundation Establishment Seniors?”

“Unable to suppress?” Ancientpine glanced at Xu Yangyi: “Jadesun, in the discussion of cultivation, you are above him. But in the discussion of connections, you fall far short of him. Later on... you’ll have to get much closer to your seventeenth junior apprentice-brother...”

Jade was stunned, realization immediately dawning on him. He involuntarily cried out in surprise: “Master-ancestor, are you speaking about... the pill master’s one-way liaison?!”

“Indeed...” Ancientpine faced upward and laughed heartily: “He wants a stage. To use his own strength to prove himself. I will grant him this stage!”

“Being the youngest branch master is nothing. If anyone dares not accept it, they can come and discuss it with me! Even if they say he is a cripple, it doesn’t matter. If anyone dares to say a word, you can exterminate them on my behalf!”

“Give him time. I want to see whether he can use his connections on this stage to firmly seat himself upon the branch master’s position!” His smile vanished, and he murmured to Jadesun with a voice that was simply inaudible: “If... he truly can break his way through and establish himself... then... he is bound for Foundation Establishment... After Foundation Establishment, he will possess the qualifications to enter... that place where the true elite converge...”

None were any the wiser to Daomaster Ancientpine’s shock. He was a god in the sky, yet the numerous people below were already dumbfounded.

“The Xingtian Legion... I’ve never heard of them!” An old woman gritted her teeth as she looked at Xu Yangyi: “How was he able to get out?! This Throne knows a little bit about this junior Xu... The pill master’s one-way liaison... How did he not die inside?”

“Yes... if he died inside, the pill master would’ve had to choose a new contact. We... would’ve been able to dig up his background.” Another middle-aged man at her side was standing in the air, his face heavy like water. “I hadn’t expected at all that he would actually make it out!”

“Insignificant late-stage Qi Condensation!” The eyes of the Nangong Clan’s hawk-nosed man were somewhat flushed red. “What on earth was Xiaoran doing? And what of Qiao Wu?! Quan Liu?! Have both of their jade slips not broken?!”

“N-no...” A man at his side replied, trembling with fear. This loss was too great, so great that the Nangong Clan found it somewhat painful to the flesh.

The deaths of tens of Qi Condensation cultivators was fine, but Nangong Xiaoran’s jade slip had actually shattered into pieces! This was tantamount to striking the Nangong Clan’s face!

“Where are they?!?!” The man couldn’t help but roar: “They actually have nerve to drift about without purpose even though the sixth young master fell in Danxia Temple?! Find them! Ransack all of China and find them! This Throne... will bury them all together with the sixth young master!!!”

After the white light twinkled before Xu Yangyi’s eyes, he was dazed. In front of him... were a LOT of people. Several thousand people, all of them China’s prestigious and renowned. The clans that he had regularly looked at on the Heavens Law’s web page. Countless flying magik artifacts faced him, floating in the air. There were all kinds. Furthermore, there were tens of people standing in the air. Their gazes were trained on him, deep like the ocean.

And above these people, there were clan emblems of interweaving qi. They were multicolored with myriad rays of treasure light. They died the sky with a rainbow of prismatic sunlight.

Xu Yangyi turned his head and glanced at the enormous white door. Following the incorporalization of the qi rays above the door, the enormous door's appearance gradually became hazy.

"Hurry up." He said behind him and formed a fist with his hand towards everyone. He stood at the side. Afterwards, the white light behind him continued to flash. One after another, blood-soaked, solemn-faced cultivators walked out.

Quan Ningyue, Zhao Wuye, Zhan Twelve, Fang Cheng... In the sky, Daomaster Ancientpine's eyes became brighter and brighter as each person came out.

All of them were from the Xingtian Legion!!!

Jadesun was also shocked. From one of the Eight Great Deadlands... not only had his seventeenth junior brother come out, he had even left with a majority of the people he had entered with!

Even now... this was beyond the course of destiny! Without great wisdom, this feat couldn't be accomplished!

"This child... His future has no limit..." Ancientpine repeated these words again as if he was certain of this. He said faintly: "Jadesun, hear and obey."

"Disciple is here!" Jadesun immediately took a knee on the ground.

"Bring your seventeenth junior brother to my treasury." Ancientpine laughed: "Let him choose. As long as it is favorable to the restoration of his left arm, I will allow him to take it."

"Yes." Great astonishment rocked Jadesun's heart. This was beyond his expectations. In the wake of Xu Yangyi's exit from Danxia Temple, Daomaster Ancientpine's valuation of Xu Yangyi

had reached such a degree of importance!

1. Haojin is Guangzhou. Jinling is Nanjing

Chapter 248: Danxias Aftermath

“It’s that mongrel...” With a mere glance, those of the Ming Clan understood everything.

“He actually managed to come out alive...”

However, their gazes didn’t linger. The present scene resembled a disaster ground. Almost everyone’s jade slips had shattered. In fact... the Ming Clan’s leading elder clearly understood that the Ming Clan still had one person. Someone of the God Ming echelon who had survived!

Sister Nine!

The elder’s gaze didn’t stay over Xu Yangyi’s body for too long. At this moment, welcoming the surviving God Ming Sister Nine was proper business.

After the Xingtian Legion’s six figures, the white light flashed again shortly afterwards. His expression seemed tranquil, but in truth, Xuan Chengzi carried a deep sliver of grief as he walked out.

“The Dao Sect’s disciple...” In the crowd, someone sighed gently with sorrow. As expected, a person of the Dao Sect had also survived.

“Master-ancestor.” At this time in the sky, Jadesun said: “The heavenbound door’s reparation response is gradually becoming more violent. It seems... that there aren’t many people walking out.”

Daomaster Ancientpine collected his gaze from Xu Yangyi’s body in gratification. Eventually, he said faintly: “Nine.”

“Oh?”

“This time, there are only nine people coming out.” Ancientpine sighed: “The other thousand... have all perished at the bottom of Danxia Temple...”

“Huff...” Jadesun inhaled sharply. Even if he hadn’t entered, at this moment, he likewise felt the desperation of this secret realm journey.

In the end, a thousand had entered and only nine had come out alive to tell the tale. Yet all those who survived still carried wounds.

Jadesun and Ancientpine spoke no further. The atmosphere below was turning graver and graver.

The entire body of the heavenbound door’s qi was ascending streak by streak with lightning speed. The sky was already densely covered with pure-white spirit clouds! Everyone could see that in at most ten or twenty minutes, this storm of returning qi would immediately arrive!

But before that... how many people would be able leave Danxia Temple with their lives?

“Damn it...” An old cultivator was already unable to help himself from moving forwards by several steps. He almost wanted to leave from the range of his clan but the others were prompt to pull him back.

“Hong’er...” An old cultivator’s eyes were strained entirely crimson, and he glared daggers at the great door: “I can’t accept this... even if you’re dead, I still must understand!”

“Could it be that our Cao Clan’s tens of clansmen have all taken refuge at the bottom of Danxia Temple! Not a single person come out?!”

It was a mystery as to the number of cultivators whose hearts were already in chaos like tangled hemp. This simply wasn’t the scene of their anticipations, their young juniors cheering as they came out and regaling their clans with tales of their Danxia Temple gains. It only seemed as if a death god had passed through. Far and few in between, seven people had come out!

Not even one person from among a hundred had survived!

Swoosh! In the wake of the heavenbound door's glimmering becoming more and more intense, the eighth silhouette walked out.

“Sister Nine!” In a twinkling, the Ming Clan rang out with cries of shock and cheer! It was unknown how many people screeched out in chorus as if she was hero!

Sister Nine resembled a zombie, a walking corpse and moving flesh. Even separated so far away, the heavy injuries that she had suffered could still be felt!

“Defend Honored Nine!” The Ming Clan elder yelled out angrily. In an instant, several figures carrying glittering treasure lights rushed over.

But at this time, Sister Nine responded with collapse. She seemed to have just awoken, like she had exhausted all of her strength. By chance, Xu Yangyi was at her side and extended his hand to support her.

Sister Nine's face was pale. She couldn't be considered beautiful, but a wisp of an enigmatic smile floated into view on her uniquely tempered face. Facing Xu Yangyi and nodding, she didn't utter a word.

“LET GO, JUNIOR!!!” However, this ordinary action caused the Ming Clan elder to instantly roar in fury! Quick to follow, countless silk threads abruptly surged forth like a tide, madly winding towards Xu Yangyi!

“Release your filthy hand!!!” He glared daggers at Xu Yangyi, the fires of anxiety attacking his heart. Sister Nine... was the sole person to survive from the Ming Clan. What she represented was far from being so simple as one of the God Ming echelon! There was also the titanic secret within Danxia Temple! If a tiny bit of an error occurred, even he wouldn't be able to bear it upon his return!

“If the slightest mishap has happened to young Nine! This Throne will deliver unto you a death of a thousand cuts!!!”

Swoosh! The qi was like a tide. A silken ocean concealed the sky! This speed, simply unavoidable to a Qi Condensation cultivator, caused one’s courage to wholly tremble upon contact. Nonetheless, Xu Yangyi didn’t dodge at all.

BOOM! Just as the all-encompassing tide of surging silk rushed before Xu Yangyi like daggers, they suddenly began to collectively ignite!

This wasn’t an ordinary combustion, but rather... the transformation of black fire orbs! With a speed even faster than the rushing silk, these orbs turned back to burn and follow!

“This...” Everyone simultaneously gasped in shock. They immediately understood and quickly raised their heads to the sky.

Over yonder, there was only a layer of clouds, a stratum of dense clouds that simply wouldn’t clear away.

“If the slightest mishap befalls This Dao Master’s disciple, you will not escape ten thousand deaths.” In the air, an imposing, unparalleled voice was heard. Soon afterwards... the cloud bank dispersed by strands and threads. Although not tall, a silhouette as heavy as a mountain emerged in the clouds!

Core Formation ancestor!!!

All together, everyone broke into cold sweats. Danxia Temple’s unforeseen transformations hadn’t concluded. They had paid attention to the chaos. They had completely forgot...

Xu Yangyi was Daomaster Ancientpine’s disciple!

If the Ming Clan elder took action wouldn’t this be a public striking of a Core Formation ancestor’s face, his honor?

“Respectful greetings, Dao Master!” “Respects, Ancestor Ancientpine!”

In the wake of voices expressing the same sentiment, everyone happened to all take a knee on the ground. The Ming Clan elder was an exception. At this moment, endless black flames had already come before him! This horrific temperature caused his eyebrows and all of his hair to burn!

“Ancestor, spare me! Spare my life, ancestor!” No longer caring for his appearance, the elder screeched, shouting himself hoarse.

Daomaster Ancientpine glanced at him without a sliver of emotion. He simply didn’t retrieve the flames and uttered: “With myself here and keeping watching, you, an insignificant late-stage Foundation Establishment, dares to act against my disciple?”

“Ancestor!!!” The elder was quick to prostrate himself, his head and extremities cast to the ground. His voice was shivering: “Junior has made a mistake! It is junior’s mistake! I beseech the ancestor to be magnanimous and show leniency!”

The flames were in front of him. They didn’t take a step further, but they moreover didn’t disappear.

Ancientpine didn’t even glance at him, yet also didn’t will the flames to vanish. Like so, they encircled the Ming Clan elder’s surroundings. He turned his head to study Xu Yangyi. After ages, he nodded: “You have done well.”

“It was thanks to Master-Ancestor’s guidance.” Xu Yangyi wasn’t one to rely on such folly as favor and arrogance. He immediately formed a fist with his hand and answered.

“No, this isn’t related to me.” Ancientpine smiled as he looked at Xu Yangyi and suddenly said: “Commander of the Xingtian Legion, Xu Yangyi, harken to my command.”

“Disciple is here!”

“From this day onwards, former Legion Commander Xu Yangyi of the Xingtian Legion is promoted to Longsu Province’s branch master. For a period... of ten years. Receive my command.”

“Yes!”

Although everyone was lowering their heads, they were shocked in their hearts.

Daomaster Ancientpine hadn't been obvious with his words but used action to tell everyone. Yes, they were the ones who came out with the most people alive. However, two of them were also his disciples! If someone dared to grumble and complain about this question... then he wasn't to be blamed for being vicious and merciless.

Such a degree of favor... was absolutely not something that an ordinary disciple could obtain!

The Ming Clan elder was soaked in cold sweat from head to toe!

His... offense towards a Core Formation master didn't need to be stated. He had moreover offended future authorities! A Qi Condensation cultivator achieving a branch master's position... What kind of interest was this from a Core Formation master!

“Moreover, Longsu Province's Branchmaster Xu Yangyi is to immediately head to the Featherwood Guard and report of what has come to pass this time.” Formalities completed, Daomaster Ancientpine's eyes swept over everyone in the crowd. Like a great mountain, Core Formation spiritual pressure descended, and he said coldly: “Everyone... I believe that you all shouldn't be thinking that your own clan's failure is related to my disciple, yes... hmm?”

“We dare not!”

“Branchmaster Xu is a titan among men. How could this be related with him!”

“Since it is Daomaster Ancientpine's disciple, Longsu Province's branch master, the Zhou Clan is ready to completely accept this as truth!”

In an instant, under Daomaster Ancientpine's strike, the people

who were originally still holding a few thoughts followed the wind and promptly changed course.

Out of all who were still presently left, Xu Yangyi's standing was the shallowest! The crowd dared not offend the Dao Sect. They also dared not provoke the Ming Clan. But Xu Yangyi... His original status as the pill master's agent was enough to turn one's eyes red with envy. He then became Daomaster Ancientpine's disciple not long after. No one knew whether or not he had received favor. The Ming Clan elder's action also held probing thoughts.

Daomaster Ancientpine had thwarted this attempt and then dismissed them. If he hadn't obstructed... Xu Yangyi wouldn't have been able to leave this place from a range of 500 meters today!

However, Daomaster Ancientpine didn't only just halt this action! He was moreover telling everyone that those with stirring hands would have their hands chopped off. Towards those with crooked thoughts, he made no guarantee that their heads would still be on their necks in the next second.

This was the might of Core Formation!

"Seventeenth junior apprentice-brother... is actually going to lead Longsu Province?" In the crowd, a youth raised his head and looked at Ancestor Ancientpine in shock. "Master-ancestor... just gave him Longsu Province?"

"Don't question master-ancestor's decision." At this side, a resolute-faced man lowered his head and said lowly: "For seventeenth junior brother to be able to leave Danxia Temple alive, this is something he deserves."

"Deserves?" The youth gritted his teeth: "Longsu Province... might now transform into the cultivation center of the midwest! Its qi density level after reparation might directly chase after the Capital's! It was actually given to a recently accepted disciple?!"

“If you make it out alive from one of the Eight Great Deadlands, you can also apply to master-ancestor!” The resolute-faced man said angrily: “Don’t forget, the last person to achieve Core Formation in China was Ancestor Floatingcloud who managed to survive the Dragon Hole!”

Everyone said nothing. Even an idiot understood that once reparation came to an end, Longsu Province would quickly transform into a heavenly paradise. Currently, how many were there conferred with the title of a Featherwood Guard Branch Master? Xu Yangyi, this name, deepened a level further in everyone’s hearts.

Not as the Pill Dao’s agent but rather as a cultivator, a cultivator with boundless prospects!

All of a sudden, the white light flashed for the last time.

A quickly walking shadow appeared. Everyone looked on with fiery gazes. Soon afterwards, an extremely joyous cry of surprise rang out from the Yi Clan!

“Fifth young master! It’s the fifth young master!”

“The heavens have taken pity... Fifth young master’s jade slip cracked but never shattered in the end!”

“Congratulations, fifth young master!”

The Yi Clan was so excited that they cried out repeatedly in surprise. However, they absolutely hadn’t expected that after Yi Old Five exited, his first action would be to deeply cup his fist towards Xu Yangyi and nod. Afterwards, he closed his eyes and blacked out straightaway.

The scene was a stretch of silence.

Even the Yi Clan, just wild with joy, was stunned.

What was Yi Old Five’s intention just now?

“The Yi Clan gives our many thanks for Branchmaster Xu’s

considerations.” In the Yi Clan, a voice was suddenly heard. An old man, almost so old that it seemed that he was unable to move, trod into the air. He faced Xu Yangyi and cupped his hands: “Branchmaster Xu, the Yi Clan’s headquarters is located in Jiangnan City. The distance is not too far from Longsu Province. I hope you can make a visit should you have the time.”

The first lineage had already extended an olive branch to Xu Yangyi!

Chapter 249: Branch Master

“Third Elder...” At the old man’s side, a middle-aged man furrowed his brows: “is this appropriate?”

“This person... his left arm is missing. There’s no doubt that he’s nearly a cripple. In particular...” He whispered: “there’s a very deep wound on his dantian...”

“I know.” The old man coughed and said: “But who ever said that one can’t cultivate with a missing left arm? And who said that the qi sea has to be in the dantian?”

The middle-aged man was stunned: “You’re saying...”

“There are some arcane efforts that can shift the qi sea...” The old man studied Xu Yangyi deeply: “I have only heard of these kinds of arcane efforts, but without such an explanation, how can the qi stored in Branchmaster Xu’s body be explained? As for his left arm...”

The old man laughed: “Although it’s quite difficult, that doesn’t mean nothing can be done. A peak Qi Condensation grand master can restore one’s shortcomings, even making someone better than before. It’s just that the price and materials... hehe, let’s just see if the pill master behind him is willing to stick his head out for him.”

“This...”

“Not only that, but just on his ability to come out alive from Danxia Temple and Ancestor Ancientpine’s heavy regard, he is worthy of the Yi Clan’s association. Old Seven...” He looked at the middle-aged man: “You’re still young... In this cultivation world, good or bad, several millenniums of inheritances is quite large...”

At this time, a sound like muffled thunder resounded throughout the area.

Rumble! Following this loud echo, the entire heavenbound door suddenly exploded into incomparably brilliant white light. As for

the giant Peng image in the sky, it also erupted into red brilliance that went straight to the heavens at the same time! One light ascended from below, and one light torrented down from above. Between heaven and earth, all that existed was red and white.

Bloody-crimson rays passed through the clouds. Because of the sky-swathing red light, it caused the clouds to become scarlet red, weaving together and shining with the boundless white spiritual light from the ground. In the boundary of heaven and earth, this vagueness here became two worlds of pure color.

“It’s returned...” Everyone watched this scene in astonishment. Even Daomaster Ancientpine was no exception.

“It is not... that I have never witnessed a qi reparation.” In the sky, Jadesun accompanied Ancientpine at his side. Ancientpine looked at the sky, mumbling: “But... I have never seen... such a massive reparation...”

“Such a vast artificial secret realm. This return to the heavens and earth is like the descent of sweet rains in a desert, transforming Longsu Province into a new cultivation holy land... Perhaps because of this, moderate changes will occur to the entire cultivation world’s layout...”

His voice was gentle, but in the wake of his voice, red and white gradually melded together. Surprisingly, this fusion started to turn into a kind of strange... black!

“This is...” Countless cultivators raised their heads to look at the sky. Yes, red and white qi completely entered the clouds, yet at this moment, it was different from the green jade that seemed to wash Nanzhou City’s sky a second ago. The sky was already filled with black clouds.

“Such a vast reparation of qi, huh...” The Yi Clan’s Old Su watched the sky and muttered.

At this time, following this light rumbling, the clouds in the sky

gradually split apart. Endless rain began to bucket down.

Crash... A waterfall of raindrops landed. Xu Yangyi extended his hand, an untold number of raindrops hitting it. He didn't look at the sky but rather at all that now remained of the virtual door.

Finished...

Countless lives had been buried below... In the wake of this door's close... everything was declared to have come to an end at long last...

He wasn't sad again. People always wanted to look back, mirroring themselves in past sorrow or happiness. In either scenario, one could only bring themselves to a standstill, binding their feet without advance. But he was far from that time of hesitation and pause.

He looked at his hand in the rain.

In reality, he felt from the start that in the instant that the rain fell, all his bodily qi had been mobilized. It was beginning to increase sliver by sliver.

Very slow... very, very slow. Nonetheless, he didn't absorb qi at all! In any time and any place, the Eternal Alchemy Canon was sure to automatically draw in qi. However, his dantian had been ruined, and his arm had yet to be restored. Presently, the Eternal Alchemy Canon absolutely couldn't be reflexively cycled. This spiritual force... was shockingly creeping into his body from the outside on its own!

These rains were also jade green in color. Furthermore, they weren't solid at all, and his clothes couldn't get wet. But as this rain touched his clothes, it immediately transformed into rays of white spiritual light that sunk into his body.

"This isn't rain." Xu Yangyi raised his head to look all around: "This is..."

"The heavens are reached and listening. Qi transforms into sweet

rain...” An old wrinkled-faced cultivator shuddered as he stretched out both of his arms into the air. At this moment, as far as the eye could see, to the end of the sky, everything was jade green. It was as if a heavy green curtain had been pulled between heaven and earth.

No one spoke. How treasured was the increase of spiritual force? At some unknown time, the first cultivator sat down. Soon afterwards, there was a second cultivator, followed by a third and fourth... Less than ten minutes later, all present several thousand cultivators were already seated. In the last instant, they were still paying attention to the Danxia Temple interior. In the next, they were meditating and silently enjoying this gift of the heavens.

At this time, an azure lotus grew out from the ground and gently swayed in the wind. In kind, it wasn't a physical object, but the solidification and formation of qi. Slowly, fields of delicate azure lotuses bloomed all over the earth. They were nicely set off with the jade-green rain in the sky.

Xu Yangyi also closed his eyes and began to enjoy the final present of this journey. After roughly an hour, the downpour finally ceased. In the instant that Xu Yangyi opened his eyes, he felt the front of him brighten.

The sky was still the sky. The earth was still the earth. However, in this twinkling, Nanzhou City's qi density levels... It was simply no exaggeration in the slightest to use “an alteration of the heavens and a change of the earth” to describe it!

It was in every inch of soil. If a divine ability was used, floating qi could be even seen above! This situation could only be felt in the Capital district! Right now, in Longsu Province, China's great northwest, the same had arose!

Xu Yangyi opened his eyes again. The qi required for the late stage of Qi Condensation was even more tremendous than the middle stage. This approximately one hour of spirit rain had

increased his boundary by no more than ten or twenty percent. In any case, this qi reparation wasn't truly focused on people but instead the earth!

His spiritual sense abruptly scattered! Every blade of grass and each tree in the surrounding 300-plus meters emerged in his mind. He saw some animals. A trace of confusion even appeared in his eyes. These creatures... were in the enlightenment stage. If they followed their instincts accordingly, perhaps they would be able to rouse their intelligences in one or several decades.

To people, this spirit-rain return was a sliver, but to these animals, it was no different from a shedding of their mortal bodies and an exchange of bones. He even saw... a couple plants—he couldn't remember their names—lingering and winding around the dense qi. They gradually bloomed in the great door's surroundings.

“This is... Nine-Tailed Crane Saliva Grass?” Xu Yangyi's gaze fell on a plant, and he sucked in deeply. This could no longer be considered a plant. A very small sapling was poking its head out from the soil. However, its black leaf and the red strand in the middle of it was incomparably familiar to him.

There were a few spirit plants quitely sprouting in the Nine-Tailed Crane Saliva Grass's vicinity. The qi reparation provided Longsu Province, especially Nanzhou City, with enormous changes to the cultivation world!

Within two hundred or three hundred years... this place would become a true cultivation paradise!

“I'm going to have to inspect this place in the future.” He stood up and studied each blade of grass and every tree in the environment. A grand emotion arose in his heart, almost roaring towards the sky.

Ambition existed high and lofty in the dauntless and courageous. Magnificent goals to approach the clouds and resonate throughout

the nine heavens.

At less than thirty years old, he had advanced to the late stage of Qi Condensation. Among those that he knew of, only Sunnihilator alone had accomplished this. However, Sunnihilator wasn't enlightened in Pill Dao and furthermore wasn't a branch master!

Not only had he not advanced to the late stage before thirty years old, he was moreover seated on the branch master's throne while he was in the Qi Condensation realm! This was the stage he needed. Thousandedge had already died. Without the latter's hindrance and Daomaster Ancientpine's bestowal of Longsu Province's branch master position, his path was already opening up bit by bit!

"Respects, Branch Master." At this time, a voice was heard from his side. Xu Yangyi raised an eye and glanced. Surprisingly, it was Xuan Chengzi.

"Fellow Daoist Xuan Chengzi." To say that he wasn't excited was a falsehood. He was thrilled with his success, [spring wing bringing pleasure and the gallop of horse steps ever swift and graceful](#). The long trial finished, great freedom was unleashed, the flowers of Chang'an long since viewed in their majesty. In this time of high spirits, who was not a youth?

Such a feeling could not be wrestled. It was only through great effort and striving. Until the phase of some goal was finally achieved, it could not be experienced.

"You need not call me Fellow Daoist." Xuan Chengzi said sincerely: "This poor Daoist wishes to join the Xingtian Legion."

Xu Yangyi's gaze slightly flickered. The order he passed down to Wei Zhongxian was to erase all memories related with him. In that case... Xuan Chengzi was certain to have not remembered the Emperor Armament's appearance. But if so, how was he able to still remember him?

“Branch Master.” Xuan Chengzi laughed: “Each person of the Dao Sect studies secret arts to strictly guard against memory tampering. Especially us. Grandpa Wei’s secret arts are quite profound, but I still remember a little.”

Xu Yangyi heavily studied Xuan Chengzi. The Dao Scripture... held such a profound relationship with the Dao Sect. In particular... the revealed location of the final secret hidden in the Thirteen Ming Tombs that Wei Zhongxian had spoke of. True to heart, Xuan Chengzi wanted to join him? Xu Yangyi wasn’t very convinced.

“Now isn’t the time to speak of this.” Xu Yangyi said, cool and collected. Xuan Chengzi remembering a few things was beyond his expectations. Presently, the most pressing was to first stabilize himself.

Xuan Chengzi... in Danxia Temple, apart from himself currently, was possibly the sole person who was aware of the entire secret. He knew why Danxia Temple’s strange changes had occurred and knew about what was concealed below. He knew of Xiaoqing and Fahai’s grievances and moreover knew... of what he beared.

Xuan Chengzi laughed wryly and pulled open the lapel of his robe.

Xu Yangyi raised a brow. On Xuan Chengzi’s chest, he saw a blood-red talisman. This was a talisman that he recognized.

“A heart devil oath?” He finally eyed Xuan Chengzi seriously. Such a pledge was almost similar to the pull of Li Zongyuan’s soul. Violation was death. Xuan Chengzi was actually willing to make such an oath. One could see the other’s sincerity.

Xu Yangyi didn’t immediately answer but rather gazed at the other deeply. After ages, he said: “Why? I only saved your life. It’s not necessary. Saving you was to save myself. If I didn’t do it, none of us would’ve made it out.”

Xuan Chengzi's expression was calm and indifferent as he closed his lapel like he didn't have a timed bomb on his chest. "I naturally have my reasons... but Branch Master speaks the truth. Now isn't the time to discuss these things. The most important matter is to clearly explain this entire affair to Ancestor Ancientpine."

"I'll go now." Xu Yangyi nodded.

At this time, Xuan Chengzi took a knee in front of Xu Yangyi and said brightly: "Respectful partings, Branch Master!"

Simultaneously, Li Zongyuan, Zhan Twelve, and Quan Ningyue took a knee on the ground with a single fist presented in front of their chests. They shouted using their loudest voices: "Respectful partings, Branch Master!"

Before several thousand cultivators, they had to announce in Xu Yangyi's stead. From this day forth, in the Featherwood Guard of Longsu Province's Nanzhou, he, the late-stage Qi Condensation Xu Yangyi, had the final say!

1. "Spring wing bringing pleasure and the gallop of horse steps ever swift and graceful... the flowers of Chang'an long since viewed in their majesty." Poem by Tang Poet Meng Jiao (751-814). I believe I have explained this in the past. Based on context, I usually like to come up with new renditions and interpretations.

Chapter 250: Test

As if it was aware of all of this, a black array emerged under Xu Yangyi. In a fleeting moment, not a shadow of him was seen any longer.

A faint dizziness appeared before him. Having been transferred a few times, he knew that this was a forced transference. A splendid palace hall had already emerged in front of his eyes. Ancient in both style and air, the hall was so quiet that a falling needle could be heard. Beyond the over a dozen large coiling dragon pillars, there was a black throne. His Master-Ancestor Ancientpine was seated upright on it.

“Disciple greets Master-Ancestor.”

Xu Yangyi formed a fist with his hand respectfully and saluted. Ancientpine only made a slight nod. He didn’t respond. Measuring Xu Yangyi for a long while, he said: “Your qi sea isn’t in your dantian?”

Xu Yangyi pursed his lips. No matter what, this point couldn’t be concealed. Thousandedge had made a large hole in Xu Yangyi’s dantian even though he had restrained his spiritual pressure. Xu Yangyi could fool some cultivators, such as Thousandedge, but concerning Great Circle Foundation Establishment and half-step Core Formation, or perhaps say, his own master-ancestor, a Core Formation Dao Master, he absolutely couldn’t keep this in the dark.

“Disciple...”

Xu Yangyi was pondering how to answer, yet Ancientpine shook his head: “Don’t use empty words to deceive me.

“Your master-ancestor is in no way a greedy and immoderate person. Each has their own destiny and each has their own path. Even if you possess good fortune, that good fortune is still yours.

Although I can seize it forcibly, it will leave behind hidden damages in my heart. To reach such a realm as This Dao Master's, such conduct on the contrary does not make up for the losses in gains."

In his heart, Xu Yangyi released a long sigh of relief. Before he knew what something was, he would search everywhere for its truth. Because regardless of any destiny, anything he didn't know about and used would make him feel uncertain in heart. Nonetheless, he had long since become aware. He was absolutely unwilling to expose it under another's sight.

Fortunately... Ancientpine also didn't know that he held an Animus Armament in his hand, the only one in five thousand years.

Silence. In front of the world's apex, a Core Formation ancestor, Xu Yangyi wouldn't speak casually. Ancientpine also seemed to be considering something but didn't speak straightaway. After spending no less than several minutes in contemplation, he uttered: "Each system has its own reward system."

"For example, the CSIB employs the similar mortal 'performance'. Heavens Law uses course credits. The Bountiful Treasures Pavilion uses stock. And we, the Featherwood Guard, since centuries ago, use merit."

"To those who make service, there is achievement. For those who make merit, there is contribution. [Honor and glory is only taken on horseback, thou truly is a great hero](#). There is no phrase more fitting than to the most dangerous, the Featherwood Guard."

Xu Yangyi quietly listened. He was quite the stranger to this phrase. Likewise, Thousandedge never spoke much about other rules.

As if he saw Xu Yangyi's doubts, Ancientpine laughed in a moment of rareness: "Are you unfamiliar? Yes, this can't be used by those not at Foundation Establishment. This is because an A-

rank Legion of the Featherwood Guard is all comprised of Foundation Establishment or above. You are an A-rank Legion seed. Achievements for B-rank and C-rank Qi Condensation legions is nothing more than the opening of pill elixirs and talisman discounts. But at Foundation Establishment...”

His voice turned: “Then... according to merit value, a corresponding treasury can be entered and a magik treasure selected.”

“Magik treasure?” Xu Yangyi’s gaze twinkled, and he formed a fist with his hand respectfully and asked.

“Indeed, a magik treasure.” Ancientpine confirmed: “Have you thought about why I have placed you in Longsu Province this time?”

“This place will inevitably become a strategic location struggled for by numerous powers. Even a couple apex clans might join the fray. You really think... those slain geniuses in the secret realm are these clans’ true strength?”

Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to answer, Daomaster Ancientpine said lowly: “Remember well, to these so-called apex clans, a lone person is nothing more than their tiniest branch. You still haven’t faced the real clans. When they all mobilize, it is a terrible machine of slaughter. Even I fear the consequences of these apex clans.”

“I think highly of you.” Daomaster Ancientpine said bluntly. To him, there wasn’t too much to be afraid of in this world. “But the more I favor, the more you will be tempered. In Longsu Province, you are branch master. You lead the Featherwood Guard. Altogether, there are two A-rank, five B-rank, and twenty C-rank legions in Longsu Province. In total, there is a thousand people. All of them are yours to manage.”

“You must stand firm and dig your feet in Longsu Province.”

Black qi soared from Daomaster Ancientpine’s seven apertures.

Xu Yangyi raised his head and looked at the other face-to-face. After ages, he said heavily: “Disciple surely won’t let down Master-Ancestor’s great expectations.”

After several seconds, Ancientpine drew back his gaze: “I will remind you, if you do not stand steady, you will not leave this opportunity alive. I will also not interfere. The throne of Core Formation does not require the useless below it.” Pausing, he said faintly: “Would you... blame Master-Ancestor?”

“No.” Xu Yangyi shook his head and laughed: “Any of those who succeed absolutely can’t do so single-handedly. Without my own power, cultivators, and mortals searching for heavenly treasures and all kinds of destinies for me, I cannot kick open the great door of Core Formation. How can one’s life be temporary, how could one have so much time?”

Daomaster Ancientpine nodded praisingly and lifted his chin, indicating for Xu Yangyi to continue speaking.

Xu Yangyi arranged his thoughts and followed: “Ancestor Floatingcloud is a special case, but after he achieved Core Formation, he immediately embraced the rich and imposing Qin Imperial Court. Other high-level cultivators are like spiders spitting silk, operating in each region and belonging to one’s own power. This opportunity seems dangerous but is in fact very precious.”

Daomaster Ancientpine smiled as he nodded: “For you to think about this point has made me quite gratified.”

Xu Yangyi understood very well. That wasn’t to mention that according to what he knew, if the Northwest King, Floating Light Imprisoning Shadow, Ancestor Ancientpine, and also his master-ancestor, didn’t nod towards all cultivation supplies leading from the western border provinces to the western part of the country, whoever dared to take a step out of the nation’s border would have their clan annihilated. It was solely recorded that Daomaster

Ancientpine had personally exterminated no less than five Great Circle Foundation Establishment clans.

Wealth, scripture, companions, and land. Wealth ranked first. Xu Yangyi still didn't know how many spirit stones he required as fuel for truly activating the Eternal Alchemy Canon after Foundation Establishment. Presently, he needed to spread his power.

This was Daomaster Ancientpine's nurture in treating him as the disciple of a Core Formation master. Else not, others wouldn't want Daomaster Ancientpine to grant him such a seemingly fatal opportunity.

He would either be defeated, his halberd henceforth sinking into the sand, or raise his fame in the future cultivation paradise Longsu Province! Xu Yangyi would completely settle himself on the branch master's throne! He would make a foundation belonging to him!

He clearly heard Daomaster Ancientpine said that these thousand people were all his to manage, BUT it wasn't that all of them would "listen" to his dispatch. There was a completely different meaning in the lack of this character.

"In addition, I'll tell you about an interesting matter..." Ancientpine studied Xu Yangyi's face and finally reminded: "Just now, a total of eleven sound-relay paper cranes flew out. Among them, they comprise Xijiang Province's An, De, and Ti Demon Clans, Xichuan's Baili Clan, and several other first-rate powers."

Xu Yangyi nodded, not speaking further.

Longsu Province... whose position was highest? And the most fitting path for the other clans to use, especially for the demon clans, to rise to a first-grade clan?

It could only be the Xingtian Legion!

Not to speak of slaying Xu Yangyi himself, even plundering a

Featherwood Guard branch treasury was an immense harvest! This... was a gold mountain on a stove!

“The Cultivation Court has always turned a blind eye to the struggle of the human and demon clans... thus, I grant you achievement privileges only permitted to late-stage Foundation Establishment. Relying on this privilege, you may choose a magik treasure from the Featherwood Guard’s treasury.” He said with seemingly deep meaning: “You have to... choose well...”

“Good.” Neither lightly nor heavily, Daomaster Ancientpine mentioned a few more things. Afterwards, he said no more. To him, he had seen many, many geniuses and also trained many Core Formation seeds. Nonetheless, in the end, of those who were able to stay alive until this step... there were zero! So, even if Xu Yangyi’s talents were better, he would keep watching step by step.

The mere branch master of a Featherwood Guard branch, this was only the first step... If Xu Yangyi wanted to achieve Core Formation, he needed to first overcome the great barrier of Foundation Establishment!

“I am somewhat tired. Speak... of your experiences within Danxia Temple. Afterwards, my assistant will go exchange your merits.”

Xu Yangyi nodded and gave an account of the outline that he had prepared earlier.

After no less than an hour passed, he then left the palace. Just as he exited, he saw a spirited youth, the late stage of Qi Condensation like him. After catching sight of Xu Yangyi, the other immediately cupped his hands and laughed: “Congratulations, Branchmaster Xu, so young but promoted to branch master. This is unprecedented in history. I’ve already received Ancestor’s notification. Please follow me, Branch Master.”

Xu Yangyi was indifferent, following the youth towards the side

of the Core Formation palace. Yet he was none the wiser that at this moment, within the palace, Daomaster Ancientpine who said that he was tired wasn't resting. Instead, his head was leaned against his hand. He seemed to be deep in thought.

“Old coot.” In the desolate palace, a robust male voice suddenly echoed: “Your disciple is quite devious. There were many parts heard that seemed to be normal, but with our vision, it simply doesn't hold up to scrutiny.”

“And what of it?” Daomaster Ancientpine's complexion was unchanged: “Water that is too clear has no fish, those who are too probing have no disciples. The information he brought that we needed the most is already sufficient.”

“Yeah...” The robust male voice sighed and lamented: “This Dao Master never expected... that the Xiaoqing and Fahai of legend were actually trapped at the bottom of Danxia Temple... Such a massive secret realm was actually crafted between their strength... The level of this secret realm is hard to imagine.”

“For the time being, they have no way to escape. This is the best and most important news to the entire cultivation world.” Daomaster Ancientpine's brows deeply furrowed. “But that's not what I'm worried about.”

“Oh?”

“Fellow Daoist Titanspirit...” Ancientpine stood up, his expression grave. “Do you remember what Fellow Daoist Hiddenscent's prime arcane effort is called?”

The inside of the room was silent. In the next second, Daomaster Titanspirit's startled cry rang out without warning: “Azure Lotus... Immortal Art?!”

“That's right...” A wisp of cold light flickered through Daomaster Ancientpine's eyes. “And do you remember... on that day when Danxia Temple's heavenbound door opened, a burst of Core

Formation spiritual pressure passed out from the Forbidden Palace? Fellow Daoist Hiddenscent didn't know why her foundation received a great shock?"

"You're saying..." Daomaster Titanspirit coldly gasped and said incredulously: "Fellow Daoist Hiddenscent, she..."

"Since there is a Xiaoqing, why can there not be a Hiddenscent?" Ancientpine chuckled coldly: "Unexpected, unexpected... We consider ourselves to be at the peak of the Core Formation realm, but she is nothing more than an incarnation."

Silence. After ages, Daomaster Ancientpine sighed: "Merely the rash conjectures of an old man. Furthermore, even if Fellow Daoist Hiddenscent isn't human, how can we do what we want to? I think... I'm going to have to make a trip to the Cultivation Court."

"After all... the only person closest to that mysterious realm is the Upper President, the Chinese government's deathsworn."

Silence reigned again. A couple seconds later, Daomaster Titanspirit began to laugh: "Then what of your inexperienced disciple? You're putting him to roast on this fire? You know... if this place is conquered, it is enough to serve as a Core Formation master's Dao sanctum. According to what I know, there are already three first-rate clans preparing to come into the power of an apex clan. They've decided to set out here."

He chuckled: "With your disciple being such a fat, juicy sheep and such a great target to advance themselves and establish their might, why would they even have to find anyone else? Have you already moved out Longsu Province's storage? Hey, you old coot, if you think that you don't like your disciple, how about giving him to me? I like him a lot."

"Dream on." Daomaster Ancientpine's departing figure halted in step, and the crook of his mouth curved. "Move? Why would it have to be moved?"

“If he can’t defend his own wealth and property, then he doesn’t even have to think about settling in on this branch master’s position.”

1. “Honor and glory is only taken on horseback, thou is indeed a great hero.” This line appears to be altered from a poem from Tang Poet Cen Shen (715-770 CE)

Chapter 251: Treasures

Everything that had occurred within the Core Formation palace was an absolute mystery to Xu Yangyi. Even what he would do after reaching Foundation Establishment was unclear.

In China, there were less than 20,000 Foundation Establishment cultivators. There were even less who presumptuously guessed about what they wanted to do and how to accomplish it. All of this was unrealistic, like flowers in a mirror or the moon in the water, viewed through rose-tinted glasses.

However, Xu Yangyi clearly understood two things. The first would be his actions in the aftermath of this colossal qi reparation in Longsu Province. If he could take hold of an amazing cultivation paradise, such as in the heavenbound door's vicinity, then his cultivation some day, and as well as the Xingtian Legion's strength, would advance. There were a hundred benefits without a single harm.

Second, a hero needed three supporting pillars. These words weren't false. There was never such a recording of one who cultivated to Core Formation alone.

"Branchmaster Xu, we've arrived." A smiling voice pulled Xu Yangyi from his diverging thoughts. He stowed his gaze and discovered that he was already standing in an empty and spacious area.

This region was large, no less than several hundred meters all around. However, compared to the ten-odd-kilometer-long Core Formation palace, it was nothing but a mere corner. And yet, there was nothing here, only two twenty-meter-tall qilin statues. On left and right, they stood at both sides in the room.

"This is?" Xu Yangyi looked at the young cultivator doubtfully.

The young cultivator laughed and said softly: "Branchmaster Xu,

Ancestor has a secret command. What you're entering isn't the Featherwood Guard's treasury... but Ancestor's own treasury."

Xu Yangyi's gaze flickered. So that was saying that as a disciple of a Core Formation master, there were still some conveniences in the end?

His cultivation time was still short, and he didn't clearly understand the qi reparation's change regarding Longsu Province and the cultivation world. But such action by his master-ancestor was warning him... that the opponent this time was absolutely unlike those he had encountered in the past. They were rather difficult to provoke?

In his contemplations, the young cultivator formed seals with both of his hands and produced two talismans at his left and right. White and black, they flew straight into the mouths of the two stone qilins. Shortly afterwards, the two stone qilins seemed to come alive. In harmony, four eyes shot out white spiritual light. In the place they converged together, the lights twisted and winded around each other. Surprisingly, they formed a white qi formation that covered the surroundings with talismans a couple seconds later.

"Please, Branchmaster Xu." The young cultivator made an inviting gesture. "I'll have to mention in passing that Ancestor specifically commanded that you can take anything inside that will be useful in restoring your left arm as you please. All of this will be converted into achievement merit value. In the future, it will be settled lump sum."

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath and nodded, flashing into the formation. This was the world's apex, the treasury of a Core Formation ancestor!

Yes, he still had the Azure Snake Treasury located at the summit of Hunan Province's Tianzi Mountain and also the Goldbrick Treasury of Jinshan Temple's Fahai. Nonetheless, Xu Yangyi

believed that while the items of these two treasuries would admittedly empower him, it might only be an even more profound and long-lasting influence. But on the contrary, they were distant waters unable to quench a near thirst, unlike Ancestor Ancientpine's treasury,.

In an instant, splendid light flashed. As he opened his eyes, even he was unable to help himself from gasping. He no longer knew where this place was. He was standing atop a stone bridge in a room.

The bridge floor was smooth white marble. The sky was a towering round dome, carved with the seemingly lifelike images of ancient cultivators and flying immortals. Four small waterfalls flowed straight down from the mouths of four dragon-shaped holes. Xu Yangyi looked down. Below was a pond of jade water and lotus flowers. This flower, greatly related to Daoism, Buddhism, and even Confucianism, was blooming on the lake below in abundance.

His distance from the lake wasn't great. At most, it was estimated to be twenty or thirty meters. However, the focus of his attention at this moment wasn't the lake. This room didn't possess mortal lighting fixtures. Furthermore, it wasn't illuminated with spirit jades. Nevertheless, auspicious jewel light and treasure qi covered the sky! It caused each step to seem as if one was in an immortal realm!

In the hundred-meter-sized room, the stone bridge was only ten meters wide. On both sides of the stone bridge, there were four sculptures that were no less than several tens of meters tall! They were carved, jutting out from the lake water. Only by climbing over the bridge by ten-plus meters could the top of the sculptures be seen! Compared to them, a person was only a measly fraction!

One sculpture was a young cultivator wielding a sword. It had three heads and six arms. However, what drew one's attention wasn't his appearance but the jade chests revolving at the top of

his head and his hands. They were radiating treasure light all around!

There was a seal on each jade chest. From those seals, Xu Yangyi could sense a sliver of incredibly familiar Core Formation spiritual pressure.

“Each chest is personally sealed by Master-Ancestor...” Xu Yangyi inhaled heavily, not leaving immediately to take one. Instead, he looked at the other three statues.

One sculpture was a soaring female cultivator. One sculpture was a drunk old man. The last was a young man with a scholar’s appearance. Without exception, all of them carried nine jade chests.

“Nine is counted as the apex?” Xu Yangyi restrained the excitement in his heart and laughed: “Master-Ancestor, it seems that you’re a person who abides by the ancient customs, eh.”

In any case, the light of his eyes still didn’t stop! Although these jade chests were presently emitting brilliant rays, the radiance within this room didn’t originate from them! Rather... it came from the other side of the bridge’s end!

Over yonder was an incredibly resplendent treasure light! A treasure light that caused Xu Yangyi to feel his heartbeat stop for a moment as he gazed upon it. A magnificence that concealed everything! This was the glimmering origin that dazzlingly illuminated the entire treasury!

Without any hesitation, Xu Yangyi took a stride forward.

Clear... Following this closing of distance, it became clearer and clearer. In not much time, Xu Yangyi had already seen it clearly. In that place, there was a two-meter-tall statue of [Guanyin](#) erected!

At the statue’s side, there was no jade chest floating but rather a gorgeous five-colored stone that was clasped between Guanyin’s hands. It radiated an extremely horrific qi, bobbing up and down

in the air!

“This is...” Xu Yangyi stood in front, almost growing drunk on this sensation. Such an incredibly pure qi cleansed him to the extent that he nearly moaned. And yet this fist-sized stone was bound to be an extremely mystical treasure!

After his mind trembled for several seconds, he took a deep breath and collected his gaze. The item that Daomaster Ancientpine wanted him to pick was in no way this item. Otherwise, Xu Yangyi was afraid that he would be slapped when he came out.

“One has to act tactfully.” Xu Yangyi laughed and took back his gaze without the slightest reluctance, yet it fell on the floor. He then discovered that someone had used their finger to carve a character in the floor, leaving behind spiritual force. Now sensing Xu Yangyi’s spiritual force, the character responded and radiated purple light like a lamp.

“This item’s name and efficacy is unknown... but it contains a terribly majestic demonic force....” Xu Yangyi read this and raised a brow. He observed the stone in astonishment.

Demonic force? In other words... this... was possibly some demon egg?

“It still has not hatched. As for the height of its realm, This Dao Master’s spiritual sense almost collapsed when I probed it. I suspect that it is a pureblood demon. I henceforth seal it here.”

A pureblood demon!

Xu Yangyi grinned wide, exposing his teeth. Pureblood demons... had another name.

Ancient Greater Demons!

Such as Xiaoqing. A 3600-year-old azure carp. Yes, she herself was only an azure carp but through endless cultivation, she had transformed into a Kun Peng! This was the power of an ancient

pureblood demon!

In ancient times, it was said that even innate souls existed, the theory of a [post-celestial soul](#). There was also the theory of a spirit root and the theory of variation spirit roots. However, now in the End of Days, traces of these concepts had long since vanished.

This wasn't an object that he could control... Xu Yangyi sighed in his heart. Turning his gaze, he looked towards the other items. He began looking at the first statue. With a gentle wave of his hand, the first jade chest flew into his hand.

The jade chest was a meter long. The top was sealed all over with symbols. Under Xu Yangyi's careful observations, he sighed again and again with emotion.

"The Shadow Manifestation Secret Art..." Xu Yangyi deeply carressed and gently stroked the chest a few times and placed it back. "Ancestor Ancientpine's prime secret art... To the north and south of the Yangtze River, his martial prowess resonated throughout all of China..."

This wasn't what he needed. Since he had chosen the Eternal Alchemy Canon, switching one's prime arcane effort midway was a cultivator's great dread.

Xu Yangyi hesitated over the second chest for a long time.

Divine ability! The Shadowmaker Technique!

All cultivator's magiks was simply a general term. To divide arcane efforts and divine abilities in detail, an arcane effort was the cultivation foundation, the prime arcane effort. Once confirmed, it was extremely difficult to change. But divine abilities were split into three kinds: offensive, defensive, and supplementary. A complete magik was sure to have many paired divine abilities of a prime arcane effort. For example, Xu Yangyi had always held an extraordinary yearning for the disaster-warding Ten Thousand Shadows Heavenly Punishment.

At the same time, there were still even more paired divine abilities that weren't divine abilities of a prime arcane effort. It was this reason that greatly stirred his heart.

“Forget it.” Gritting his teeth, he still put the chest back in its original position.

“The Ten Thousand Shadows Heavenly Punishment's destructive power is absolute, but it's a divine ability that's always paired with the Shadow Manifestation Secret Art. Moreover...” He laughed and mumbled: “the Nine Glorious Stars Descent that I have isn't worse than the Ten Thousand Shadows Heavenly Punishment at all!”

This divine ability could draw forth a worldly anomaly! Although it was unknown if he could fully wield its outstandingness in the Qi Condensation realm, such a divine ability wasn't something Core Formation could possess! Wei Zhongxian had relied on Celestial Master Zhang's blessing to use it. And who was Celestial Master Zhang?

A contemporary sect master from among the three supreme sects of Buddhism, Daoism, and Confucianism! If half-immortals existed, then he was a half-immortal!

Furthermore... the Heavenly Opening Six Erosions was merely the first move of the Nine Glorious Stars Descent! As he looked at the jade chests, each one caused him to feel a sudden rush of excitement in his heart.

He saw a magik treasure that could be used at initial-stage Foundation Establishment. It was capable of forcibly raising one's realm by two minor boundaries! It was simply a peerless edge able to jump ranks to slay foes! It was also unknown from where his master-ancestor gained it. In all likelihood, Ancientpine had relied on this to bring his name to such grandness.

Xu Yangyi also saw a petal. It seemed ordinary, but the explanation on it almost caused him to immediately take it.

Nine Turns Resurrection Flower, capable of obstructing a single death! If nine identical petals were collected... it could restore the qi sea!

Xu Yangyi even saw a medicinal pill! A true medicinal pill!

“This... is an Origin Pill!” Studying the numerous and densely packed pill marks, Xu Yangyi coldly gasped. He absolutely hadn’t expected that Ancestor Ancientpine was actually harboring a medicinal pill! And this medicinal pill was unexpectedly the only jade chest without any explanation!

He looked at the pill over and over, wishing that he could take it and run off each time. In the end, he forcibly calmed himself once more.

This treasury was too precious... If any one of these items were let go, they would smash heads! He couldn’t help but imagine how rich the Tianzi Mountain and Jinshan Temple treasuries that belonged to two eternal greater demons should’ve been!

In his ruminations, his gaze fell on the final jade chest. With a glance, his gaze suddenly began to scorch. This item... He quickly recalled the meaningful expression that Ancestor Ancientpine had made back then for him to “carefully choose”.

“It’s you...” Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply. Without a moment’s hesitation, he deposited the jade chest into his storage ring. “This... is the great gift that Master-Ancestor prepared for me!”

1. Guanyin is known as the Bodhisattva of Compassion or Goddess of Mercy. Her full name (Guanshiyin) means “One Who Perceives the Sounds of the World”

2. Post-celestial soul. What I want to specifically point to is the concept of Post-celestial. If you’ve read a decent amount of xianxia novels at this point, you should be familiar with it as the “Houtian Realm”. The idea of Xiantian to Houtian (pre-celestial to post-celestial) in classical Daoist alchemy is a state of change, Yang to

Yin. As indicative of the terms Xiantian to Houtian, before and after the cosmos within one's body.

Chapter 252: Mountain-Protector Grand Array

As Xu Yangyi stepped out of the formation, the young cultivator laughed: “Has Branchmaster Xu chosen well?”

“Yes.” Xu Yangyi licked his lips. It appeared that Daomaster Ancientpine wasn’t a total caretaker. Although this open backdoor wasn’t a direct action, it absolutely gave him the adrenaline shot to firmly stand and dig his feet!

[The Taiyi Everlasting Array!](#)

This formation’s name couldn’t be considered too mystical, and its effect couldn’t be thought of as extremely amazing. However, set in this place, this item was the most suited to Xu Yangyi! It far surpassed all the other treasures!

Why would a Qi Condensation formation appear here?

No more no less, late-stage Qi Condensation was capable of using it. In Foundation Establishment, there were even better formations, but in the Qi Condensation realm, its defensive function could be said to be top-notch!

A Qi Condensation formation appearing in a Core Formation master’s treasury... Apart from being specifically placed here, there was no other explanation!

“It looks like Master-Ancessor still isn’t too willing to go all in and nurture me, eh...” Xu Yangyi grinned and laughed, stroking his storage ring. His mood was rather cheery.

Yes, this formation couldn’t be considered some secret treasure, but... it was a grand mountain-protector array!

And what was the meaning of a grand mountain-protector array?

Any sect or apex power would be outfitted with a grand mountain-protector array. As to how complicated it was to craft

such a formation, even the lowest mountain-protector array necessitated the cooperation of several grand artificers and grand talismancers. The expense of heavenly treasures was incalculable. This included various functions like identity screening, smart activation and shutdown, reflexive chain-style offense, reflexive defense, and qi linking. Furthermore... according to the formation's strength, divine abilities, offensive magik artifacts, and defensive magik artifacts could be added. But most important was the room left to upgrade the formation!

For the most part, this kind of formation was prepared for a sect or power. From Qi Condensation to Foundation Establishment, it possessed everything. But as for its price...

The market value of a complete mountain-protector array in the Qi Condensation realm was 50,000 middle-grade spirit stones!

Despite the wealth that Xu Yangyi's last auction had brought rolling in, he only had enough to buy two parts! Moreover, the workmanship couldn't even be considered the highest! If an array came forth by the hand of a grand master...

There was a possibility that the price could even rocket up to one million! This was the difference between an individual's wealth and a sect's wealth, and also the reason that Xu Yangyi needed to possess his own power! Once the Eternal Alchemy Canon was completely activated in Foundation Establishment, it truly would be too late for him to regret when the time came to start burning spirit stones, but he didn't have enough.

He firmly remembered the phrase in the text, "one nation to nurture one person". In all likelihood, these words were absolutely not false.

"This really is a generous gift..." His heart was somewhat burning in excitement. Immediately, his expression became grave. "But I can see at least three levels of meaning from this mountain-protector grand array."

“The first is that I’m not familiar with qi reparations. Based on my qualifications and experience, it still isn’t enough to be completely aware of this subject. Master-Ancestor is reminding me to investigate this right away. In addition, this business is very important to the entire cultivation world.”

Xu Yangyi clicked his tongue. The him of those days was a martial tyrant. Knowing about these things... was too hard for him.

“Second... is that Master-Ancestor is already sure... that there are clans who want to station themselves in Longsu Province. And... they’re certainly not small clans. In that case, there’s no question that Longsu Province’s cultivation powers are going to be shuffled again. CSIB, Heavens Law, Featherwood Guard, and Bountiful Treasures Pavilion... Nobody dares to act against the four great powers per se, but there’s a prerequisite to that...”

He took a deep breath: “The overseer HAS to be a Foundation Establishment Senior!”

“While I’m keeping watch in the Qi Condensation realm, there’s no doubt that all the powers are looking at me with red eyes like I’m a pushover. The Cultivation Court doesn’t care at all about how human-demon disputes are handled. Those A-rank Foundation Establishment legions probably won’t listen to my orders. No...” He paused: “they definitely won’t listen to my orders.”

“It can be assumed that my age compared to theirs is too young. I’m still a cultivator with a Qi Condensation cultivation acting as branch master, and I’m not going to cuss them out... Master-Ancestor, you’ve really given me a big problem, eh.”

Xu Yangyi collected his gaze. This time, the mountain-protector grand array held enough leeway to display. In a regional reshuffling, he had to lay down a future foundation lasting for several decades. Bloody combat absolutely wouldn’t be rare. Not a

single one of those who were coming were easy marks.

“Third...” He laughed: “Master-Ancestor’s intention is to not have Foundation Establishment cultivators participate? Otherwise, why wouldn’t he give me a Foundation Establishment grand formation?” His eyes slightly flickered: “I get it...”

At some unknown time amidst his deep ponderings, Xu Yangyi had already left the grand hall. Just as he walked to the Core Formation palace’s entrance, he saw an unexpected person.

“Senior apprentice-brother.” Quick to act, Xu Yangyi slightly bowed: “Junior brother pays respects to senior brother.”

“Junior brother, you’re too polite. This Throne doesn’t care too much about these things.” Jadesun laughed, looking at Xu Yangyi somewhat complicatedly. Pausing for a quite a while, he laughed: “Junior brother, the mountain rains wish to come. Flood-control measures must first be made.”

“Junior brother understands.” Xu Yangyi laughed and answered.

“Really?” Jadesun didn’t depart. Instead, he smiled as he waved at Xu Yangyi. He and Xu Yangyi walked together to the front of a window.

“Take a look at this Longsu Province...” Jadesun looked down below with some emotion. “Such abundant qi... In no less than fifty years, this place might become a heavenly paradise of legend. Hehe... you still shouldn’t know the meaning of a heavenly paradise, yes? No matter. If you step into Foundation Establishment, you will naturally come to know. As long as you remember now, you’ll have a hundred-year foundation if you can strike out a territory here.”

Xu Yangyi nodded and said nothing.

“But, you know, everyone knows. Little junior brother, are you aware how many first-rate clans are short of one breath to rising to an apex power?” He wore a smile on his face as he studied Xu

Yangyi, raising four fingers: “Four clans. Altogether, there are four first-rate clans. It just so happens that two are demons and two are humans.”

“Faced with such great enticement, they are incapable of not acting. Right now...” He eyed Xu Yangyi with seemingly deep meaning: “Whoever is seated on this branch master’s position is like being placed on a wood charcoal basin. Not only the Featherwood Guard, but the CSIB and the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion is also the same.”

Jadesun looked at the sky and changed topics: “I’ve heard Master-Ancestor speak of some minor news. The four great powers will investigate this place for half a year. This concerns the level of qi density and regeneration and the level of qi savings. I do not understand these things...”

Xu Yangyi’s gaze shone. These words were undoubtedly for him. He still had half a year of time to prepare!

He wanted to cup his hands to express his respects but discovered that he his left arm had long since been done away with. He laughed wryly: “Thank you, senior brother.”

“What are you thanking for me?” Jadesun smiled and shook his head. His figure gradually turned fuzzy. “Some words aren’t to be said to anyone... I’m just investing, right...”

Jadesun left, and Xu Yangyi’s gaze looked to the blue sky, watching the free clouds on the horizon and the distant, vast Earth.

“Half a year, huh...” After ages, he retrieved his gaze. From longing for the future, he became firm and resolute. “I, Xu Yangyi, have never been afraid of a challenge!”

“If you want me to start a war, I’ll straight up give you a war of cultivators. As long as no Foundation Establishment cultivators participate, what do I even have to be afraid since I’ve tempered

myself through Danxia Temple?”

Ten minutes later, Xu Yangyi said his goodbyes and left the Core Formation palace.

“Master-Ancestor.” Jadesun’s vision seemed as if it could penetrate the clouds. He studied Xu Yangyi, who was under his protective magiks and flying down below, and turned his head: “It appears that junior brother doesn’t understand what the qi reparation represents. Do you think we should...”

So long as Daomaster Ancientpine said the word, none would dare act against Xu Yangyi!

“Should what?” Daomaster Ancientpine was presently holding a cup of tea. He said somewhat spellbound: “This Dao Master has already declared back then that whoever raises their hand against my disciple, I will leave neither their chickens nor dogs behind.”

“But...” Jadesun gritted his teeth and said: “Disciple thinks seventeenth junior brother has real potential. Your words in those circumstances back then was to only protect, not a specific declaration. In this following rearrangement process, will you shelter him...”

“Why would I want to say that?” Daomaster Ancientpine raised his head and looked at the ceiling. “These words weren’t to disallow them from acting against seventeenth disciple but rather warn them that they could. However, they cannot dispatch cultivators that exceed his realm.”

He turned his head and looked at Jadesun: “Originally, I wanted you to act for your seventeenth junior brother, against no less than ten-odd people. Nonetheless, only the Ming Clan’s Foundation Establishment cultivator was among them. If they still don’t understand the meaning of this finger of mine... then I don’t mind having them realize a bit more.”

“Master-Ancestor’s foresight stands tall and sees far.”

“What? You think me to be a cruel master?” Ancientpine laughed but suddenly sighed gently: “It’s not just you. Sometimes... I think I am cruel...”

“But if you want to raise a true Core Formation seed, one has no choice but to rear venomous Gu.” Ancientpine stood up and said with unbounded haughtiness: “Any Core Formation Dao Master was a King of Venoms back then!”

“If one lacks the skill, the wisdom, and the determination to kill their way out from a horde of Gu, what is there to even discuss about the Grand Dao of Core Formation?” He glanced at Jadesun. “Could it be that you think that the tempering I give him... surpasses the scope of his ability?”

Not waiting for Jadesun to reply, he laughed: “No, it doesn’t surpass him... only just now... did he tread the line of life and death... He didn’t rely on luck to leave Danxia Temple. I still want to see... if it really wasn’t luck. In that case, a step to the left leads to survival. A step to the right...” He said indifferently: “just when his fate is poor, yes...”

Jadesun nodded respectfully and said softly: “But... Master-Ancestor, seventeenth disciple still doesn’t know what he’s facing this time... These aren’t geniuses fighting alone... These are the true cultivation lineages. I fear that he killed many lineage disciples in Danxia Temple and looks down on these lineages...”

“If that’s how it is, why the hell is still alive?” Daomaster Ancientpine was unstirred by billowing waves. “Cultivation is like walking on thin ice. One victory against the famous cultivation lineages, and vigilance is lost? As the steel blade reaches the neck, does one think of the legends of these lineages?”

Ancientpine sneered: “If such a fool is nurtured as a seed, it’ll cause those old fellow ‘Inside’ to just laugh their heads off.”

Jadesun nodded, yet suddenly realized something. Without warning, he lifted his head and stole a glance, gasping in shock:

“M-Master-Ancestor! Y-You’re saying...”

“That’s right.” Ancientpine sipped a mouthful of tea, his expression motionless: “After he reaches Foundation Establishment, I will personally send him there. The ‘Inside’ has already urged the ‘Outside’ to bring seeds in many, many times. Recently in these past several decades, that place... is become increasingly restless... Jadesun...”

His voice softened by a fraction: “Don’t blame me for not sending you in. Your talents are quite good, but... it truly isn’t talent enough to go there.”

“Sunnihilator, Lumenpath, Skydragon, Zen-Master Wisdom, [Flowerbright](#), and [Willowruin](#), these juniors that left countless legends in the cultivation world back then... have the qualifications to be there. You think... that you can arm wrestle with any one of them? The fastest Foundation Establishment Sunnihilator? Or Sorceress Flowerbright who can wipe out a city alone? Or Grandmaster Willowruin, the youngest in history to cultivate two crafts?”

“After all... that place is the ultimate secret why we still have heavenly treasures to struggle for at death’s door in the End of Days, and also the very first battle line...”

1. 太乙无极阵. I am pretty sure I got this right. Taiyi is the name of a “zhenren” named Taiyi Zhenren. Said to be a reincarnation of the first emperor of the Shang dynasty. The name Taiyi itself means Highest Yi, with yi being the second of the ten Heavenly Stems. Yi is the “primordial unity between Yin and Yang”.

2. Sometimes you get some names that are just straight up, but other other titles contain a deeper meaning. I would like to draw attention to the names Flowerbright and Willowruin. First of all, these are most likely the titles belonging to women. Flowerbright (花解语) is a play on a phrase that originates during the Tang dynasty. It is often meant to describe a woman who is either more

beautiful than a flower or extremely intelligent. Willowruin (柳倾城) was a bit harder to translate, but also the same idea as Flowerbright. A woman who is so beautiful that her beauty can topple cities. These names are strange to begin with, so I might be wrong and these aren't titles but rather names.

Chapter 253: The Cultivation Worlds Shock

The cultivation world was hiding a bomb. Nine people had survived to leave from an eternally secret land and brought back information from this forbidden realm. No one spoke of this news. This was because everyone clearly understood that its explosion was only a question of time.

However, none had expected who the first would be to cause this bomb to explode throughout the cultivation world. It wasn't Xu Yangyi and it wasn't Daomaster Ancientpine. On the contrary, it was Chinacultivation.com!

The super news of a lifetime! Barely a day after the heavenbound door's collapse, Chinacultivation was the first to tear open this cover.

Click... Click... A slender hand was shaking over a mouse. An index finger nervously tapped the mouse button.

The hand's owner was a youth with dyed red hair. He was completely dumbfounded, looking at his computer screen. His clan was a small clan, but even if it was smaller, he had still heard about the awesome and terrible name of Longsu's Danxia Temple Colonnades. How many cultivators with realms even higher than his own clan elders had fallen inside? Today... someone had actually left?!

One who was even in the Qi Condensation realm like him?

It seemed... as if the image of a descending god had appeared before his eyes. A tall and lofty deity fallen to the mortal realm. Yet the person who had brought this god's demise was a Qi Condensation cultivator like him!

"Xiao Long." At this time, the door was gently pushed open. A middle-aged woman wearing a qipao walked in with a cup of pill elixir. "Dye your hair back, okay? We're cultivators, not mortals.

The clan elder didn't say anything to you, there's no need for you to get upset and act rashly... He... He's your father in any case... W-What are you doing?!"

Before her voice even fell, the middle-aged woman was storming with anger! She had come in to check up on her son that she was worried about, but unexpectedly, he wasn't reflecting upon himself at all! Instead, he was on the internet!

"Do you know what the heck repentance is!" Anger rose up in the middle-aged woman's heart. She stepped forward and grabbed the youth's mouse, preparing to tear it away from his hand. She said angrily: "All day long, you don't know how to cultivation, all you know how to do is be on the internet! What's the point of these mortal things..."

Xiao Long seemed not be listening in the slightest, looking at his computer sluggishly. The middle-aged woman brushed an eye over the screen unintentionally and customarily berated him: "You're obsessed with this computer! Do you think you're an ordinary person? You..."

She suddenly choked.

No... that row of large characters just now... appeared to be...

All the strength in her hand disappeared. She simply didn't have the effort to rebuke her son. Instead, she turned her head, creaking like a robot, and looked at the screen in astonishment.

It seemed... that for the first time in all eternity... Danxia Temple had been broken through?

No, impossible... This was clickbait...

The sound in the room continued to strangely quiet down. Along with Xiao Long, the middle-aged woman began to read the web page together. Not long after, her complexion became redder and redder, and her hand began to faintly tremble.

All of a sudden, she seized the mouse in her son's hand and

started to read!

It was true... It was true... It was actually true! There really were people who had come out from Danxia Temple! Nine people!

Row by row, character by character, she read for no less than half an hour. Xiao Long was also at the side, reading the report with his eyes wide and tongue tied.

“My god...” Half an hour later, the middle-aged woman said shakily: “This... could be the appearance of a second Ancestor Floatingcloud...”

At a villa in the Capital, an old man was laying down on a recliner in satisfaction. A woman in a qipao who was approximately in her early twenties was gently massaging his head.

The inside of the villa was a tranquil bamboo forest. The old man’s recliner was at the side of an ancient-styled table and a [Purple Sand teapot](#) was arranged on it. Blue birds chirped in the forest and bamboo leaves fell down occasionally. Things appeared incomparably serene.

The old man’s brows smoothed. He was peacefully enjoying everything. All of a sudden, his brows furrowed because an exceptionally hurried sound was trampling on bamboo leaves and rushing towards him with great speed!

“Clan Elder! Clan Elder! No good! Something big has happened! Something big has happened in the cultivation world!!!” A middle-aged man, drenched in sweat, charged over and pulled away the woman’s hands, placing an iPad in front of the old man: “Clan Elder! Hurry up and look!”

“What’s the matter?” The clan elder knitted his brows in annoyance. He had ordinarily told his son many times to calm down; how could he still be so anxious?

But just as his gaze scanned the iPad, he immediately stood up with a swoosh! Both of his eyes saucered and he looked at the iPad

in front of him incredulously. He promptly took it, his hands and feet in a fit of confusion, yet he discovered that he wasn't familiar with how to use it at all!

“What the heck are you still staring at!!!” He turned his head and angrily reprimanded the man: “Are you just going to keep on locking and not help me?!”

The man's loss of manners couldn't be blamed because the five large characters on Chinacultivation.com's front page caused him to completely lose his cool!

Danxia Temple was broken through!

“Danxia Temple was broken through!!!” “People have come out alive from Danxia Temple!!!”

By seven or eight o'clock in the morning, this news had spread to all of China! The terrible names of the Eight Great Deadlands were all written in textbooks, in all literature! The cultivation net mentioned them over and over! They were the red dots marked on every major clan's map!

A hundred years... several centuries... nearly a millennium, never were there records that people had come out alive! However, today there were!

“What are you saying?!” In Nantong Province, Tianzhu Mountain was a national tourism district famous for its scenery. At this moment, in a quiet valley within thick clouds that mankind was unable to enter in Tianzhu Mountain's most famous scenic “Absolute Beauty Ravine”, a middle-aged man suddenly opened his eyes that had been closed for many years. He looked at the floating paper crane in front of him in shock.

“Clan Elder! Come out of seclusion and take a look! Really! This is true! Danxia Temple's been broken through! One of the Eight Great Deadlands has been reported as defeated!!! The cultivation net has blown up right now!!!”

Before this voice even fell, the man's figure was no longer seen.

On this day, all of China's cultivation world—so long as one was cultivator who was on the internet—had been stirred into a frenzy! As for those not online, they were all notified by their friends on the phone of this major news!

As for Chinacultivation.com's central headquarters, the technology department was presently crowded with people. The entire tech staff was sweating up a storm, clicking and clacking as they typed. Today, Chinacultivation.com welcomed their highest summit in the past several decades! There had been a couple server restarts! All of China's old cultivators that didn't know how to access the cultivation net seemed to come alive! Hundreds of thousands of people were swarming and suffocating their web page! Heaven knows that the cultivation net's ordinary web hits were at most tens of thousands!

And this web page was all discussion and question threads. So long as the poster had a little fame, almost each post was followed by at least several hundred to a thousand comments!

Congratulations to my great Chinese cultivation world!!! How many years! The first deadland has finally been captured!!! - Peaceful Child.

Danxia Temple! This is Danxia Temple! Starting right from my fucking sensibilities! I've been warned countless times of this name!!! Now someone has actually broken through it! A Qi Condensation cultivator at that! This is [frickin](#)' shocking!!! - Windcloud

One big step for the Xingtian Legion, an even bigger step for the Cultivation World!—Discuss the effect brought by the first deadland being captured. - CSIB Special Commentator Lofty.

There was a huge pile of such junk threads. The significance of Danxia Temple's capture didn't lay in whether someone could come out alive, but rather someone had finally pried open this

door of one of the Eight Great Deadlands that caused the entire cultivation world to turn pale at their mention! He, this young cultivator, told everyone that a deadland wasn't truly a place of certain no-return!

This... would spur a horrific tempest! A powerful adrenaline shock administered to the cultivation world! It was a mystery as to how many people would be moved because of this! As for its source... there was only one!

Almost a million Qi Condensation cultivators constructed the cultivation world's base. Almost 20,000 Foundation Establishment built the core and ten-odd Core Formation ancestors was the focus of everyone's gazes! A place yearned for in the dreams of all cultivators cast away from mortals!

The last person to leave a deadland was Ancestor Floatingcloud. However, he couldn't be said to have captured it and really didn't kill his way in throughout his journey. Instead, under the coincidence of destiny, he had entered the Dragon Hole's core. Moreover, he held the great fortune and blessing to leave without the slightest hair of an injury. How could such a living legend, a great living destiny, not cause the hearts of all cultivators to gallop and dream!

Scarlet characters edged with gold. Because of this news, the front page of Chinacultivation.com, which hadn't changed for almost five years, had finally switched layout! On top were the red characters of Chinacultivation.com that were bordered with gold. Below to the left was a bright headline: The Xingtian Legion's Commander Xu Yangyi Captures Danxia Temple With His Legion! The Cultivation World's Indiana Jones!

The bottom right was white and black without anything else. There was only a line of characters: Memorial Service for the 1098 Cultivators who Devoted Their Lives to Breaking Through Danxia Temple.

Below, there was an additional line of small characters: Although They Didn't See the Conclusion, This is the Journey They Used Their Lives to Write.

The entire cultivation net had exploded! Completely and thoroughly exploded!!!

In a flash, the official stickied thread for "One of the Eight Great Deadlands, Danxia Temple, has been Broken Through" stacked up like a skyscraper with almost ten thousand stories!

This is too thrilling... This is a breakthrough! A real breakthrough! One of the Eight Great Deadlands! Entered from head to tail! Awesome, this is awesome!

...The livyatan is one of the ancient whale primogenitors. It hasn't existed in the world for millions and millions of years. Its strength at late-stage Qi Condensation is super tyrannical... Fuck me... Looking at this, I only regret why I didn't enter the heavenbound door back then!

...The Yellow Springs path, those who turn back die. Two of the Xingtian Legion's legionnaires lost their lives here... A triple-layered illusion, drawing human desire layer after layer... Is this true? Is there really such a terrible place?

[Upstairs](#), I dare not speak about the scenes in this, but Longsu Province's blockade has already been extended for twenty days. I'm a Longsu Province cultivator. For these twenty days, there's been an endless image of a giant Peng in the sky. Don't tell me you guys can't see it from other places?

Danxia Temple was defeated, but it wasn't Danxia Temple that had been captured. Instead, it the entire cultivation world's questing heart towards destiny and opportunity! This heart was totally set aflame!

These words and threads seemed ordinary but were in fact startling and shocking characters. The circumstances of seeking

life amidst everyone's deaths at Danxia temple's bottom was vivid and lifelike, a painted scroll surging with majestic grandeur. Following this post's submission that revealed the true nature of events, it seemed to cause everyone to see each team's struggle in the deadland.

Regardless of the Buddha Sect, Dao Sect, several apex lineages, or even the low-level first-rate clans, they had all used their lives to write this journey.

Until ultimately, a photo's release brought extreme shock to all the post readers!

"Huff..." In a dazzling conference room of gold and jade in Shanghai, there were three old men with heads full of white hair. They were wearing bathrobes and reclining on comfy lounge chairs, looking at the computer in front of them. They simultaneously lost their voices.

"This... Is this real or fake...?"

"I've heard that mortals have a technique that can put photos together. It shouldn't be fake, right..."

It was a gigantic fish!

It was unknown who had used the Shadow Preservation divine ability to record this in a jade slip. At this moment, all the post readers were shocked speechless.

In front of everyone was an infinite azure scale! Contrasted with a person, it seemed like the comparison of a great tree and a large ant!

Its head was unseen and furthermore so was its limit. This beast only gave one a kind of feeling!

Large! Extremely large!

1. Purple Sand teapot is a specific kind of teapot made with what is called Purple Sand/Clay. They are also known as "Yixing clay

teapots”.

2. Note here for “fucking”. In the text, the author uses the abbreviation of “TMD” aka “Ta Ma De” (他妈的) literally “his mother”. Curses in China are censored, so people find interesting ways to get around them.

3. I may have mentioned this in the past “Chinacultivation.com comment sections”, but “Upstairs” is a slang abbreviation for LS (楼上).

Chapter 254: The Passion of Exploration

My god... What the hell is this realm?! Heavens... I dare not believe this at all!!! No wonder, no wonder that nobody ever survived the bottom of Danxia Temple!

The Eight Great Deadlands, truly deserving to be called the Eight Great Deadlands! I keep on looking forward to the cultivation world's vastness more and more!

This commander defies the heavens! Friggin' awesome! Late-stage Qi Condensation! He was actually able to come out with so many people!

Isn't this unlikely? How is this the narration tone of the Xingtian Legion's Commander? Wouldn't there be other things that they want to keep secret?

Hehe, upstairs, are you crazy? If there's a problem, it's the afternoon right now. Why isn't a single clan talking about the seven a.m post?

That's right! This is tacit approval! Haha, I've always been Yangyu's fan!

However, among these threads, there was one person's post who was followed by countless messages!

This cultivation world is large, very large. Fellow Daoists, I hope we can still make an effort together. A thousand entered Danxia Temple, and young friend Xu in particular came out alive with his team. [I'll drink to that.](#)

These words were simple and also brief. Placed in the boundless posting space, they were completely inconspicuous. The poster ID was an extremely rare sight. The poster's rank wasn't high, but his name was called...

Daomaster Cloudcrane!!!

If this name appeared, perhaps a good many people would go mad with posting. So what? If you want to advance to Core Formation, go crazy. That wasn't to further mention that Daomaster Cloudcrane was claimed to be the best teacher and educator. It was no exaggeration to say that he fit the phrase "peaches and plums throughout the world"; he had many students in many places! However!

This name of "Daomaster Cloudcrane" didn't even have a portrait above it. There was also a platinum frame. Inside were four characters that caused all cultivators to go wild!

Five Phases Cardinal Extreme! Five Phases Cardinal Extreme, Ancestor Cloudcrane!

This was the real-deal Ancestor Cloudcrane!!!

Cloudcrane was congratulating Danxia Temple's defeat! Among the Eight Great Deadlands, from this day onwards, Danxia Temple could finally turn orange in color! No longer was it the bright red of the past!

Those who are alive, do not enter! Where there is entry, there is no exit!

I kowtow to Ancestor!

I pay respects, Dao Master... Junior is so excited right now that I can't even talk...

I get to admire a Dao Master up close... Heavens... Such an unexpected opportunity! I got to actually see Ancestor Cloudcrane post!

This is too unbelievable! I bet that today is the most exciting day that I've been online!

At four in the afternoon, Ancestor Cloudcrane had sent out word. At six in the afternoon, not a single clan called into question this post. At six-thirty, the forum moderator Immortal Visitor Amidst Clouds turned this post gold in color!

“This is?!” A young cultivator who had just start drawing qi into his body was greatly startled when he saw the color of this post.

For ages, he had already browsed and lurked Chinacultivation.com. In total, there were only fifty posts with this color. This represented a permanent sticky! Forever shrined in essence! The site absolutely couldn't use any method to tamper with its content!

In these fifty posts, there was Daomaster Skybearer's "The Discussion of the Possibility of a Perfect Foundation Establishment in the End of Days with the Qi Condensation Base". There was Ancestor Ancientpine's "Research and Insight of Unorthodox Divine Abilities." There was Grandmaster Gao Muya's "Anyone Can Become an Artificer". There was also the Heavens Law Research Institute's "The Refute of the End of Day's Realm Stagnation and Conjecture" and so on!

Nonetheless, absolutely none of them were posts under the Core Formation cultivator or apex power level!!! This was the first, and furthermore the introduction of cultivation! A Qi Condensation realm post!

In addition, the contents weren't the slightest bit inferior to all the previous discussion posts! This was one bomb of a thing! This told all cultivators that the Eight Great Deadlands weren't truly paths of certain death!

There wasn't one objection. Regarding this post's permanent sticky and eternal splendor, no one expressed an objection.

And yet, this still wasn't the most amazing thing! The most amazing... was that this post immediately enabled the [reward function](#) afterwards!

This was because: Branchmaster Xu lost his left arm in this journey. As everyone knows, the amount of heavenly treasures needed to restore a left arm is hard to calculate. Presently, there is only one known method, and that is to find a grand artificer to

have something custom made. For this hero who was the first to challenge Danxia Temple—please allow me to call him a hero. At the very least today, he is suited to this title—crowdfunding will be conducted using the site's name.

Thanks to him, who not only walked out from Danxia Temple, he has also spurred the cultivation world's determination to explore secret realms!

These words seemed to be said seriously, but Xu Yangyi was unquestionably worthy!

This was because... as long as any section of Chinacultivation.com or the black market was now opened, one would discover that after this post was finally confirmed, permanently stickied, and eternally gilded, the mission and business sections were completely flooded with posts!!!

In the mission section: preparing to war against the Sixteen Lesser Deadlands! Mingshui Province's Meng Clan is recruiting! As long as you have the great ambition to dare to explore! As long as your realm is at or below Foundation Establishment! We invite you to join the Meng Clan's secret realm squadron!

Guifang's Su Clan is recruiting cultivators with experience in exploration to be retainers. The pay is fifty medium-grade spirit stones per month. All secret realm gains are split fifty-fifty. The Su Clan will prepare all of your support!

Dongshan Province's Liu Clan is awaiting your membership to our special exploration team! We are preparing to war against Dongting's underwater Paradiso Lesser Deadland!

And in the black market section, everything was a monotone shade...

Does anyone know what Commander Xu brought out from inside? This Throne is offering a bounty of 500 medium-grade spirit stones!

If someone can help our company set up a line to Commander Xu within three days, our company will aid them with 20% of their pill elixirs before Core Formation!

If someone can provide detailed information on the goods that Commander Xu brought out, This Throne is offering a bounty of 300 spirit stones!

Yes... the post simply couldn't talk about what Xu Yangyi took out. However, this caused imaginations to roam!

Back in those days, there was Ancestor Floatingcloud. Today, there was a Xu Yangyi. If the cultivation world's big and small companies weren't anxious, then that was absurd!

Xu Yangyi had lead a majority of the Xingtian Legion out and rescued two people. This action completely ignited the cultivation world's wind of exploration!

This wasn't the exploration of secret realms, but rather the exploration of deadlands! However, no one was currently paying attention to these two pages. This was because after Chinacultivation.com enabled reward privileges for the "Danxia Temple has been Broken Through!" post, a tide of rewards attracted everyone's attention in a flash!

The first reward was Immortal Visitor Amidst Clouds, a hundred medium-grade spirit stones.

The second was a new registered ID... God Ming Sister Nine! Her reward... was 8,888 medium-grade spirit stones!!!

The third... was also a new ID, Yi Jianyang. It was quite the ordinary name, unknown as to who it was. It could be speculated that there was some connection to the Yi Clan. That was due to the great wave of this user's hand. He rewarded... 10,000 medium-grade spirit stones!!!

The fourth was a famous moneybags on Chinacultivation.com, the Qin Imperial Court's Second Prince. He rewarded... 11,000

medium-grade spirit stones!

The fifth came and so did the sixth... The number of people became greater and greater. Just counting on the number of rewarders, there were no less than ten thousand!

Some were worth ten thousand and some were a single coin. A good amount in the middle were worth a hundred or fifty. Yet no matter the number, this represented that these people recognized Xu Yangyi at the very least! This A-rank Legion seed had appeared on the cultivation net several times. According to reason, there wouldn't be too many people paying attention to them at the moment!

His first appearance was the Vermilion Snow Incident. Nonetheless, that was a case from three years ago in the end. His rise was simply the attention-grabbing goal of his Signing Ceremony. Apart from a few die-hard, love-smitten female cultivators, how many cultivators still remembered him now?

It was completely different this time! Xu Yangyi would truly be remembered in their hearts! To the degree that if he went out, everyone who caught sight of him would recognize him!

In these several thousand years... he was the first recorded man to break through Danxia Temple's secret realm!

"Amazing..." In a mansion at the Capital, seven old men dressed in Tang suits were sitting at a directors conference table. They intensely studied the computer on the table. After ages, an old man at the head seat shook his head and lamented: "Investigate his background details. I want it at once!"

"Yes!"

Not one objection! This was considering... that everyone was thinking about Ancestor Floatingcloud at this moment! The Ancestor Floatingcloud of over a century ago! In the future... there wouldn't necessarily not be another ancestor who had left a

deadland!

No matter whether it was making friendships, learning through another's experience, or... a direct recruitment, all of this was absolutely major assistance!

Elsewhere, in the Bountiful Treasures Pavilion, Vulture's eyes were drilling into a screen. He dared not believe anything. This was that Xu Yangyi! That person from Heavens Law who he wanted to recruit yet hadn't!

"It's been over five years, huh..." He took a deep breath, looking at the screen with his face covered in shock. "He came out from Danxia Temple... He's sure to be on this year's stage for the cultivation world's celebrities... T-This is the first Qi Condensation cultivator that's going to go up!"

Jingle! At this time, Vulture's cell phone suddenly rang out. Just as he picked it up, his expression became incredibly respectful two seconds later. "Junior greets Senior Lu."

"Yes... I understand. I certainly do have a relationship with Commander Xu. Arrange a meeting opportunity? Alright... I'll do my best..."

As all cultivator's gazes converged on Danxia Temple, in the most northern part of Xichuan Province, there was a tall nameless mountain. Below the mountain was a boundless prairie that was blooming with many flowers. Groups of cattle and sheep were herded by shepards waving whips, and they leisurely chewed on grass. Boths side of the national highway were mantled with mountains, fields, green grass, and the aroma of flowers. Tents stood tall at both sides. Many people on road trips stopped their cars and carefully took pictures.

The character "[chaun](#)" (川) was in Xichuan Province because the surroundings were all mountains and rivers. As for this mountain behind the prairie, it was known as Qi Mountain. The mountains were tall and the forests were dense, their outer forms steep and

dangerous. It became the paradise of a great majority of explorers.

However, there were no mortal explorers that could see the tremendous empty cavern behind a waterfall in the deepest depths of the valley. If a mortal entered, they would be obstructed by a cliff wall. But if it was a cultivator, they would see a three-to-four-meter-wide empty cavern. In books, it could be described by the grand words “Bottomless Pit”. And if they continued walking in, they would see a domain of incomparably vast palace halls!

They were richly ornamented buildings. People were flying over rooftops and vaulting over walls, a boiling cauldron of voices. This place was shockingly a utopia that mortals couldn’t approach. It occupied close to ten kilometers of space. In the center, there was a seven-storied palace hall. Among a stretch of ancient buildings, it was incredibly striking. As for its carvings and designs, each aspect was extremely delicate and fine.

Before this point, the three large bloody characters of “White Tiger Hall” were suspended high on a horizontal board. Perhaps any cultivator who arrived here would pay deep respects. None who didn’t have reports to make absolutely wouldn’t enter without permission.

White Tiger Hall was in Qi Mountain’s Bottomless Pit. The palace hall’s Linghu Clan was a brilliantly famous first-rate clan that a great many people know about in the cultivation world!

At this moment, in the palace hall’s seventh level, there were three old men gathered together in a fine and exquisite pavilion room. In front of them, a jade slip was awesomely placed.

Ahead of this jade slip, a light screen was slowly glittering. The image that appeared on the light screen was Longsu Province’s qi reparation.

No one spoke. They had watched this image three times and used divine abilities and secret arts to examine it no less than ten times. They had long since confirmed its authenticity. Nonetheless, even

so, they also felt that it was hard to believe.

1. “I’ll drink to that”. A little tricky to translate this phrase “当浮一大白”. It originates from a Western Han dynasty scholar named Liu Xiang (77-6 BCE). Originally used in a story about violations in a drinking game, but later on used to describe a somewhat bold spirit.

2. Chinese forums have a “reward/tip” function.

3. The character “川” means river.

Chapter 255: White Tiger Linghu

The light screen stopped glimmering. An old man slowly stood up, his slender finger gently tapping the table. “This Throne dares not believe... that such a massive qi reparation actually happened in Longsu Province... yet we were so close but unable to detect it. Daomasters Ancientpine and Titanspirit truly joined hands to seal off news to the outside world.”

“Have you looked at today’s cultivation net?” Another old man said: “As we expected, they shut down all information related to the qi reparation.”

“Are they planning to market and sell by themselves?” The first old man sneered and shook his changpao: “They still must ask whether the Linghu Clan consents!”

“What are we still waiting for!” The last person was a burly fellow. Although he had a head full of white hair, his beard was oddly black. He slammed the table: “Longsu Province... so long as it’s managed appropriately, in fifty years, no, thirty years, it’s bound to become a heavenly paradise! Is it not Sichuan’s Baili Clan who dominates the [Ming Tombs](#) of the Shu Princes? If our Linghu Clan takes hold of this paradise, how could it be the Baili Clan’s turn to be Western China’s top demon clan?”

“Wait?” The first old man laughed grimly: “Have I... ever waited?”

“Reporting to Ancestor.” At this time, a Qi Condensation disciple dashed in. “Prince Linghu Chaofeng has already completed preparations!”

“Go!” The old man faced upwards and laughed heartily: “The Linghu Clan... has concealed our strength and bided our time for a hundred years. We’ll make those humans look upon the sharp claws of our Linghu Clan!”

Three figures swiftly vanished from the inside of the room. When they appeared again, they were already outside the palace hall. Over yonder was a wide training ground. In the center, there a white tiger statue, vivid as if it was alive, and in front of them... was a crowded horde of half-kneeling people that numbered in the hundreds!

To call it a crowd wasn't appropriate. This was because at this moment, everyone's skin was oddly pale and black lines emerged on their faces. Their arms were covered in white fur, and they had pointed cat ears and golden beastly pupils. A thousand took a knee on the ground, yet it was so quiet that a falling needle could be heard! The severity of military discipline, and strict obedience was visible with the slightest of glances.

Above them in the sky was a white tiger manifested from qi. It was no less than a hundred meters long, endlessly surging in the sky! The spiritual pressure that it leaked caused the surrounding landscape to turn indistinct.

The tiger appeared transparent. In its stomach, there was an ink stone flashing with white light, slowly revolving within. An old man suddenly took a stride forward and walked to the forefront before the youth.

This youth hadn't demonized.

"Tao'er was lost in Danxia Temple." The old man calmly looked at him.

"This child knows." The youth took a knee on the ground, his voice firm and upright like a javelin.

"As we expected, there's been no information published about the qi reparation." The old man petted the top of the youth's head. "The Linghu Clan has no room to allow this opportunity to slip by."

"I understand."

“Good.” The old man brushed an eye on the crowd below and took his hand back. His gaze sparked. “Go... Take the Linghu Clan’s Screaming Wind Legion. As soon as the Core Formation ancestors finish rushing in six months...”

He inhaled deeply. In the next second, terrible half-step Core Formation aura visibly formed a ripple, sweeping through the entire space without omen! Everyone’s clothes rustled in the wind!

“In the highest point of that place, insert the Linghu Clan’s White Tiger banner!”

“YES!” Several hundred voices answered in unison. Their voices caused the stones on the ground to jump chaotically!

“YES!!!” The youth at the front suddenly faced upwards and roared, his gaze like fire as he looked at the old man. “And if there are apex lineages?”

“Kill them.” The old man uttered.

“And if the great powers obstruct us?”

“Kill them.” The old man carried a wisp of bloodthirsty red in his eyes. “The Linghu Clan has hidden and mustered its strength for a century. Were it not for our lack of heavenly paradise, how could we be comparable with those clans!”

“And if...” A kind of intense battle intent radiated from the youth’s eyes. “there’s the disciple of a Core Formation master in the place that the Linghu Clan has selected?”

The old man laughed grimly as he looked at the youth: “Linghu Chaofeng, I didn’t know you still feared those of the same stage.”

“Yes.” Linghu Chaofeng licked his lips with a thirst for blood and stood straight up.

He was about 1.73 meters tall, and his face was pale. Merely, his eyes beared a smidgen of heavy ruthlessness, so dense that it couldn’t be cleared.

He bowed towards the old man and raised his hand, fiercely waving it! In the sky, the white tiger manifestation unleashed a roar that shook the heavens. In the next moment, all of the Screaming Wind Legion transformed into white lights, vanishing from the floor.

“Clan Elder.” The burly fellow faintly narrowed his eyes and walked to the elder’s side. “Longsu Province is bound to follow as a struggle between tigers and dragons. I believe in Feng’er’s ability, but sending a Great Circle Qi Condensation to go... isn’t that worse than not going ourselves?”

“No...” The old man’s gaze slightly flickered. “Daomaster Ancientpine has already made a warning, and Daomaster Titanspirit should’ve been present then as well, yet he didn’t refute it. They didn’t speak, but they wounded a Ming Clan elder who was ready to act against a Core Formation disciple. This was a deliberate show of strength... Don’t count on the great clans daring to strut their military power in Longsu Province. ‘You want a hundred-year foundation? Sure, but you’ll have to send your most elite juniors’.”

“Why is he doing it like this?” The burly fellow was dazed and asked.

“There’s something else.” The old man sneered: “His disciple is indeed stunning. He... This is the territory that he brazenly gave to his disciple to divide.”

“He’s not worried?”

The old man turned upwards and chuckled heartily: “Old Three, he exterminated our entire Linghu Clan. He wants to kill us and leave no chicken or dog behind. What does he need to be worried about?”

“Whoever wants this hundred-year foundation in Longsu Province that’ll turn into a heavenly paradise in fifty years, they’ll have to stand firm in the conflict. Everyone will be baptised

through a true trial of fire and blood.” He looked the burly man and said deeply: “This isn’t cultivator versus demon beast, but rather... cultivator versus cultivator. Compared to cultivator versus demon beast, and exploring a secret realms, it’s an even more honest and simpler cruel and bloody war.”

“If one wants to stand firm and claim territory, one must establish might. The enemy’s head is the Linghu Clan’s best method to establish power.”

The burly man was enlightened and nodded, but his brows furrowed. “There are some first-rate clans coming. They... To tell the truth, they aren’t weaker than our Linghu Clan at all...”

The old man sneered, his gaze trained on the sky above. “Yes... but who said we must find an equal first-rate clan?”

The burly man was dazed, and the light of his eyes immediately flashed. Nevertheless, he immediately knitted his brows again and said: “Branchmaster Xu? He can’t be trifled with.”

“He can’t be pushed around, but it’s still much better than bloodsport with an equal clan!” The old man’s smile dwindled, and he said coldly: “Right now... he has the authority, but who under him is willing to give him their utmost? That’s right, the A-rank Legions are starting to mobilize. He’s surely capable of resisting this blade, but A-rank Legions are Foundation Establishment cultivators! He’s a Qi Condensation branch master; who will obey him? If it was you, would you?”

The burly man instantly shook his head: “Of course I wouldn’t! Make a Foundation Establishment cultivator like me listen to a Qi Condensation cultivator’s command? What a joke!”

“That’s how it is...” The old man laughed grimly: “His reputation flourishes right now. He’s the best target to establish our might! The time we hang his head from the Featherwood Guard branch will be the time the Linghu Clan seizes Longsu Province’s heavenly paradise!”

The burly man sucked in deeply and nodded, but he said again: “But, he’s a Core Formation disciple...”

The old man floated away as he roared in laughter: “[Old Three... you’ve really cultivated a dog’s belly...](#)”

“That day when the Core Formation masters didn’t speak to grant him protection in Longsu Province was the day that they tacitly approved of our actions. This is a rearing of Gu... Do you understand? This is the Core Formation seed that Daomaster Ancientpine is raising... All we have to do is lay hands and kill. Even if we dismember him, Daomaster Ancientpine won’t let out a peep...”

“Look, this time, he’ll be our chief target... He absolutely won’t be the one to stop our Linghu Clan...”

Xu Yangyi was none the wiser to all of this.

Although he didn’t know, he still held the feeling of crisis. Nonetheless, food had to be eaten bite by bite, and business done step by step. There was still six months to prepare. His first issue was to restore his left arm.

The Ketu-Rahu Sword... Quan Ningyue had said that it was an even more powerful bodily weapon than her Three Moongazers. It could allow him to fight and unleash divine abilities. This was the first thing he wanted done.

“Fellow Daoist Xu.” They were on an airplane, and Quan Ningyue was sitting at Xu Yangyi’s side. She watched Xu Yangyi, who was looking outside the window with a somewhat spellbound expression, and couldn’t help but laugh: “What’s the matter?”

They didn’t have a chartered plane. Although spirit stones and Chinese dollars had an exchange rate of one to twenty thousand, the only mortal world company that accepted spirit stones was the strange Qin Imperial Court. To speak of this topic, their reserve of Chinese dollars wasn’t plentiful at all.

There were three seats. Xu Yangyi sat at the window side, Quan Ningyue sat at his side, and Peony sat the furthest outside.

She, Jun Man, Qin Xueluan, and Mo Yeyu had returned to the Mingshui Province branch early on. There was no way that Xu Yangyi would randomly speak about his killing of Thousandedge. When the Mingshui Province Featherwood Guard discovered that Thousandedge was missing for over a year, someone was bound to report it.

“Nothing.” Xu Yangyi was dressed in a well-ironed suit. It was just that his left arm was somewhat empty. He pulled his gaze back and laughed: “I was only thinking about when I won’t have to use an airplane and instead fly in the sky by myself.”

“Ahem...” Peony gently coughed: “Command... Branch Master, Qi Condensation can still use flying magik artifacts to fly. But compared to Foundation Establishment, it’s only low-altitude flight. Foundation Establishment can reach around two to three thousand meters in height. Compared to an airplane, the speed is second to none. Qi Condensation can only fly at a thousand meters or below. Furthermore, an airplane’s speed can’t be achieved. As for ‘free flight’...”

She laughed: “Maybe you don’t remember, but as your assistant, I have the obligation to remind you that China’s Cultivation Court has ruled that unless there’s an especially urgent matter, high-altitude flight is strictly prohibited. After all, four or five cases have occurred since the initial period of the Nation’s Founding where cultivators have collided with airplanes.”

“I was just thinking about it.” Xu Yangyi laughed and shut his eyes. “Still better than ancient cultivators.”

“While Fellow Daoist Xu may be thinking about this, it would be better to think about how you’re going to get my master to cut down his price.” Quan Ningyue had a lolita’s appearance. She took a bag of snacks and started eating, giggling: “My Master’s work

isn't cheap. Apart from refining artifacts for Core Formation ancestors, he hasn't taken anything up for ten years."

"The last time was to refine a flying hammer for Ancestor Titanspirit. The price was 3,000 high-grade spirit stones, equal to 300,000 medium-grade spirit stones. I can't even exactly count the amount in Chinese dollars. The bank? Hahaha."

1. Ming Tombs of the Shu Princes is a real place. You may remember the Thirteen Ming Tombs previously mentioned. The distinction here is that the Thirteen Ming Tombs are located to the north and the Shu Princes Tombs are located in the south.

2. Chinese swearing can be very colorful. Animals are used in particular sometimes. Dog is generally used to express lowness.

Chapter 256: The Ketu-Rahu Sword (1)

Quan Ningyue smiled heartlessly. Yes, one of the several grand artificers. Even using his secret, Xu Yangyi still wouldn't be able to currently afford this price, even if he was richer.

Xu Yangyi smiled wryly: "No discounts?"

The little lolita wagged a finger straight in front of him, squinting her eyes and laughing like a fox: "Even in the mortal world, there are no discounts at luxury stores. You actually want a grand artificer in the cultivation world to make a discount. You're too stingy."

Xu Yangyi laughed bitterly and shook his head. It wasn't that he couldn't pay out 300,000 medium-grade spirit stones, but... this was merely the cost of Grandmaster Gao Muya undertaking the project.

Artificing was never a matter of one-time success. One could only pray for success in a single trial, but as for the prepared materials... Everyone was well aware that more preparations weren't certain to yield anything. This was an artificer's [red packet](#). Even Core Formation ancestors wouldn't do such a thing.

If the refinement wasn't a success on the first attempt, then the lord artificer absolutely wouldn't prepare the other materials for him. Xu Yangyi would still have to find them himself. It was truly unknown how many materials the Ketu-Rahu Sword would use.

"I'll tell you some more bad news." Quan Ningyue's smile was very joyful as she saw that her all-successful commander was having some difficulties. She was quite unsympathetic. "My Nine Yin Extremes bloodline used 5,000 high-grade spirit stones for this hand of mine..." She giggled and fell into her seat: "Jeez... figuring out how much I am isn't easy... hahaha!"

"Ahem." As an important figure in the Yangyu Fan Club, Peony

was rather dissatisfied and lightly coughed: “You seem to be enjoying the misfortune.”

“How could that be... This is my satisfaction for doing the calculation for Commander... hahaha! Keke... cough... cough...”

Choking on a cookie, Quan Ningyue coughed fiercely. Peony eyed her pitifully, bemoaning the state of both heaven and mankind. [“You had that one coming to you.”](#)

The airplane flew quickly. Gao Muya’s Dao sanctum was located in the Capital, not too far away from Mingshui Province. Just as they descended into the airfield, they were immediately bothered by two people as they left the airplane’s waiting lounge.

Two youths... a man and a woman. The man was rather handsome. His appearance was a little similar to... Who was it? Xu Yangyi didn’t remember, but it seemed to be a famous singer. The girl... How was it to be said... She was... appealing. One could see her careful application of makeup. Be it her blush, eyeshadow, or lipstick, not a single aspect was lacking.

This was a very attentive woman with a love for aesthetics. Nonetheless... this was unable to mask her body weight of 85 kilograms!

“Woah...” Just as the woman approached Xu Yangyi, her high heels stopped, and she toppled over onto the ground.

Mhm, when a woman fell over, a man was bound to lend her hand, but... the handsome fellow at the side didn’t even glance at her. He came forward and gave Xu Yangyi a bear hug.

“Brother Xu! You’re very handsome! I love you to death! Do you know how long I prepared once I that heard you were coming! I was still worrying yesterday if the outfit I’m wearing would offend you! My idol! You don’t know...”

“Seventh Junior Brother.” Quan Ningyue’s icy voice interrupted him: “Third Senior Sister was enough. Why have you come as

well?”

The handsome fellow didn't even look at her. Even ghosts could hear how half-hearted he was as he said: “Oh, Fifth Senior Sister, you're back... Brother Xu, I'll tell you that there are ten of us disciples—seven of them are guys—and they all want to meet you! Even if you don't meet them, they'll definitely ask for an autograph! Fuck me! Danixa Temple! The Danxia Temple deadland! I finally got to see a living person today... Hey... Senior Sister, if y-you have something to say—let go of me! Don't be in rush to get me!”

Quan Ningyue pulled his ear and said in displeasure: “Lead the way.”

“Really.” The handsome fellow snorted: “I just got to meet the idol I've seen no more than a couple times, and I didn't even manage to get off a few sentences... Hurry up and reincarnate or go rush off to a funeral...”

“You wanna die?” Without the slightest politeness, Quan Ningyue sent a kick towards the knee area of the other's bright and clean black suit. Based on her height, she could only kick this part.

“Hey? Where's Third Senior Sister?” The handsome fellow immediately shifted the topic: “Didn't she come together with me? Is she still spending half the day doing her makeup? Oh, that's right, Brother Xu. She's also your fan! She's in that something Yangyu Army! She's really fanatical! She switched her body pillow from pikachu to you!”

I keep on feeling that something's not right here... The crook of Xu Yangyi's mouth twitched. “Hehe, thanks for the love...”

“No problem!” Stars promptly radiated from the handsome fellow's eyes. “Our body pillows are like that too!”

“Junior Brother...” Cold as frosted ice, a voice was heard from the handsome fellow's side. Third Senior Sister was looking at

him, the emotions swimming under her surface unknown. “Good... When we get back, we’ll have to slowly settle debts again.”

She turned her head and looked at Xu Yangyi, her smile just like a peace blossom in full bloom. “Commander Xu, I’m your fan. Our duty is to erase any website that has a negative view of you. Anyone that doesn’t favor you is our fan club’s enemy!”

“Hehe...” Xu Yangyi laughed: “thanks.”

“Rest assured.” Third Senior Sister gazed at his left arm. “Master will certainly be able to fix you up. He was able to fix Junior Sister Quan. Yours is just an arm. W-We’ll try to persuade him to cut down the price...”

“Thanks.” Xu Yangyi said: “But the body pillow...”

“Relax, Master is good to us!” The handsome fellow quickly added.

“Thanks, but the body pillow...”

“Oh wow, look at me, you still haven’t rested yet, right, Brother Xu? C’mon, I’ll take you to a few residences!”

Alright... It was fine to just let the body pillow die in the gullet like this. It seemed that the other’s selective ignoring skill was already a bit full.

A party of people walked over to the entrance of a Capital courtyard house that could already be labeled a cultural relic. Third Senior Sister’s and the young handsome fellow’s expressions turned grave, and they bowed. “Commander Xu, although we want to follow you in, Master has been busy recently forging a very difficult-to-use magik artifact for some demon clan. He’s forbidden us from entering...”

“Thanks.” Xu Yangyi smiled and nodded. He and Quan Ningyue pushed the door open together and walked in. Just as he pushed open the door, he was stunned. This was because there were many

people sitting in the courtyard.

Some wore changpaos and some wore suits. Some wore tunic suits, and some wore cloth. Nonetheless, each person looked at this young man who had just entered. In a glance, they caused Xu Yangyi's spiritual sense to feel as if it was being pinched by a giant hand! A ruthless jolt!

Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply. He didn't evade and he moreover didn't lose himself to fear. On the contrary, he looked at each person.

Altogether, there were seven people present. Each person wasn't young. Even if the youngest seemed to be a thirty-somewhat-year-old man, his eyes were still brimming with years of great vicissitudes, azure seas to mulberry fields. Xu Yangyi immediately understood that in this place... there were seven Foundation Establishment cultivators seated!

This was the face of a grand craftsman, the honor!

You wish to forge an item? Sure, line up. Don't talk to me that you're so-and-so of some clan, there's still a Core Formation ahead of you waiting in line. You don't want to line up? You want to cut the line? Alright, let's see if everyone else won't slap you to death!

And with no tea brought out or presents to give, you'll just have to wait in line in this courtyard whether you like it or not while I'm inside artificing. No? Alright, look for better somewhere else. With Grandmaster Gao here, you and the clan behind you don't need to come ask around in the future.

Of course, this was only directed towards cultivators of somewhat weak reputation, usually rogue cultivators or clan retainers away from home. True leaders were like half-step Core Formation, the master of an influence, or even Core Formation Dao Masters. Lining-up was lining-up; these figures had another private room.

If his Pill Dao succeeded, Xu Yangyi could also be this awesome! This extravagant! Who would dare say a word!

He curbed the thoughts on his mind and slightly bowed towards everyone. “Junior greets all the seniors.”

“Branchmaster Xu?” A round-faced Foundation Establishment cultivator laughed: “A model talent. This Throne has a peculiar matter. I do not know whether Branchmaster Xu is willing to answer or not.”

“I cannot match the two words of ‘branch master’.” Xu Yangyi laughed, neither haughty nor humble: “If senior has some question and I know, I will certainly do my best to answer.”

An old man with a wrinkle-covered face raised his head and faintly nodded: “Neither arrogant nor hot-tempered, with the degree of freedom to advance or retreat. Calm and composed, regardless of whether your fortune dictates it so. There are not many among the younger generation with this bearing.”

The round-faced Foundation Establishment cultivator laughed as he nodded: “Branchmaster Xu, about your Danxia Temple journey this time. This is the first time I’ve even paid such attention to a junior. I’m just unaware...” He paused and said with seeming leisure: “how are you planning to fill in your lost personnel?”

Xu Yangyi laughed: “To answer senior, I chose the best the first time. It’ll still be choosing the best this time.”

The round-faced cultivator said with a smile on his face: “I have a disciple. His talents are outstanding and his comprehension is extremely high. He will surely enter Branchmaster Xu’s discerning eye.”

Xu Yangyi coolly eyed the round-faced cultivator. This man was able to line up here, but Xu Yangyi didn’t see that he was sitting in this courtyard. Nevertheless, this cultivator’s status wasn’t too low at all. Even if his status wasn’t high, his clan resources were still

absolutely generous. But...

How was this damn business related to him? Could it be that these great Foundation Establishment cultivators believed... that if Gao Muya wanted them to line up in this place, then Commander Xu wasn't needed to make a pick here?

"Senior." Xu Yangyi said indifferently: "The Xingtian Legion selected the best last time. This occasion will also use the method of choosing the best. If senior has confidence in your disciple, junior will take special note of him."

This wasn't saying anything to a Foundation Establishment cultivator.

"Junior." At this time, a woman smiled: "Do you know... who he is?"

Xu Yangyi slightly bowed. "Ordinarily, junior has very little contact with the cultivation circle. I have eyes but fail to recognize Mount Tai. I do not know."

"Since you know of Mount Tai..." The round-faced cultivator's smile vanished, and he gazed at Xu Yangyi with a smile that wasn't a smile: "Are you not intending to sell Mount Tai this meager face?"

Xu Yangyi's gaze flashed. In an instant, his heartbeat slowed down a little bit. He was calm and collected, unchanging. The other... was actually releasing Foundation Establishment spiritual pressure!

"I said." This time, Xu Yangyi didn't speak. With a crash, the door was opened, and an old man walked out. Even though he was donned in an ancient cloth gown, his essence was hale and hearty. He glanced dimly at the Foundation Establishment cultivators. "What, where do all of you take this place for?"

"Grandmaster Gao."

"Grandmaster Gao, I, Wang, have a gift here."

“Grandmaster Gao, how can you leave during your busy schedule?”

“Hehe...” Gao Muya didn’t look at Xu Yangyi at all. Instead, his eyes deeply scraped through the others like an old eagle. A beard was left on his lean face. Following his laughter, the hair of his beard floated up. “I can’t leave?”

“I can’t leave... Am I just supposed to let all of you have your way and bully This Throne’s junior?!” At the final word, his voice abruptly raised. His pupils were lightning, sweeping across several people.

1. Red packet is something like a nice bonus, sometimes used to express goodwill.

2. “You had that one coming to you.” Literal chinese is “self sin, can’t live” (自作孽, 不可活). Something of a phrase.

Chapter 257: The Ketu-Rahu Sword (2)

The round-faced cultivator was suddenly dazed. Xu Yangyi... hadn't come to find Grandmaster Gao Muya to build something for his lost arm? Why... did Grandmaster Gao recognize the other as his junior? Had he also come out for Xu Yangyi?

Wasn't that wrong? Xu Yangyi's present fame was great, but it still wasn't his turn for a grand artificer to personally come out to welcome him, right?

The round-faced cultivator didn't know that at the pill concoction auction, Xu Yangyi had refuted Gao Muya's esteem. However, his darling disciple Quan Ningyue was still under Xu Yangyi's command, sent off with good tidings!

Chinacultivation.com hadn't published everyone else's background info. They stated nothing more than Quan Ningyue's name!

Like the unpredictable emergence of gods and vanishing of devils, Third Senior Sister appeared behind Gao Muya, holding a cup of tea. He drank it, absent of the slightest bit of a grand master's style and furthermore without the airs of one. Third Senior Sister helped massage his shoulders and whispered incessantly at his ear side. Several seconds later, Gao Muya's eyes saucered, and he fiercely downed the cup of tea. With a hacking noise, he spat on the ground.

"Increased ability, eh... A one and a two..." His eyes were trained on the round-faced cultivator like a hawk, and he said eerily: "You're at the door of I, Gao Muya, yet you still dare to bully and humiliate my junior... You're the Loneheart Hall's Second Steward, right?"

Just as he finished speaking, Third Senior Sister moved over a chair. Gao Muya sat down with a great whoosh, waving his hand.

Everyone elected to leave the fat cultivator's surroundings by a meter.

Old Man Gao's artificing skill was fearsome, but his speaking skills were even more terrible. That was his temperament. He was fiercely protective of his own!

If he said "junior", it was true, regardless of whether or not they were. No one was able to pay the debt of offending him!

When Ancestor Floatingcloud had just entered Core Formation, how infinite was his prestige? He dispatched his disciple to request Gao Muya to craft a magik treasure. But because this disciple waited too long, he berated a disciple of Gao Muya's! On just this and nothing more, this disciple obtained Gao Muya's words of "from henceforth, I will not work for Daomaster Floatingcloud's only son".

Otherwise, how rare were Foundation Establishment cultivators? Seven had appeared all at once and in this little courtyard? Did they really have so much time and leisure to wait here?

The round-faced cultivator's expression had already changed somewhat. If Ancestor Floatingcloud couldn't curse Gao Muya, then there was no way that he could!

"Grandmaster Gao." The round-faced fatso gritted his teeth and laughed: "I really didn't know that he was your disciple."

Gao Muya simply didn't care for him. Several seconds later, his eyes blinked. "Why the hell are you still here?"

"Huh?"

"LEAVE!" Gao Muya waved his hand ill-temperedly, and Third Senior Sister immediately took out a pipe and lit it. Amidst winding smoke, he snorted coldly: "Do you not understand my words? Did you not get my hand gesture? I won't be welcoming your Loneheart Hall's only son for ten years."

"HUH?! Grandmaster Gao! We've been in line..."

“Fifteen years.” Gao Muya took a deep drag and smiled as he looked at Third Senior Sister. “This shredded tobacco isn’t bad. Where’s it from?”

“Branchmaster Xu gave it.” Third Senior Sister smushed and gently hammered the tobacco. Her laughter was rather love-smitten. She didn’t forget to wink towards Xu Yangyi as she did so. Xu Yangyi nodded, not knowing whether to laugh or cry.

A body pillow... just a body pillow, right... Men and women, I admit it too... Mao Ba’er isn’t one, but he’s slept with me... I just hadn’t heard about it before...

Yeah? Integrity? What was that?

“... I understand...” The round-faced cultivator took a deep breath yet gritted his teeth and cupped his hands, bowing: “This time, the Loneheart Hall was rash. After we return, our meager gift will be readied.”

Xu Yangyi’s gaze softly flickered. Today, he had become educated in a grand artificer’s style, his horizons broadened. He hadn’t entered the crafts for long, only several years. He was still ignorant as to what degree the crafts could influence the cultivation world. However, one could completely miss the greater picture of today’s matter.

A Foundation Establishment cultivator, promptly summoned and promptly dismissed. The round-faced cultivator hadn’t even dared to break the slightest wind. Just because Gao Muya said that he was his junior.

“Young fellow.” Gao Muya set down the pipe and raised his chin towards Xu Yangyi: “Come in with this old man.”

This time, everyone chose to be reasonably silent. Cutting in line? What’s that? I don’t know, was there ever another person here?

Xu Yangyi followed Gao Muya and walked in. The furnishings

within were simple. One knew how old the courtyard house was by the ancient furniture. Mild fragrance floated in the air. Gao Muya's dwellings were like a majority of courtyard houses in the Capital. There was a bed, a television, and even a computer. However, after Gao Muya paid respects to a portrait of [Lu Ban](#) in the living room, his surroundings grew hazy in an instant.

What a brilliant Transference Formation... in addition to the spiritual sense identification channel..." He shut his eyes. This kind of setting was too familiar. If he hadn't closed his eyes as he was transported, it would lead to subsequent dizziness. No... there's also offensive measures and sealing measures... This portrait of Lu Ban isn't the same.

As he opened his eyes, even he couldn't prevent his pupils from shrinking. He took a heavy breath in shock.

This place... was underground. However, the space was extremely vast! One could actually see that it reached up to several kilometers in range! The overhead was about a hundred meters tall. The rough and crude stone ceiling was without the slightest decoration. No... perhaps it should be rather said that the collective style here was exceptionally coarse, and that was excluding the ground's levelness. However, it was only level and nothing more.

As to how level the inside of the cave was, it was like this now. Nonetheless, this place simply didn't appear to be spacious and empty. Instead, waves of heat overflowed the air.

In the center, there was a giant furnace with the appearance of a nine-headed pheasant. It was unknown what it was crafting, but it was no less than 300 or 400 meters in size! It stood in a mass of several hundred meters of lava. Each bird head was twenty to thirty meters, their outer shells seemingly copper yet seemingly transparent. From its feet, geothermal flames were guided and spread to the nine bird heads. Following the passage of each heat burst, the entire bird radiated white light.

This was because these lights appeared to be incredibly shining here. They didn't possess the slightest feeling of underground dusk. As for the nine heads, in the wake of cultivators in front forming seals, a several-meters-thick flame column suddenly welled up! The forged item ahead was sure to erupt with a hissing sound.

Below the bird heads, there was a work station of nine kinds of corresponding mythical beasts that were engraved. Likewise, they were over ten meters in size. In another location, there were almost a hundred casting stations there were lined up with extreme order! In front of each casting station, there was a cultivator brandishing a hammer of glimmering treasure light and slamming down with full strength. In the surroundings, there were about five or six crude work stations revolving around this casting station. Each person heard the command of the casting station's master. From time to time, they grinded some component or added some heavenly treasures.

"My wares are expensive, but reasonably expensive." At this time, Xu Yangyi was pulled out of his thoughts by Gao Muya's words. "Wealth, scripture, companions, and land. Wealth is number one. I'm not just supporting myself, I'm moreover supporting them."

"Here in my place, all those with the qualifications to stand on a casting station are at least Foundation Establishment cultivators." Gao Muya proudly pointed at the giant nine-headed bird smelting furnace. "Those who stand there are all at the Great Circle of Foundation Establishment. My assistant is furthermore half-step Core Formation."

Xu Yangyi sucked in deeply and looked at this underground furnace somewhat incredulously. In other words, there were tens of Foundation Establishment cultivators here! Almost up to 2,000 Qi Condensation cultivators! An additional nine Great Circle Foundation Establishment! A half-step Core Formation!

This... was practically a strong power that wouldn't lose out to an apex power!

“Do you think with me here, this is a sect?” As if he saw through Xu Yangyi's thoughts, Gao Muya brought Xu Yangyi to stand where they originally were and laughed: “That's because it is a sect.”

“Any grand craftsman who cultivates to the grand master stage is bound to form such a sect.” He turned his head and gazed deeply at Xu Yangyi: “Do you understand?”

Xu Yangyi was dazed but came to a sudden realization! Rather than saying these words for him to hear, Gao Muya was speaking to the imaginary “pill master” behind him.

The crafts were a single body of great skill. If one didn't have this power, what would they do?

Presently, everyone clasped hands to grand masters of great fame. This was because each grand master held twisting and complicated deals with other companies, clans, and powers. The firmest net in the world was the net of benefit. This was also another layer of meaning to the first among “wealth, scripture, companions, and land”. And yet... what about the time they rose to meteoric fame?

If they didn't have such power, their time of fame would become the time that they were kept like animals by the Core Formation ancestors and isolated from the world.

“Junior understands.” Xu Yangyi faced Gao Muya and heavily formed a fist in respects. “Thank you for mentioning this point, senior. I will pass it on as is.”

“I'm not worried about him. I'm worried about you.” Gao Muya laughed: “If the worst outcome takes places, you'll be linked as well. The Pill Dao... The reason why there's been no explosion is because one, its production is too low. It can't deal a fatal blow to

those pill elixir clans and powers. Two, if that pill master can't refine Foundation Establishment pills one day, he won't truly step into the cultivation world's high society."

Xu Yangyi said lowly: "On the other hand, once he steps in, then I, as the person in front of him, his agent, will be linked?"

"This is certain." With some ruefulness, Gao Muya looked at the surroundings. "My third senior brother and fifth junior sister... How absolutely splendid their talents were... If they were still in this world, they would definitely be much stronger than I... It's a pity that the heavens envy heroes... They didn't have good protection like me... The day they came to eminence was the moment that they lost their lives... Young fellow, the crafts' influence on the cultivation world is far more serious than you can imagine. Furthermore, that's saying nothing about the centuries-lost Pill Dao.

Silence. After a couple seconds passed, Gao Muya gestured with his hand. "Well, that's it. Follow me."

The duo walked to another Transference Formation. This time, Gao Muya's activation was much more cautious than before, even dripping a drop of blood on it. The Transference Formation then emitted rays of white light.

A few seconds later as Xu Yangyi opened his eyes, he had already entered a somewhat messy room. The room wasn't large, approximately twenty meters wide. In the center, there was a table that was about three or four meters long. A desk at the side was piled up with countless books, scrolls, and loose and scattered writing brushes.

Yet what caused Xu Yangyi's gaze to stare was the room's overhead!

It appeared as if there was no roof, but it was almost transparent, a mystery as to what materials were used to craft it. At this moment, on the roof, a null thread of qi, as if someone was

writing, was drawing a picture!

It was an arm.

A left arm.

1. Lu Ban is known as a legendary master craftsman. The father of Chinese carpentry (507-444 BCE). He is revered as the Chinese god of builders and contractors.

Chapter 258: The Ketu-Rahu Sword (3)

The qi thread wrote like the roaming of dragons and snakes. Drawing bit by bit, there appeared to be not the slightest difference with the outer shape and an ordinary hand. Nonetheless, the surface was covered in profound runes. Furthermore, this hand diagram was a dissection drawing!

Xu Yangyi caught quick glimpses of the dizzying and complicated runes and extremely elaborate components of the opened interior texture. There was also a heavenly treasure that he simply couldn't identify. These things were written below and explained line after line with another red qi thread.

Xu Yangyi couldn't refrain from looking. He had already guessed a few things. His heart stopped beating a little bit because of this. His hand involuntarily grabbed towards his left arm wound.

“Dragonbeard Steel, Starshadow Iron, Sunshine Censer, Scarlet-Gilded Jade... hiss...” Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes and glanced. He couldn't prevent himself from gasping.

These items... Any of them were sold by the gram!

“Young fellow, this is only one part of a whole.” As if he was enjoying Xu Yangyi's astonished look, Gao Muya fiddled with his beard and laughed: “If I didn't see you bring back that little girl Quan safe and sound, you wouldn't be seeing this heck of a mess here... You wouldn't even be able to enter this room.”

“This really puts... the ‘[expensive](#)’ in precious expensive.” Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply.

“If you drop the word ‘preciously’, isn't it even more suited?” Gao Muya boomed with laughter: “This is a true artificing technique... Combining countless kinds of materials together to form a perfect creation. Qi serves as the blood, materials as the meridians, and the blueprint as the form. This item is a supreme

masterpiece of artificing.”

Xu Yangyi restrained his fluctuating state of mind and continued to look carefully.

The item didn't seem to be exaggerated and was also absent of might, yet there was a kind of mystical-artifact-like sensation that rendered one unable to focus on it. It resembled a star in the black night, shining with incomparable clarity.

The arm's shoulder, elbow, and palm positions were indicated by the brush with three giant light motes that revolved around them. Xu Yangyi saw the diagram of a sword, an extremely elaborate but terribly fierce and strange sword!

The sword was concealed in the forearm. Apart from this, this arm didn't have any other weapons. As for the upper arm, there was actually a design for a pair of black machine wings after it unfolded!

These aspects were noted and pointed out at the side. The entire arm had tens to a hundred indicated attention points! It caused someone who didn't understand artificing to feel dizzy and light-headed with a glance. Yet after someone who understood artificing caught a glimpse, they would be unable to free themselves from this genius.

“I dare to say...” After ages, Gao Muya's voice slowly echoed. It was different from before. At this moment, his voice was brimming with passion and excitement, as if he was completely enthralled. “This... is the fucking grandest masterpiece in the history of artificing!”

“Come... Come look... This is the most valiant magik treasure prosthesis—the Ketu-Rahu Sword!”

“Its been decades... Even after I've had it for decades, I've never found someone that was compatible with it... The exquisiteness of its design, the terror of its might... It is practically... an object

created by an immortal! It has already shed itself from the possibility of modern craft! Only an ancient cultivator or perhaps an alien! Only an alien cultivator would be able to forge such a perfect work of art!”

Xu Yangyi stowed his gaze. As expected, as expected, this was the Ketu-Rahu Sword. Quan Ningyue had told him about its blueprint countless times. He merely hadn’t expected that this blueprint would be displayed in this type of manner.

Gao Muya also retrieved his gaze and looked at Xu Yangyi. Nonetheless, the expression he used to look at Xu Yangyi with wasn’t one that saw a person. Instead, he seemed to be judging an object that could sustain a burden.

Xu Yangyi wasn’t angry in the slightest. Furthermore, he wasn’t even somewhat shy. On the contrary, he generously allowed Gao Muya to observe him.

After an unknown passage of time, Gao Muya pulled back his gaze and nodded. Without saying a word, he gently snapped.

In a twinkling, the room flared with radiant lights and illuminated the interior with matchless clarity.

“Look up.” At this moment, Gao Muya seemed to regain his wits, pulling a chair over without the slightest care. He huffed and his butt landed on it.

Xu Yangyi looked up. In an instant, his gaze became solemn.

Above, there were twenty figures dressed in black clothes. Their standing positions appeared to be spread out thin, but a second look actually caused one to feel somewhat faint. This was evidently an extremely profound formation diagram.

Yet this wasn’t important at all. What was important was that each person’s hands were radiating white spiritual light. All of these rays converged into an ancient writing brush that was releasing a great amount of white light. As for this writing brush’s

tip, it emitted an even purer white light, a white light that was drafting the Ketu-Rahu Sword!

And at the other side, there were also twenty cultivations. In a similar vein, red light shot out from their hands to converge on a small seal. They guided the red light with full attention.

At this time, the brilliant shining appeared to be scattered in the room by an invisible separation. Xu Yangyi immediately detected two things.

The first: amidst steadiness, there was an obvious strain in these cultivators' auras. Evidently, this task was quite difficult for them.

The second... these cultivators were all Foundation Establishment cultivators! This blueprint was being outlined by forty Foundation Establishment Seniors!

“Young fellow, do you believe that the price I accept is high?” Gao Muya faced above and raised his chin. “Just on this work of making an inscription image, none who aren't Foundation Establishment can triumph in this task. And that's also you. Apart from you, other Qi Condensation cultivators wanted me to make this blueprint. Even if I was willing, these disciples under my command weren't!”

Xu Yangyi realized a third thing.

The Ketu-Rahu Sword... was expensive, very expensive. Expensive to a degree that he couldn't possibly bear.

“Inscription image?” Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows. There was another deep meaning in this word.

“According to what I know, an inscription image is also known as a ‘stone rubbing’. It takes the characters or images on a stone tablet or object and prints them on paper. In ancient times, durable tissues had to be soaked in advance and then spread on a stone tablet's surface. After the paper dried, a brush was dipped in ink. The ink was used to evenly spread and cover the paper.

Afterwards, the paper would be taken off.” He said thoughtfully: “Senior, if this word hasn’t been used incorrectly, then... the main part of the Ketu-Rahu Sword...”

“Stone?” Xu Yangyi’s eyes brightened, and he looked at Gao Muya who was already surprised beyond measure. Soon after, fortune blessed his mind, and he said astutely: “No! This can’t be stone. Left arm... Left arm... That’s right, that’s right!” He took a deep breath, his gaze looking straight at Gao Muya: “It’s not stone... It’s bone!”

“The original source that Daomaster Skybearer gave you was carved on bone! Right now, you’re trying to restore it! Am I right?!”

Swoosh! Gao Muya suddenly stood up and looked at Xu Yangyi in awe. After ages, he seemed as if he wanted to take out his shredded tobacco, yet he didn’t feel it after quite a while. He gnawed at his mouth as he deeply studied Xu Yangyi: “That girl Quan did say that you could divine three from one and your thought process was extremely fast... It really is... You’ve surprised me...”

“Clever. From a single word of mine, you actually guessed the truth behind the Ketu-Rahu Sword. Although... you were off by a point.”

Xu Yangyi laughed sincerely: “Please clarify things, Senior.”

Gao Muya looked at Xu Yangyi. After a brief moment, he then said: “I wasn’t originally planning on having you look at the original source... but now, I’ve got a new idea...”

He quickly waved his hand. In an instant, above the forty Foundation Establishment cultivators, an object hidden in the darkness finally released rays of faint light.

It... was an arm.

However, it wasn’t just the bones of an arm! It was a completely intact black bone with an extremely odd appearance. It wasn’t

clearly visible to the eye. Xu Yangyi shut his eyes and completely unleashed his spiritual sense. Yet as his spiritual sense extended outwards, he didn't see the shining eyes of Gao Muya besides him. Gao Muya deeply nodded.

“What powerful spiritual sense... Although it's nothing much to me... in the Qi Condensation realm, it's enough to be called powerful. It's at least a fifth greater than cultivators of the same stage, no, that's not right... This is... a fourth? No, a third? It's actually close to the Great Circle?”

Just as Xu Yangyi's spiritual sense shrouded the bone, a matching image had already emerged within his mind. It was a bone that was as long and thick as a normal person's. There wasn't a difference. But... the bone's shape was absolutely different!

A normal person's upper arm and forearm had two bones in each place. This arm bone... while it did have two bones, these bones were totally straight. Instead... they had the appearance of fried dough twists! These bones were mutually intertwined! Like the coiling roots of a withered tree!

Every inch of these tree roots were carved with talismans that Xu Yangyi simply didn't understand. Strangely, in the intersections of the “tree roots”, there were five distinct cavities. Inside... it seemed as if some object could be put in, or perhaps... something was placed there in the past.

“This isn't a human arm bone. It's more like a demon arm. More like a demon who cultivated a human form.” Positive, Xu Yangyi opened his eyes: “In addition, it's not a demonbeast that became a demon cultivator. Maybe it was a plant, stone, or something else.”

Gao Muya narrowed his eyes at him and eventually said: “It's a plant.”

“If it was a demonbeast, its bones wouldn't be able to move like this. It would agitate and break down its original spirit and flesh. Stone or some other non-biological form like water, clouds, and so

on have even lighter bones. The effect brought by this arm bone is merely the solidification of bodily reinforcement, so I deduced that this demon cultivator didn't have flesh or blood within them."

"How many holes are there?" Xu Yangyi asked.

"Maybe... it's the fruit born from a plant-type demon?" Gao Muya shook his head. "I haven't truly grasped the full extent of this detail, but concerning this arm, I have two points that I want to tell you."

"First." He raised a finger. "Its precise age before the present day is between 2,200 and 2,400 years."

"2,200 years..." Upon hearing this figure, Xu Yangyi's brows slightly furrowed. A few memories immediately surfaced due to the eidetic memory granted by the pill spirit. Those memories originated from Danxia Temple, from possibly the most ancient demon who had existed in the world to this day.

"2,200 years... 2,400 years..." Suddenly, Xu Yangyi's eyes brightened, and he lost his voice, whispering: "[The End of the Han dynasty!](#)"

"The End of the Han?" Gao Muya nodded: "That's right, it's the End of the Han. Why? You have a clue, young fellow?"

Xu Yangyi shook his head. The End of the Han... Xiaoqing had once said... on a certain day during the End of the Han, all ancient cultivators had vanished!

"Second." Gao Muya looked into Xu Yangyi's eyes: "This arm... was chopped off by someone."

Xu Yangyi's gaze violently sparked. Such a valiant demon of that era actually had their left arm chopped off by someone!

The Han dynasty had given rise to Daofather Zhang Daoling. The Han dynasty was when Buddhism entered China. The Han dynasty was when the hundred schools of thought were dismissed and Confucianism reigned supreme. At the same time the three super

sects gained a firm foothold, all cultivators had disappeared... In the end, what was this period concealing?

1. The exact chinese is 珍贵, where Xu Yangyi is putting emphasis on the character “expensive”. This entire word itself means “precious”. I guess kinda like saying “it puts the ‘ice’ in ‘ice cream’.”

2. End of the Han dynasty is historically dated as 189-220 CE

Chapter 259: The Ketu-Rahu Sword (3)

Xu Yangyi didn't give it much thought. The answer to this riddle was either alluring or harmful. Presently, even if he knew what this was, now still absolutely wasn't the time for him to take part in it. The Animus Armament seemed to uncover a great curtain of winding fog and coiling mist. He seemed to know what, but upon carefully pondering it, all he had was threads, an expanse of densely tangled threads within.

The room was somewhat quiet. Both Gao Muya and Xu Yangyi were left to their thoughts. After ages, Gao Muya actually took the initiative to speak. "Young fellow." He mumbled for a moment and said: "Have you ever heard of... forced possession?"

Xu Yangyi's gaze flashed. This word was far too ancient. Perhaps it could be said that in the modern cultivation world, this term was taboo.

Cultivators, even Qi Condensation cultivators, were able to project their spirit. A cultivator's spirit—or commonly referred to as soul—and will power far outstripped a mortal's in power. As many cultivators neared the end of their lifespan, they would store their spirit in some object. Once they came in contact with a person's body and entered it, they would immediately engulf the mortal's spirit. Thus, they were able to achieve reincarnation and re-cultivate.

After the Nation's Founding, the Cultivation Court promptly enacted a corresponding bill. Those who forcibly possessed would have their Hun and Po eternally suppressed, never to reincarnate. Moreover, all arcane efforts and divine abilities related to forced possession were burned away. Nowadays, the word "forced possession" was seldom seen.

Upon seeing Xu Yangyi's faint nodding, Gao Muya licked his lips with a wisp of irrepressible excitement. "Young fellow, forcibly

possessing this item all depends on willpower. On this level, there's no difference between high-level and low-level cultivators. If one side's willpower invades the other, both sides will engage in a battle to the death. However, one side has the support of the fleshly body, while the other side doesn't. So, the final conclusion usually sees that the forced possessor is defeated.”

“In order to reincarnate and re-cultivate, the forced possessor, this willpower, carries the other's most important memories. Such as... treasures, arcane efforts, divine abilities. Once the forced possession fails, all memories will be digested by the possessor!”

Xu Yangyi deeply studied Gao Muya: “You think that the willpower of the arm bone's owner might be hidden in this?”

“There's less than a 1% chance.” Gao Muya laughed: “But there's an even greater probability that there's nothing. That's because since this arm was chopped off, the situation back then must've been terribly dangerous. The arm's owner didn't have the time to use a willpower-placing divine ability. At that time, it could even be said that life and death hung in the balance, every single second to be seized. Second, even a more powerful willpower can't exist for 2,000 years. If the possessor's willpower vanishes, the memories are done for. In that case, you'll certainly take it with great convenience!”

“Why are you telling me these things, sir?” Xu Yangyi was silent for a while and calmly asked.

“What are you saying?” Gao Muya looked at Xu Yangyi and chuckled mischievously: “The bones of an ancient greater demon... or possibly the existence of a greater demon's memories... Could it be that you're not tempted one bit?”

Xu Yangyi didn't speak. Gao Muya's idea was obvious. He didn't want to make the Ketu-Rahu Sword's blueprint for Xu Yangyi. Instead... he wanted Xu Yangyi to try directly accessing the bone! Because of this, he spoke candidly to Xu Yangyi about such a

possible outcome.

At worst, if it truly was a greater demon's willpower, Xu Yangyi wouldn't be able to resist anyways. Then... the greater demon would borrow Xu Yangyi's body to be reborn! And Xu Yangyi would be forever stricken off from the face of the human realm!

Silence. Xu Yangyi didn't reply. Contemplating for a short period, he raised his head. "Senior, junior wishes to look at this arm."

With a smile yet not a smile, Gao Muya studied him. After ages, he nodded in admiration. "Even after listening to this crazy plan, you actually haven't run off. You really can be said to be recklessly daring..."

Xu Yangyi laughed: "In this world, there's nothing that doesn't carry risk. No matter what, everything always deserves a try."

Gao Muya gazed intently at him for a few seconds and said nothing more. With a wave of his hands, the white and red spiritual light in the sky came to a sudden halt. Immediately, the black arm slowly floated over. It was grabbed in Gao Muya's hand.

He laughed darkly. All of a sudden, qi rose sharply in his hand!

HUUUMMM! A domain of fiery-red brilliance radiated from his hand. In an instant, it formed a half-meter-long great hammer. The surface was carved with birds and beasts, and at both ends of the hammerhead, there was a fiery-red blaze and an icy-blue blaze. In a short moment, it caused one half of the room to scorch with heat waves and the other half to chill like winter.

"Young fellow... take a good look!" Gao Muya shouted and suddenly hammered down towards the arm!

Swish! In this twenty-meter-sized room, two red and blue qi waves suddenly towered and surged. Even if Gao Muya deliberate kept it away from Xu Yangyi, Xu Yangyi still felt each cell in his entire body clamoring in extreme danger!

This hammer... if it was targeted on him, he simply wouldn't survive!

BOOM!!! A loud noise blared! The hammer accurately struck the black arm bone without error. The entire room suddenly quaked! If this hammer smashed the ground, there was bound to be countless deep pits. Nonetheless, the black arm bone didn't even budge!

The qi shockwave hadn't even caused the table under the arm bone to tremble by a fraction!

Xu Yangyi's gaze slightly wavered. By touching it with his hand, Gao Muya was telling Xu Yangyi that if he had the the will, he would've long since forcibly possessed it since he had obtained the blueprints for so long. Yet this magik treasure's slam also told him that this arm's hardness level far transcended his expectations!

Gao Muya spoke no further. He bent his fingers and snapped, and the arm bone immediately flew over. It fell in front of Xu Yangyi.

Xu Yangyi's fingers carried a trace of extremely concentrated spiritual sense, light streaking across the arm. The possibility of forced possession absolutely wouldn't emerge without contact with his qi sea. Only when this arm was truly mounted, and he mobilized an arcane effort for the first time and joined with his qi sea, would he know whether or not this arm was dangerous.

The entire arm was light, very light. The texture was moreover incredibly strange. It wasn't truly bone, yet it wasn't a tree root at all. His palm carefully examined each location along the way.

Several tens of minutes later, he prepared to retract his hand, yet at this moment, he suddenly felt that his palm had become a little itchy. Such itchiness... was just like someone was mindlessly moving their little finger, like they were softly tracing it across his sensitive palm...

In a flash, his mind sounded the alarm. Xu Yangyi gasped in

surprise and quickly pulled his hand back!

Who was tracing across his palm? Who moved?

He hadn't moved; he was very certain! In that case, what was moving...

“FUCK!!!” Without warning, he shouted. He was drenched in cold sweat from head to toe! However, it was too late!

In a twinkling, a sensation of crisis ten thousand times more intense than Gao Muya swinging his magik treasure just now directly rushed Xu Yangyi's mind! At almost the same time, the palm of the deathly silent black arm bone actually grabbed onto Xu Yangyi's hand without pause!

“How is this possible?!” Gao Muya's incredulous cry of alarm was heard from the side. Both of his eyes saucered and his mouth was ajar. He looked at everything before him in shock!

That arm bone and Xu Yangyi's hand... ten fingers were locked together, simply not the slightest crack in between them!

“Impossible... This is impossible!” In his worry, Gao Muya was pouring with sweat. Nonetheless, he didn't know what to do at all! He had refined artifacts his entire life yet had never encountered such a situation!

A heavenly treasure... had actually... moved!

Xu Yangyi's chest suddenly heaved up and down. In this instant, all his qi had been sealed. He had never heard about this kind of scenario! It was never explained in any book, case file, or teaching materials! Furthermore... and more importantly...

He could feel the blood inside his body boiling. Together with this strange black arm, it was actually... resonating!!! Like a child coming across its mother!

Soon afterwards, in less than a second, countless scenes flooded into Xu Yangyi's mind like a tide! Like so, he maintained his

posture from moments prior. Even the expression in his eyes hadn't changed. He calmly stood there in place.

His consciousness seemed to be in an extremely distant space, looking over these images with a god's perspective.

He saw... a grand expanse. An odd stone forest stood at the ground. Profound talismans were carved on the floor, each one several tens of meters in size. Six monstrous cauldrons floated in the air. These six cauldrons... were very peculiar. One of them was the familiar four-sided four-legged cauldron. It was carved with an untold number of totems. The others could no longer be said to be cauldrons. Xu Yangyi could see that one of them was a bone... a demon beast bone no less than several meters in size! Yet at its side, a seemingly compass-like item was vaguely concealed.

Xu Yangyi's line of sight was swiftly pulled. He saw in these cauldrons' surroundings... hundreds of cultivators!

"Puh!" At the same time he saw this image, all his blood and qi billowed over and over. He couldn't control himself from spraying out a mouthful of blood!

"Kid!" Gao Muya's eyes were reddened. He wasn't worried about Xu Yangyi but rather worried that such an anomaly had occurred with this greatest masterpiece in artificing history! Why hadn't it happened to him?

"What's going on with you?"

Xu Yangyi didn't reply. Presently, his soul seemed to leave his body. External objects were left simply unseen. He could only see these fragmented scenes in his mind.

What caused him to cough blood were these hundreds of cultivators... Even if he glanced at them in a memory, any one of them brought his foundation to instability. He saw... everyone standing in the air, a domain of black primordial chaos behind them. Countless black crows flew out. There was someone

standing on a qilin. He held the air of an immortal and the Dao was entrenched in his bones. There was a thin and frail old woman sitting upright on a flying skull that was over ten meters in size. Two green flames roved in the skull's eye sockets, going straight to the horizon.

In memories, realm couldn't be sensed. However, intuition told him that any one of these people was a powerhouse that could almost contend with Xiaoqing! There was no "why". It was merely like this because of bodily sensation and the feelings he gained from the scene!

Swish! The scene turned again. He saw... a light beam bounding towards the heavens!

This light beam... perhaps it attained a scope of a hundred kilometers! And in this light beam... there was a bridge of heaven and earth!

Still, bridge wasn't appropriate. To state it exactly, it was a flight of stairs... A stairwell to heaven! And these cultivators seemed to be waiting on this stairwell to take shape!

"Young fellow! Kid! Wake up!!!" Amidst his haziness, a familiar voice echoed at his ear side, faintly discernible. He suddenly exhaled. As cold sweat saturated his clothes, and he turned back from these scenes.

His mind was spinning in dizziness. The final scene was too dreadful... These were ancient cultivators? They were so strong... that even separated by thousands of years and observed from another space, they caused one's heart to tremble in fear! Yet so many ancient cultivators that could compare with Xiaoqing had come together... Why?

This... was surely the memory remnants of the arm's master. If so... in other words... this was the End of the Han, the Han dynasty's end... was when all cultivators disappeared? Could it be... that they had walked up that stairwell? Yet where did that

stairwell lead?

In Xu Yangyi's minds, these questions flitted past almost uncontrollably until he felt his temples swell with pain. Two hands kneaded his temples. He then opened his eyes.

In front of him was a field of golden flowers. His complexion was pale, and he was gritting his teeth, wishing to speak. All of a sudden, he fell into a daze.

Two hands...

Just now... his temples were being massaged by two hands!

Chapter 260: The Ketu-Rahu Sword (4)

Xu Yangyi stubbornly roused his mind and immediately looked towards his left arm in shock. However, he actually discovered that the arm bone was already growing from where his arm had been severed!

At this moment, the black severed arm... truly seemed like a living organism! No... right now, it WAS a living organism! This was because the stunned expression in Xu Yangyi's eyes saw that in the place his wound and the arm bone interfaced, the arm bone seemed to be creeping in sliver by sliver. It didn't require Gao Muya to take action. To his surprise, the arm was joining completely together with him!

"Alive... Alive... It's alive! IT'S ALIVE!!!" Gao Muya was even more shocked than he was, his entire body quivering. He pointed at the arm bone and involuntarily cried out in surprise. In the sky, the forty Foundation Establishment cultivators looked on together with eyes wide, yet they didn't even give voice to a single cry of alarm.

The scene before their eyes was too strange. This remnant from the end of the Han dynasty over 2,000 years ago was actually alive! Like a plant in a false-death state, it totally covered Xu Yangyi's left arm!

A heavenly treasure that could survive for so long... had never been heard of! Yet it was also never heard... that a demon's arm bone was actually a living organism!

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath. Compared with Gao Muya he took hold of himself and calmed down much faster. Although he didn't want to admit some things, he knew it existed.

Such as... when his entire body sprouted tree leaves when he was at the Four Great Joint Pools.

And when... he had stuffed up Wei Zhongxian's mouth, a vine had shot out from his hand.

He had never investigated what on earth these things were. Perhaps the answer was obvious or maybe it wasn't like Li Zongyuan had said. He was unwilling to look into it. He couldn't look into it.

If he truly was like that, then what was he considered?

Xu Yangyi had buried these questions in the deepest abyss at the bottom of his heart. He never touched upon these matters and avoided doing so. His thoughts that involved these matters were subconsciously by-passed at once.

But now, he simply couldn't coil around them. Yes, Gao Muya didn't have any reaction towards it, but he had resonated with this arm. There was a chance... Only this reason!

Two demons who had achieved essence from plants... didn't mutually reject each other!

Xu Yangyi didn't speak, his face heavy like water. He tried moving his left arm yet discovered that it was perfectly effortless, like how the arm moved the finger. There wasn't a shred of unnaturalness.

"Branchmaster... Xu?" Gao Muya forced himself to calm down and asked shakily. Indeed, he dared not confirm who the person in front of him was at this moment.

In that instant moments ago, Xu Yangyi's reaction was like he had suffered a forced possession. It wasn't a question... that the person before him could exterminate him ten thousand times!

"Senior." Xu Yangyi stowed his gaze. "It's me."

Gao Muya made a long sigh in relief. He studied Xu Yangyi's arm incredulously. "Why... This is impossible... I've refined artifacts all my life. There's no demonbeast or demon cultivator bone that I haven't encountered, but I've never seen such a weird object..."

Xu Yangyi gazed deeply at his left arm. After a brief moment, he said lowly: “Senior, this... is the Ketu-Rahu Sword?”

He didn’t feel a scrap of might. Presently, it only allowed him to form seals again and nothing more.

Gao Muya looked at him in astonishment. “Don’t tell me... you’re not worried?”

“Things have already come this far, what’s the use in worrying?” Xu Yangyi laughed wryly as he looked at the black left arm bone. “What junior is more worried about... is what will happen once I take it.”

Gao Muya was dazed, and his expression immediately became respectful. He actually cupped hands towards Xu Yangyi. “If young friend says so, then this old man is the same.”

“This really isn’t the Ketu-Rahu Sword.” As Gao Muya finished speaking these words, his expression was already towering like a high mountain, free and at ease. “The so-called Ketu-Rahu Sword uses this object as the framework. With the addition of artificing and talismans, these two Daos harmonize and form a supreme magik artifact. There’s only one kind of its attack capability, that’s the short sword hidden in the arm bone.”

“But... while it may seem to be only be this sword, its might far transcends other sword arts! According to the blueprint, all the nodes on the arm bone create a resonance with this sword. Once it’s unsheathed... Forget it, even if you listened to these specialty matters, you still wouldn’t understand. You only need to remember that this treasure contains a sword, a shield, and wings. This trio of arcane efforts: attack, defense, and speed unite into one. Each one’s might is unconditionally beyond any Qi Condensation magik artifact! It could even be called... a Qi Condensation magik treasure!”

“Qi Condensation magik treasure?” Xu Yangyi’s gaze brightened, and he looked at his black left arm bone and questioned.

“That’s right. Although it’s a magik artifact... its level of hardness, arcane effort capability, and function are enough to match a late-stage Foundation Establishment magik treasure! It can be said to be the greatest killing tool in the Qi Condensation realm! There’s nothing like it! Originally, its selection conditions were quite harsh. I had already drawn up for you a set of screening procedures ranging from the physical body to spiritual sense, but now I see...”

He eyed Xu Yangyi’s left arm complicatedly and sighed. He spoke no further.

Disaster and fortune relied upon each other. Disaster and fortune could mutually shelter the other... Such weird circumstances that not even he had seen. He truly didn’t know... whether this was fortune or disaster...

Xu Yangyi nodded but didn’t think himself to be unrivaled in the Qi Condensation realm because of this at all. An even better sword could only become famous if placed in the hands of a supreme swordsman. There were never sayings heard about some cultivator becoming unchallenged in the world after gaining some strange treasure. Things weren’t so simple as having a bladed weapon to reign absolute.

All living things in the world were relative to each other. The Ketu-Rahu Sword’s might was so powerful. A corresponding mobilization of qi would attain a horrific numeric value.

Or perhaps... he only had a single blow’s possibility. Furthermore, this blow had to be selected from among the three forms of sword, shield, and wings. If the slightest error occurred in situational judgement, it would lead to a terrible aftermath.

“What’s required?” Xu Yangyi settled his mind and continued to ask.

“First of all... the Ketu-Rahu Sword is a magik treasure. Only because you haven’t stepped into the late stage of Foundation

Establishment is it only a magik artifact. This is considering that you aren't capable of mobilizing a magik treasure's spiritual force." Speaking about his speciality, the passion in Gao Muya's eyes roiled and heated up a little bit more. "So if you want to forge this treasure, you must have a magik treasure embryo. Greater hardness is better. This is for making upgrade preparations later on. As of now, you can't obtain this kind of item. The Featherwood Guard's merit system also doesn't have real good magik treasures. In order to pair up with this thousand-year-old bone, you can go ask Daomaster Ancient... Young friend, do you have something you want to say?"

Xu Yangyi nodded and said with a smile yet not a smile: "But I want to keep a few things secrets."

"Sure." Gao Muya waved his hand. In the blink of an eye, the sky screen vanished from sight. All that was seen was the room's roof.

Xu Yangyi laughed: "A magik treasure embryo? The harder, the better?"

"That's right." Gao Muya sat in his chair with a loud whoosh and his eyes also started to curve. With a snap, red jade chest appeared out of nowhere. "You can't get such an item with your status, but after that girl Quan told me on the phone, I've got a collection here... W-W-What is this?! How could you have something like this?!"

In the next second, multicolored brilliance illuminated the room. Before Gao Muya's voice had even fallen, he had already charged over a step and wrested away the fist-sized five-colored stone that appeared in Xu Yangyi's hand. The wrinkles on his face were trembling in disarray and his beard was disheveled as if it was in the wind. He wanted to toss and turn the stone over, yet he simply dared not use a great margin of strength, fearing that the beautiful dream before his eyes would crumble!

"Heavenmend Stone... Heavenmend Stone?! There's actually a

piece THIS big in the world?! I can't even buy a gram for a hundred thousand spirit stones! Y-You actually have such a large piece!!! Impossible... This is a dream... This has to be a dream!!!”

Even the faint trace of a grand master's aura had entirely disappeared from Gao Muya's body. He himself wasn't a grand master that placed a lot of importance in style, but this Heavenmend Stone in front of him caused him to completely forget himself!

A grand artificer's ultimate dream wasn't to be wealthy or have a great realm. Instead, it was to create a divine artifact that had never existed! To touch the myriad precious materials in the world! And the Heavenmend Stone was absolutely considered a precious object among precious objects! It was no exaggeration to say that it was supreme, like the best scholars who passed the imperial examination!

“Senior.” Xu Yangyi's voice dragged Gao Muya out from his extreme excitement: “This Heavenmend Stone will be my magik treasure embryo, how about it?”

“AN EXTRAVAGANT WASTE!!!” Just as Xu Yangyi's voice fell, he was interrupted by Gao Muya's furious howl: “A gram of Heavenmend Stone can upgrade a magik treasure by one level! 100% success!!! How many artificers have only heard of this name?! I originally didn't even that this object existed! But my master saw it somewhere once! But that time... it was only the size of a fingernail! Besides that one time, I've never seen it in my 170-plus years of cultivation to this day! How many people haven't heard of it?! You actually want to use all of it to forge a prime magik treasure?!”

“This item... how about selling it to this old man?” Finished bellowing, he immediately switched over to a smile, actually sitting in front of Xu Yangyi with a smile on his face. Like an elderly neighbor, he tugged at Xu Yangyi's hand, his words meaningful and heartfelt: “As long as you sell it to me, I won't take

a cent this time! And, I'll promise you three conditions! As long as you say something, I'll do it!"

"Senior..."

"Plus! I defend you until half-step Core Formation! No one will dare to act against you! As long as you nod, I'll immediately call a reporters' conference! What do you think?!"

"Senior, I've already made up my mind." Xu Yangyi shook his head. "The Heavenmend Stone will be my prime magik treasure."

Xu Yangyi's expression was staunch. Gao Muya took a long sigh, but just as he was about to open his mouth, Xu Yangyi followed and said: "But, after the forging is done, I can give senior the rest of the Heavenmend Stone."

What?!

Having already just fallen to the valley floor, Gao Muya began to laugh again very soon and said quickly: "Then it would be impolite for old me to refuse."

There wasn't even a form of rejection! Gao Muya was afraid that Xu Yangyi would change his tune!

"I can handle business and give you a 50% discount this time." In a flash, the Heavenmend Stone ignited all of Gao Muya's fighting spirit. He clasped his tea cup and laughed: "Not to speak of me digging out my sect, the Ketu-Rahu Sword can be said to be the most powerful bodily magik treasure since the Nation's Founding. How can it just stop at one required material? The Heavenmend Stone will be used to thoroughly transform this arm bone into a magik treasure. I guarantee that after the Heavenmend Stone and this arm bone is fused, its durability... might directly pressure a Core Formation master's magik treasure!"

"But, this is only the 'bone' material. An arm absolutely just can't be the framework. Below, we'll have to talk about 'flesh'." He laughed as he set down the tea cup: "This requires spirit plants, the

higher the grade, the better. Plants that can act as a bodily magik artifact's skin. No limit on the more perfect it is. Little girl Quan's skin is almost all A-rank spirit plants. Right now, you still can't obtain these spirit plants."

Xu Yangyi nodded. "Is there a requirement on size?"

Chapter 261: Doraemon

“No.” Gao Muya muttered: “Even if I spoke about artificing items, you still wouldn’t understand. The arm is divided into three sections. The upper arm, the forearm, and the hand. You need three apex spirit plants... The Heavenmend Stone will be the Ketu-Rahu Sword’s core. Using other low-grade materials would only dishonor it. This Throne still has some items here...”

He pondered for a brief moment: “Fifty years ago, I forged a supreme-grade magik treasure for the Capital’s Cao Clan. They once gave me a branch of Seven-Jeweled Enlightenment Flower. I seem to still have three petals...”

He paused and gently coughed: “But, if you buy materials from me here, this discount... will naturally rise a bit. I’m not boasting, but there aren’t many of these items in the entire cultivation world... W-W-What is this?!”

Without warning, he jumped and rushed over, forcefully capturing Xu Yangyi’s hand. However he was careful and gentle as he took the three green leaves little by little from Xu Yangyi’s hand as his lips quivered.

These were the last three remaining tree leaves of the Godblood Tree from Daomaster Yue from the day of the auction!

There just happened to be three pieces!

“What is this...” Gao Muya’s voice was shaking like a thread: “I’ve never seen this... but I can feel... that i-it surpasses all the spirit plants I’ve ever seen... It’s simply... simply not like any organism from Earth...”

“Senior.” Xu Yangyi smiled: “Junior also doesn’t know what this item is. But whether it’s enough...”

“It’s enough! It’s absolutely enough!!!” Gao Muya flatly interrupted him, his eyes locked fixedly on the three tree leaves. In

his eyes, Xu Yangyi's figure was essentially absent. "Young friend... if there are leftovers..."

"The remainder will naturally be a reward."

Gao Muya took a deep sigh of relief. To him, having once touched so many precious objects, this opportunity... was too rare! Any true artificer would be unable to resist such enticement! It was practically akin to an addict's fatal attraction towards drugs!

Just because of this, Xu Yangyi had taken out these things.

Satisfying... Gao Muya felt somewhat lost of strength as he leaned on a chair. Too satisfying... The Heavenmend Stone was enough to cross and please his addiction. Now, there was still these three nameless tree leaves. He was already impatient to "take action" against Xu Yangyi.

His prep work still hadn't been completed. Gao Muya had never felt so bothered and vexed because of prep work. If more heavenly treasures converged, like these high-grade heavenly treasures, it would be enough to rile him up so much that he wouldn't be able to sleep soundly through the night. Presently, he only had the desire to immediately act! Who would still be willing to do prep work!

From his chair, he braced the upper half of his body and laughed amicably: "Based on these three tree leaves... I can decide... to give you a 60% discount."

"But." His smile vanished, and he looked at Xu Yangyi with full attention. "Any magik treasure or magik artifact requires a core. A similar item you must find. Your master-ancestor is Daomaster Ancientpine. While you may not have it, his reserves certainly will!"

"Please speak plainly, senior." Xu Yangyi cupped his hands and asked.

"Sword." Gao Muya mumbled and said: "The full might of the

Ketu-Rahu Sword is all in this sword. It has to be able to bear the qi flow of the Heavenmend Stone and the three green leaves... It's because of such tremendous qi flow that it can explode with its true power. A sword like this is almost non-existent below Core Formation. Even those past few... should've been obtained from Danxia Temple. Young fellow... this harvest... would even turn the eyes of Core Formation Dao Masters red... You... You!"

Gao Muya's voice came to a halt, a terrible mess. He glared hard at Xu Yangyi, his lips opening and closing. His gaze on Xu Yangyi's face had shifted over to the other's hand.

There, a damaged sword point was held.

Silence. After several minutes passed, Gao Muya looked at Xu Yangyi, the crook of his mouth twitching as he said: "I once watched an anime when I had time off. Its name was '[Doraemon](#)'... Young fellow, you really are..."

"Senior, what do you think about this sword point?" Xu Yangyi coughed dryly and pulled back to the main topic. Nonetheless, before his voice even died, the sword point disappeared from his hand with a swoosh!

Gao Muya's prior feeling of dejection was swept cleanly away. He was a magnificent grand artificer, yet his treasury had actually been defeated by a Qi Condensation cultivator! This simply rendered him incredulous! He wished he could slap Xu Yangyi and kick him out, and yet... he was begrudging to do so.

The treasures in Xu Yangyi's gave him a rush of excitement. He dared to guarantee that it wasn't just him though! Even Core Formation ancestors would value them at a glance! In the same vein, this sword was like this!

Gao Muya summoned his absolute attention and studied the sword tip. He felt a kind of sensation that made his heart run cold. It wasn't power... This sword point's power was already more or less exhausted, but it could cause serious harm to late-stage

Foundation Establishment cultivators. Nonetheless, what caused his heart to turn cold wasn't this.

What is it... He furrowed his brows and contemplated for a brief moment. All of a sudden, his eyes shone!

Holy!

Yes... He took a deep breath incredulously. Holy might... even a sword point caused his hairs to stand on edge.

“Young fellow...” He muttered to himself and said: “where did you get this sword point from?”

Xu Yangyi didn't respond and instead asked: “Senior, is there something wrong with this sword point?”

Gao Muya didn't speak and gazed at Xu Yangyi with fixed eyes. After ages, he nodded. “Remember, you can't allow anyone else to see this sword point... Although I don't know what this is, its surface might doesn't allow my qi to pass through it.”

Xu Yangyi nodded, yet the wisp of a smile gently curved at the crook of his mouth.

If he hadn't guessed incorrectly, this sword point was a counterfeit of the Xuan-Yuan Sword! Furthermore... this action was him testing the waters, tossing a stone ahead to see the path beyond!

If his left arm was strange, then why couldn't he use poison to fight poison? He would use this even stranger object to suppress it!

The true complete form of the Animus Armament was hanging over his chest. The counterfeit wasn't comparable to it by any measure or pace. Its murderous aura and valor... to put things in perspective, he felt great terror as he looked at the counterfeit. But... if there was a showdown between this sword point and the Animus Armament's true form, he wouldn't even have the thought of resistance!

This was a difference of nature!

The Animus Armament's true form... was even above the Xuan-Yuan Sword counterfeit! Back then in Danxia Temple, that scene which seemed to split the heavens and earth apart, of Yin and Yang granting life to the Four Divisions and the Four Divisions giving birth to the Eight Trigrams, already proved its might.

A sword of absolute bravery! A sword of Killing Dao!

"This item also really complements the Heavenmend Stone and the Godblood Tree Leaves well. It's even above the others."

"Young fellow..." At this time, Gao Muya's incredibly complex voice rang out: "I see the look on your face... What are you thinking... Do you still... truly have this item?"

Xu Yangyi regained his wits and cupped his fist in respect: "Junior is only thinking, that's all."

"Is that right?" Having gone through two shocks, Gao Muya was obviously unconvinced. To him, a good core was also incredibly important. Furthermore, the Ketu-Rahu Sword would likely be the most classical piece of legacy workmanship that he had ever forged!

"That's right." Xu Yangyi looked into Gao Muya's eyes. A few seconds later, Gao Muya pulled his gaze back.

"Forget about it... You have it... You certainly have it!!! You absolutely do! You [robot cat](#)... forget it, nevermind... Putting the sword in is only the final step. Since you don't want me to know, I won't force it... but..." He said with a kind of extremely bewitching voice: "If... you give that sword to me, I... can do this for you free of charge."

Xu Yangyi laughed: "I really don't have this."

"Hehehe..." Gao Muya laughed dryly, sending a few rather ill glances at Xu Yangyi as he glared. Holding his cup of tea, he pointed at the door: "Scram! The work cost is 300,000 medium-

grade spirit stones, this is still a 60% discount! When the funds get here, I'll start the work!"

"Thank you, senior." Xu Yangyi laughed and bowed. Just as he was about to leave, Gao Muya's voice suddenly rang out again.

"Slow down."

"Is there something else, senior?"

Gao Muya seemed to want to say something but hesitated. He paused for a long time and then sighed faintly: "Do you know why I've been so busy recently?"

"Junior doesn't." Xu Yangyi was somewhat confused. What connection was there between him and a grand artificer's business?

Silence once more. After no less than three minutes passed, Gao Muya gently placed his tea cup down and a clattering noise rang out. He said dimly: "Recently... two clans have been requesting me to restore a few things."

"Have you ever heard about the Spirit Accumulation Cannon?" He fished out his pipe and lit it unhurriedly, as if he was narrating someone else's story: "Its power... is equal to a half-step Foundation Establishment cultivator's full-powered strike. There was a lineage... that placed an order for 300 of these cannons."

With a deep drag, smoky threads of cherry-flavored tobacco pervaded the room. Amidst the winding smoke, he crossed one of his legs over the other and said slowly: "Then have you heard about Spirit Chart Armors and Evil Resistor Blades?"

Xu Yangyi shook his head, but his face was already heavy like water. He guessed a few things.

"This item... Its price isn't cheap. They have no other function. They can only increase a cultivator's defensive, offensive, and supplementary divine abilities by 5%." He glanced at Xu Yangyi. "Can you guess the amount?" Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to answer,

he followed up: “You can’t...”

“472.” He gently rapped a table: “In addition, a Flamedragon Master Cannon that can raze everything to the ground in a 2.5 kilometer radius, and 70 Divinewind Crossbows... and this is just me here. According to what my other talisman and pill elixir friends are saying, they’re getting orders for defensive, offensive, and invisibility formations and so on... Just in these two or three days, they’ve sold a thousand scrolls. Their reserves have been emptied out. They’re even trying to catch up with production now.”

He studied Xu Yangyi’s eyes. “How many grand masters have received contracts for millions of spirit stones in these two or three days? Do you know what this is?”

Xu Yangyi nodded, his expression grave.

Gao Muya leaned in his chair and looked up at the ceiling. “This is war...”

“A true war of cultivators... and its not just one clan participating. All the participants are first-rate clans or above... Otherwise, they wouldn’t be able to settle so much capital... There’s no way that the conflict scope will be small. They wouldn’t prepare so completely if it weren’t... hehe, Flamedragon Master Cannon... Spirit Accumulation Cannon... Is this their plan to level a province to the ground?”

It appeared that Gao Muya was chatting to himself, but Xu Yangyi already had a full understanding of what the other was saying!

War! War was on the verge of arrival! A war of cultivators to contest over who had the authority of speech in Longsu Province! A war where he would be truly facing off against cultivation clans! It was on the eve being totally pulled open!

When the time came, his opponents would no longer be mere

geniuses but rather the clans behind these geniuses... and the vassal clans under their control!

And he... only had several people! An extra formation! Added on with the incomplete Ketu-Rahu Sword!

However, one suspicion had always existed in his mind from beginning to end. Back then, Daomaster Ancientpine had mentioned these things to him without going into much detail. And that was... the meaning of a heavenly paradise? What was the true secret behind the qi reparation?

Jadesun hadn't said anything and neither had Daomaster Ancientpine, yet both of these words were enough to trigger such a large-scale cultivator war. If so... they absolutely weren't simple!

1. Doraemon is a famous anime character and also the name of this program that this character is in. This reference is more so point to the fact that Doraemon has all kinds of gadgets for different situations.

2. "Robot Cat". Another Doraemon reference. Doraemon is a robot cat.

Chapter 262: Assassination and Warning

“Thank you for the warning, senior.” Xu Yangyi cupped his hands. “But why are they doing this?”

Gao Muya replied with a smile that wasn't a smile: “Haven't you guessed?”

“Heavenly paradise.” Xu Yangyi said these words without the slightest hesitation and looked into Gao Muya's eyes. “Senior Brother once mentioned these words to me... but said that I shouldn't know about them. It seems that a heavenly paradise isn't as simple as I believed on that day.”

“Hehe... you're pretty smart.” Gao Muya didn't give an affirmative answer: “Some things... that the eyes see are nothing but illusions... The movement of heart is inferior to the movement of action. Why not go investigate?”

The light of Xu Yangyi's eyes faintly glimmered. Jadesun had brought these words to his attention again and again. It seemed... that it was far more complex than he imagined. So complex that it caused great clans to set off a cultivator war!

Due to his insufficient gap in worldly view and realm, he was ignorant. There were too many things that he had no way of knowing.

“Look carefully... Clarify what you're up against and come back here.” Gao Muya said: “In sixth months, the Ketu-Rahu Sword will be completely finished.”

Xu Yangyi nodded: “Senior... why are you being so special to me?”

“Yes... why?” Gao Muya gazed at the ceiling, seemingly pensive. After ages, he laughed: “Just an investment.”

“I think highly of you.” He turned his head and looked at Xu Yangyi. “Anyone capable of leaving Danxia Temple alive isn't a

normal person in themselves... Little girl Quan is my beloved disciple. When I heard she also entered Danxia Temple, I was originally planning to slap you dead... I didn't expect... she would actually survive unharmed..."

"Right now, you're still pretty young and inexperienced. If I don't make an investment now, will I still be waiting to later?" He laughed: "Embroidering a lily is easy, sending charcoal during snowfall is hard. Besides, what have I invested?"

"The cost I charged you is still the same I should accept. It's just a few more words... Such a broad-scale operation can't be kept in the dark in front of grand masters. Don't tell me that they dare to question us? A jest. But sooner or later, you'll know about the qi reparation. It's just a question of time."

"So..." Gao Muya waved his hand: "go. This time, things won't be the slightest bit easier than your journey in Danxia Temple... Maybe against all kinds of illusions and demonbeasts you still managed to stay alive, but against cultivators... as long as you lose an arm, there's absolutely no chance of survival. War is cruel like this. And a war between humans is even more merciless than any racial conflict..."

Xu Yangyi cupped his hands. Gao Muya couldn't say more. However, Xu Yangyi also understood that while the current situation appeared to be calm and still like winds and waves, there were some things covered below the cloudbank that he still couldn't clearly see.

"I'll have to handle other business as fast as I can." Walking out of the courtyard house's entrance, he raised his head and looked at the sky. At some unknown time, the sky had already become densely covered in dark clouds. Silver-white electric dragons roamed the clouds.

"First, I'll go straight to look at the SSS-rank demonbeast handbook." In his mind, he surmised everything he was going to

do next. He pondered to and fro about this matter. Although there was a chance that he couldn't succeed, it wasn't impossible for him not to!

This was the greatest thirst in his heart. The blood enmity of his parents had always been the true origin that motivated his unflagging advance.

He dared not forget for a single day.

"Second..." His gaze flashed: "I have to find out, get a clean understanding of things... Why do the lineages consider this time so important?"

"Master-Ancestor didn't say so in detail and Grandmaster Gao couldn't say more. Qi reparation... Heavenly paradise... Both of these things were actually able to cause the cultivation world such shock. Master-Ancestor assigned me to this, but I don't know what to do. Once this war starts, I'll be at a disadvantage."

He nodded firmly: "[Know yourself and know your enemy. Only then will you be a hundred times victorious in a hundred battles.](#)"

Soon after, Xu Yangyi laughed wryly. He had believed himself to be already quite rich, but unexpectedly, he still couldn't be considered wealthy in comparison to a clan's financial resources... At most, he could be thought of as well-off.

Presently, the question wasn't how to triumph in every battle. The issue was the pittance of manpower at his command, and he obviously couldn't buy each major A-rank Legion in Longsu Province. The question was how to integrate.

If the whole integration wasn't good... the opposing party's first wave offensive would claim his life!

In his contemplations, the corner of his eye suddenly jumped. Strange... the surrounding pedestrians were gradually decreasing. Furthermore...

"Sigh..." He took a deep breath and stopped his footsteps. The

environment... all the mortals, he had seen all of them.

Jingle... A cart that sold [stuffed pancakes](#) slowly drove by. Xu Yangyi's icy-cold eyes followed the vehicle as it went further away. A thousand meters away from him, another identical vendor cart slowly came.

His gaze swept past little by little. On the left side, a woman wearing a black windbreaker was standing in front of a kiosk. And another thousand meters away, there was the same kiosk, the same black-clothed woman, and the same movement infinitely looping.

“A Looping Illusion. Seamlessly joined.” He inhaled deeply, and his right arm raised up alone and made a boxing stance in front of his chest. He didn't budge half a step and stood in his original position. His spiritual sense that could cover 300 meters was completely unleashed and formed an absolute defense in his environment.

“Come out.” His expression was motionless, but his gaze was like an eagle's, running through everything in his surroundings. “How long do you venture that you maintain this Looping Illusion?”

No one responded. Xu Yangyi licked his lips: “Twenty minutes? Half an hour?”

Still, no one answered. A bloodthirsty smile curved at the crook of his mouth. Like a stone carving, he stood in place, not making a single move. The opponent was looking for a gap in his defenses. He was also searching for the other's true body. Inevitably, one side would act first.

The first peddler cart passed and so did the second cart. These scenes that he had seen before repeated several times. Fifteen minutes had already went by.

Jingle... The tricycle towing a glass box from behind came. On the surface, the plastic-paper words for “stuffed pancakes” were glued on. The cycling peddler yelled as he slowly rode by: “Stuffed

pancakes, selling stuffed pancakes.”

The same voice and same appearance. However, in the instant that this vendor passed Xu Yangyi’s side, the glass box exploded! Shards of broken glass mingled with rays of qi rushed straight at him!

On the sixteenth minute, this invisible enemy had finally chosen to take the lead and act!

Without the slightest hesitation, Xu Yangyi leaped back. At the same time, he analyzed his situation with lightning speed in his brain! It was known that his left arm was already wasted and he was unable to form seals or use divine abilities at all. Only then had this foe decided to assassinate him...

Furthermore... he inhaled deeply, and his gaze swept across his surroundings.

This place was the Capital! Leaving aside the Cultivation Court’s upper and lower presidents, half-step Nascent Soul and Great Circle Foundation Establishment, the Capital was a tiny piece of land. They could sweep over it completely with one eye! Even Ancestor Hiddenscent, who kept watch over the Capital, could easily prevent such a secret assassination if she wanted to. It would cost no more strength than blowing away dust.

However, there wasn’t a bit of a response! There was only one explanation... The acting clan had already went through some protocol that caused these figures to tacitly approve this matter. The law was nothing else but favor and friendship. Since ancient times to the modern day, China was never a society truly ruled by law.

But!

A cruel smile hung at the corner of Xu Yangyi’s mouth. He was afraid that this opponent simply didn’t know that the present him... could form seals!

Swoosh! In reality, these thoughts only occurred in a flash of lightning. As Xu Yangyi swiftly retreated, the tricycle peddler suddenly bounded up, not uttering a word. His originally normal face started to move forward and protrude. In a twinkling, the clothes on his body shredded into pieces, and arms grew out from his back with a crack. In less than five seconds, the peddler became a giant spider no less than twenty meters long, but his eight feet were humans hands. The demon was already rushing towards Xu Yangyi in midair!

Crash! Eight giant feet quickly moved on the ground. In short time, trenches that were visible to the naked eye took shape. The tremendous and ugly mouthparts of the spider carried nauseating saliva. Like two blade edges, they chomped with razor speed!

Xu Yangyi's expression didn't make the most minute ripple. He had already experienced too many mortal situations. In particular, the present moment was still far from reaching the true juncture of life and death

In his hand, a blaze ignited. It was weak, far from attaining the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus's level when he was flourishing with power. Because his left arm had been ruined, the magnitude of a full cycle of cultivation had been stopped. The barely remaining qi inside his body was pitifully lacking.

Swoosh. The blaze flung out easily and pervaded all around in a matter of moments! And yet, it didn't even have the shape of a dragon. However, its horrible temperature still caused the giant spider to stop in its tracks.

"Hiss!" At this time, the spider screeched, and its body oddly fell over in the air to Xu Yangyi's surprise. The demon's massive abdomen was aimed at him. Encompassing the entire sky, white spider silk came churning out at full force in an instant!

Boom! The spider silk and the blaze clashed. Everything transformed into flying ash. The spider's eyes flashed, and its

upper body raised up high. It issued a heaven-shaking cry!

“HISS!!!”

The sonorous roar caused the air to tremble! A cultivator who's lost their qi is nothing more than prey. That move just now was the Ten Cardinals Red Lotus, one of the supreme skills that made Branchmaster Xu famous... but it only had this level of power. Today... he's definitely going to die at my hands!

The creature stood up like a man, Its four back legs propped on the ground and Its four front claws actually beginning to form seals!

A black ripple started to tremble in the demon's hands. A trace of emotion that could even be said to be joyous surfaced in the spider's small eyes. Late-stage Qi Condensation... Such a young late-stage Qi Condensation! Was about to die in his hands!

Xu Yangyi's gaze was heavy. He didn't advance nor retreat, but in that stride just now, he unexpectedly discovered that he couldn't move! At some unknown time, the ground was covered in spider silk! This webbing firmly bound his feet.

“Kekeke...” Sharp numbing laughter came from the spider's ugly mouth, and It crowed: “Suffer death!”

Just as the demon's voice fell, a speck of cold golden light streaked across the air like a shooting star trying to chase the moon, a flying immortal beyond the heavens!

In this same moment, somewhere in this illusion, black eyes that had been watching since the beginning flashed as well, completely recording this scene.

An incredulous look floated into the spider's small eyes. In this instant, golden muslin awesomely filled the sky. On the ground, golden lotus flowers quietly grew!

“Hiss... Hiss!!!” An extremely terrified shriek came from the creature's mouth. In Its eyes, a cold star came rushing with a speed

that It simply couldn't dodge! Before It even reacted, the demon felt a violent pain coming from Its forehead!

It... seemed to be a hand stretching into his spiritual sense and ruthlessly tearing it into two!

Fast... Too fast! Supremely fast! Middle-stage Qi Condensation actually couldn't react in the slightest!

The spider's small eyes blinked. Afterwards, It fell to the ground with a loud rumble, kicking up dust and sand all over in the air!

Young master... did you see...? Its eyes carried a final unwillingness as It glared daggers at Xu Yangyi. This person... isn't someone that one person can take care of...

Shwip... The spider silk under Xu Yangyi's feet softened in an instant. He forcefully threw the webbing off and walked over neither slowly nor hurriedly. On the other's forehead, a small and exquisite sword point happened to be pierced in, the one that he had taken out from Danxia Temple.

He gently pulled out the sword point. Afterwards, he gazed coldly at the spider and forcibly kicked!

Boom! Following a loud echo, the entire spider was kicked over. In the place where the sword point was pulled out, green liquid followed the flipping of the spider's body. In the air, this ichor pulled an ugly arc!

"Go back and tell your master." Xu Yangyi looked all around at the entire space. "I know you're watching."

"If you want to take my life, send someone a bit more fierce." He stomped on the spider's corpse and uttered: "Don't think this place is a little village in the neck of the woods and middle-stage Qi Condensation can call themselves kings here... This place is the Capital."

"And I am Xu Yangyi."

1. Famous line from Sun Tzu's Art of War.
2. To be more precise, stuffed pancake is known as Jianbing Guozi (煎饼果子). It is a chinese fried pancake filled with chinese fried dough twist.

Chapter 263: The Nalan Clan

Quiet and tranquil. After a few seconds, the soft laughter of a mocking voice followed: “Is that right? Do you really think your name is worth much?” This voice seemed to echo from everywhere. Where it specifically originated from couldn’t be discerned at all. “You kill a few lineage disciples by a fluke, then you think yourself to be unrivaled in the world... A cultivator like you should die.”

Xu Yangyi sneered: “You can come try.”

The voice laughed gently again: “No rush... Soon... we will meet... This was only a little gift... hehehe... Branchmaster Xu...”

“Some clans in Longsu Province... are looking forward to your esteemed arrival...” The voice gradually ebbed away and slowly vanished.

CRASH! In the wake of this falling voice, the entire space shattered into pieces bit by bit, transforming into glass-like fragments that fell. As they fell, they became motes of qi. Xu Yangyi’s gaze motionlessly surveyed the environment. He was less than a kilometer away from the courtyard house.

Yet in front of him, the green blood of the demon who had just died saturated the entire pavement. Using qi that only a cultivator could see, this ichor actually formed large words!

If you go to Nanzhou, you will die!

“Using a life to make a warning. It’s even got some great calligraphy style.” Xu Yangyi coolly brushed over his surroundings. Even Grandmaster Gao Muya hadn’t appeared? He deeply eyed the little courtyard. It seemed... that the greatness of this opponent’s strength truly wasn’t normal. Granted that an attack had been at a grand master’s door, Gao Muya had weighed the pros and cons, not even defending him.

“But... it just so happens to be that I’m somewhat bull-headed. The more I believe in myself, the more disinclined I am to respect you.”

“If someone offers me a foot, I’ll give them ten. If someone wants my life...” Thirsting for blood, he lapped his lips: “that’ll be the time I take his life!”

He walked on the national highway, and a car came and stopped at his side. No one whatsoever seemed to be paying attention to all of this. The pedestrians still came one after another, and an endless stream of traffic flowed ceaselessly as usual.

“Branch Master.” Peony looked somewhat oddly at Xu Yangyi: “What just happened? Why were you at the side of the road for so long?”

“It’s nothing.” Xu Yangyi closed his eyes, cool and collected. He said firmly, his voice chopping through nails and cleaving through iron: “Return to Mingshui Province at once. Have Mingshui Province’s Jun Man, Qin Xueluan, and Mo Yeyu enter a state of war preparation.”

“Branch Master!” Peony was startled. “What’s going on? War preparation? At the branch?”

“That’s right.” Xu Yangyi’s finger tapped the car window. “I’m afraid there are some lunatics who won’t care where we are at all...”

He finished saying these words and spoke no further. Strength... The current him needed strength more than any other time! He truly wasn’t wishing for this power!

Xiaoqing’s and Fahai’s treasures! This was the essential card in his hand!

Six months, merely six months. Just as this affair had started, a strong bloody air had frantically torrented in. Presently, these foes dared to assassinate him in the Capital... If his power still wasn’t

enough in six months, he was doomed to become a pile of dried bones in Longsu's Nanzhou Capital!

“The treasuries of two greater demon immortals, eh...” He licked his lips: “Really makes a guy look forward...”

“As for the so-called heavenly paradise... I think I'll find out about your true deal soon...”

The car gradually drove away. Without anyone seeing, a tall and straight figure inside a large building that was facing the street quietly moved away from the front of a window.

This was a rather large room. No one was renting it, and it was exceptionally spacious. But at this moment, following this figure's turn, sunlight spilled into the room. It was then discovered... that almost ten people were hanging from the ceiling!

They hadn't hanged themselves but were instead like bats. Their feet were hooked to the ceiling and their heads faced down. Hidden in the darkness, it was so black that their faces couldn't be clearly seen. All that remained were pairs of scarlet-red eyes glimmering. The feeble cry of an insect chirped out.

“Young Master.” At the man's side, an aged and decrepit voice rang out: “This person is nothing more than an arrow at the end of its flight. Once you dispose of a formidable enemy, this old slave will offer congratulations.”

“Not necessary.” The young master slowly walked to the door and laughed grimly: “He's... pretty smart... He completely concealed what we wanted to see.”

“First, whether or not his left arm was restored, and second, how his current strength stacks up... Yes, we didn't see him use divine abilities, but not using and incapable of using is a difference of essence.”

The old man's voice paused: “You suspect that he's concealing his strength?”

“He’s definitely concealing his strength.” The young master’s voice carried a trace of grim laughter: “But... it doesn’t matter...”

“How many people does a trifling Xingtian Legion have...? Even if he brings in lives to fill in the gaps... ten, twenty... a hundred, I’m unconvinced that he won’t be forced to reveal his true colors...” He softly opened the door. “If I were him, I would obediently stay put in Mingshui Province. The current Longsu Province isn’t a place he can play around in.”

“This time... it was just a little insignificant gift of mine... The Nalan Clan’s 534 Dao defenders are the real present...”

The airplane flew quickly. Xu Yangyi’s delegation had landed in Mingshui Province earlier. Just as Xu Yangyi debarked, Jun Man, Qin Xueluan, and Mo Yeyu were already waiting at the Featherwood Guard branch.

“Respects, Branch Master.” Just as Xu Yangyi walked in, three people were quick to deeply bow. They each placed one hand over their heart, making a gesture of loyalty to their commander.

They hadn’t used their familiar approach from before. Instead, they adopted a rather deferential bearing. They were expressing their total allegiance.

Between people, there really couldn’t be no estrangements at all. Yes, Xu Yangyi had said so back then and given them a choice. However, they had chosen to give up. Yet the conclusion saw Xu Yangyi forcibly leave Danxia Temple with a majority of people! One of the Eight Great Deadlands had been broken through!

In these few days, an untold number of their past friends had come expressing their congratulations, but they... simply couldn’t bear to be asked! Their faces and ears flushed red with anger, they shut off their communication softwares.

Why didn’t I see you guys mentioned?

Didn’t you enter Danxia Temple together with Commander Xu?

They had chosen to give up, yet the resulting honor was too difficult to bear. But they further understood through this campaign that there was an obvious difference between close and distant partners in the team. Mao Ba'er, Li Zongyuan, Quan Ningyue, Fang Cheng, and Zhan Twelve. These five people had come together with Xu Yangyi in life and death. This was the true first echelon. And they... were still at the same startling line on that day, having become the second echelon.

Xu Yangyi's footsteps stopped, and his gaze slowly brushed over the trio.

"Everyone, we have six months." He didn't speak another word of nonsense: "After six months, there will be a battle as bloody as Danxia Temple. If we survive, the Xingtian Legion will have its own real foundation. If we lose..." His gaze was without the excitement of billowing waves, looking towards everyone: "not a single bone of our corpses will exist."

"Likewise, I'll give you all time to choose."

He finished speaking. Just as he was about to leave, Mo Yeyu, Jun Man, and Qin Xueluan were almost without any hesitation. Raising their heads without the slightest delay, they said brightly: "I'm ready."

Xu Yangyi halted and looked at the trio: "Are you all sure?"

"I'm sure." Mo Yeyu took a step forward and made a long sigh: "To tell the truth, Commander, we've been in more of a tough spot than anyone else these past days... Clan criticism, the outside world's inquiries, our friends' complaining... Honestly... we're sitting on pins and needles..."

"I admit..." Qin Xueluan tightly bit her lip and said: "before... we didn't have total confidence in you, Commander. But I'm ready this time... to trust in Commander in both heart and soul... As long as we have a thread's chance at survival, I absolutely won't give up!"

Jun Man's face was colored by a bitter smile, and he only nodded miserably: "I'm ashamed to return home, I don't have the guts to go back..."

Xu Yangyi studied the trio deeply. Eventually, he nodded. "Good."

Yes, between people close and distant, there was a separation of familiarity. The three of them hadn't followed him in this time. In kind, he didn't completely favor them. What was the future going to be like? They needed to use double their strength to fight! Double or triple to reimburse the mistake of their choice back then.

Before proving themselves, everything was empty words.

"Everyone, there's still six months. Cultivate well. Next time will be a test of life and death."

Finished speaking these words, he lifted his foot and walked into his cultivation room.

The remaining crowd looked at each other in dismay.

"I don't know, but where are Fellow Daoists Zhan Twelve and Fang Cheng?" Finally, Jun Man sighed and cupped his fist: "What did Commander mean by saying that there's gonna be a test of life and death six months from now?"

"I don't know either..." Peony pursed her lips: "but... we should know soon... As for Zhan Twelve and Fang Cheng, I heard they returned to their clans to cultivate. They're not together with us."

Xu Yangyi didn't care about the discussion outside at all. This time, legionnaires really were divided into all kinds of ranks. Nonetheless, this wasn't important. What was important... were those clans hiding in the shadows. They were already beginning to sharpen their blades, and he was unaware where the blades were!

"This slave pays respects to Master." Just as he entered the cultivation room, a flattering voice immediately echoed: "I see that

Master's complexion doesn't appear to be doing well?"

Xu Yangyi didn't waste a word and took off his suit. He pulled at his shirt, and the strong muscles of his upper body were bared in the air. He finally moved his left arm around.

When the spider had struck, he hadn't moved his left arm! It was in order not to expose a trace of his strength!

"Grandpa Wei." His gaze was intensely fixed on his freely moving arm: "Have you ever seen this object?"

Wei Zhongxian moved closer and looked for a few seconds, shaking his head: "I haven't... but its bound to be an item from an ancient era. Immortress Yu surely knows."

Xu Yangyi nodded and put on his shirt." When are you leaving?"

"At the latest, thirty days from now." Wei Zhongxian bowed deeply. "I have no choice but to go. I cannot accompany you for long. Please forgive me, Master."

Xu Yangyi's gaze faintly darkened. His hidden ace here was being pulled away.

"And if..." He took a deep breath: "I made you stay?"

Wei Zhongxian chuckled: "Master, I am only His Majesty's dog. What use does a grand figure like you who is honored as gold and noble like jade need with me?"

Xu Yangyi's expression was motionless, and he stared deeply at Wei Zhongxian. After ages, he nodded. "In that case, I won't see you out."

If you wanted something done, then you needed to do it yourself!

Xiaoqing's and Fahai's treasuries still hadn't been open! He didn't believe... that there wasn't a speck of an assault treasure there within!

It didn't make sense if there weren't. The duo simply didn't know what the situation was after leaving. Were their past

enemies still alive? Presently, hadn't there been great changes in the world? And would they encounter the obstruction of a difficult foe once they left? It wasn't realistic if they didn't have one single protective item.

As long as there was one... As long as there was one! This was his hope to stand firm in Longsu Province!

Give him rein to start a prairie fire, for I possess the pouring seawaters! No one was any the wiser that he still had two essential hidden cards in his hand!

“Lastly, I still have a question that I want to ask your guidance on, Grandpa Wei.” This place was his final garden. He didn't mask things one bit, and cupped his fist and said: “What is a heavenly paradise?”

“The reason why I haven't left after so long is because I was waiting for you to ask these words, Master.” Wei Zhongxian respectfully took a knee and bowed. “Master, this time... I'm afraid it really will be a deadly battle...”

“You don't understand the so-called lineages, and I... do not understand more. For their own foundations and clans, they... are a pack of man-eating war lunatics...”

“But a heavenly paradise... To clans and apex cultivators, these words... absolutely aren't a term that can be sketched in light shades and described so simply... In this, there are too many secrets hidden that cannot be recorded in text...”

1. “Give him rein to start a prairie fire, for I possess the pouring seawaters!” This... was pretty hard to translate, and I'm not sure if I did justice. This line originates from a Ming eunuch named Yan Shifan (1480-1567 CE) as he talks about his foe Xu Jie. This phrase is along the lines of countering forces.

Chapter 264: Heavenly Paradise

The room became quiet. Wei Zhongxian didn't speak at once but instead bowed: "Before this, wouldn't it be better for Master to look at this item?"

Following the direction of Wei Zhongxian's finger, Xu Yangyi saw a toad that was about a meter in size. It seemed to be jade but not jade, and its mouth was slightly ajar. Threads of indistinct azure smoke slowly wafted out from the toad's mouth.

Xu Yangyi calmed his mood as much as he was able to and lightly sniffed. Faint yet unscattered, the smoke held a delicate aroma. Although the fragrance was light, it was soothing and pacifying, secreting into one's innermost parts. It seemed to stroll around in the inner organs, and this stroll caused the internals to seem a bit fresh and clean. The mind was pure and the qi was crisp.

He closed his eyes and indulged in the pleasure for a few seconds. He raised his a brow and said: "Ambergris?"

"An enlightened sage is no more than his master." Wei Zhongxian covered his mouth and laughed softly: "In these ten-odd days, Celestial Mo, Celestial Jun, and Immortress Qin haven't been idling. After using a qi flame to roast and dry the ambergris, and the addition of a good many secret arts, this censer of Soul-Cooling Fragrance was made. I hope Master will kindly accept it."

Xu Yangyi's strong brows raised up. The censer's value was precious to Qi Condensation cultivators, especially young cultivators. Heart devils were extremely difficult to birth. The so-called heart devil was the period as a cultivator achieved supreme enlightenment, experienced the changes of time, and watched those by their side grow old one after another. And yet they themselves were still in the spring of youth as in the past. A lamentation that flowers had no choice but to fall, a heart knot of a seemingly familiar swallow's return. The rise of the essential

suspicion of one's own existence and cultivation.

The higher the realm, the more difficult it was to make peace with such doubts. Particularly at the Core Formation realm after incarnations could be held... If the matter wasn't handled properly, the incarnation would instead replace oneself and become the true personality!

"A good item." Xu Yangyi walked over and deeply stroked the censer. His distance from the Foundation Establishment realm... was not far.

"Master, please sit." From some unknown place, Wei Zhongxian had produced a tea set and brewed a cup of fragrant tea. He flattered and laughed: "In fact, there was no need for Master to come ask me. The matter that Master wishes to know is in your memories."

"My memories?" Xu Yangyi furrowed his brows, and a spark suddenly went off in his mind: "The Dao Scripture?"

"An enlightened sage is no more than his master." Wei Zhongxian laughed: "The Dao Scripture is an assembly of secret Daoist texts, a supreme work of divine abilities. Master is currently cultivating a section of the [Book of Changes, the Harmony of the Trium](#). It is vast like an ocean, and profound like a mountain. Once opened, you will be the cultivation world's master of all."

"I was just about to ask you about this point as well." Xu Yangyi also laughed and looked over. "Why is it that so many characters rushed into my mind on that day, but I can't remember anything at all now?"

Wei Zhongxian bowed respectfully. "That's because... the present Dao Scripture was locked by His Majesty. And the key..."

Xu Yangyi laughed coldly: "That secret page which Ming Guangzong brought to the Thirteen Tombs?"

"Master is an enlightened sage." Wei Zhongxian laughed as he

fawned on Xu Yangyi.

“In other words, I’ve got a locked treasury in my mind, but if I don’t go to the Thirteen Tombs, the treasury won’t open?” Xu Yangyi’s smile became colder: “Grandpa Wei, you had all the time in the world, but you didn’t remind me to go to the Thirteen Tombs. Could it be that my back garden is truly in that place? To just take and ask without need for consent?”

He set down the teacup and stared straight at Wei Zhongxian: “Or... does Ming Guangzong want me to go in? Or maybe, the last mission he gave you?”

Wei Zhongxian immediately prostrated on the ground and said hastily: “How could this slave dare? His Majesty said that to see Master was akin to his royal arrival. How could I dare hold the slightest errant intention?”

Xu Yangyi didn’t speak. His eyes looking at Wei Zhongxian flashed with a cold glint. A long-dead Lord of the Nine Quiniums who hadn’t forgotten to plan for Xiaoqing and Fahai. He absolutely didn’t believe that the Thirteen Tombs would open wide and allow him enter.

Without necessary and complete preparation, there was no way that he would presently enter the Thirteen Tombs. Wei Zhongxian had already made several cool suggestions. If he hadn’t underwent Xiaoqing’s restructuring process, perhaps he simply wouldn’t hear the hidden bewitchment in the other’s voice. If it really was “akin to his royal arrival”, what matters were there that couldn’t be said to an emperor?

“In that case...” A cold smile curved at the crook of his mouth. He immediately covered it and said faintly: “Akin to his royal arrival. [We want to hear you say it now.](#) Straight. From. Your. Mouth.”

“To answer Your Master Majesty’s words!” Unexpectedly, upon hearing these words, Wei Zhongxian’s face became excitedly rosy, and he laid prone even more respectfully. His voice was almost

devout: “What Master wants to hear, this slave certainly knows yet lacks the words. I am unaware if Master has ever heard of the word ‘Dragon Vein’.”

“Of course.” Xu Yangyi didn’t make Wei Zhongxian stand up. He towered above and looked down at the eunuch: “But this is only a legend.”

Wei Zhongxian laughed flatteringly and answered noncommittally: “As to theories real and fake, I truly do not understand. But I know that Dragon Veins are divided into Greater and Lesser Dragon Veins. A Greater Dragon Vein is the master of a nation’s fate. Yet a Lesser Dragon Vein is a land of fortune. A so-called heavenly paradise... is in fact several Lesser Dragon Veins experiencing subterranean quakes for centuries to a millennium and tending towards convergence.”

“As several Lesser Dragon Veins converge, they’ll give rise to something. I once heard Celestial Master Zhang sa that this is known as a ‘Spirit Point’.”

Spirit Point?

Xu Yangyi’s brows slightly knitted together, and he sunk into thought for a couple seconds and shook his head. This word was quite the stranger.

This unfamiliarity wasn’t to say that he didn’t know now. Instead, there had never been records of this word in Heavens Law’s teachings or the Featherwood Guard’s common data!

“A Spirit Point... draws endless qi from underground! The land that the Spirit Point is under will slowly transform and cause the surrounding land to become a natural transcendent-grade Spirit Focusing Formation. It attracts all roaming qi from everywhere! Master, I’ve heard that when celestials cultivate, they’ll use all kinds of formations to intensify qi concentration. But in a heavenly paradise, qi doesn’t need intensifying whatsoever because of the enormous Spirit Point’s bubbling underneath. One

can say that any place you go to is the most supreme Spirit Focusing Formation!”

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath.

He somewhat understood... why a good many clans couldn't relinquish this place. To one person, this land was at most a transcendent Spirit Focusing Formation. But to a clan or power, it was no understatement to call its function the most essential secret!

So long as some clan established a Dao sanctum over the Spirit Point... it would be no exaggeration to describe the speed of the cultivators there with the phrase of “a thousand miles in one day”!

“But this is only the first thing, Master.” Wei Zhongxian said respectfully as his forehead touched the ground: “To discuss this point alone is still unworthy to the great undertaking of these clans as they bear such arms of war. Its... true usefulness to the clans lies in the production of heavenly treasures.”

Xu Yangyi's gaze faintly stirred, and he immediately recalled the few spirit plants he saw on that day. Unexpectedly, they were growing by themselves after the qi reparation.

“A vast majority of heavenly treasures need a specific qi density to grow. Furthermore, spirit beasts also require dense qi to breathe. When spirit plants and spirit beasts reach a balance, they'll grow and multiply endlessly. Its not that the other clans can't create an equally dense heavenly paradise, but their creation is only limited to a room, a house, or a field. They have no way to produce a large environment that's tens of thousands square kilometers with an equal amount of dense qi.”

Xu Yangyi nodded deeply. Perhaps Wei Zhongxian didn't realize what he was saying now, but he understood.

This was an ecological chain! Plants, animals, hunters, creators, and devotees existed in a state of balance. In that case, this

ecological chain would become increasingly more prosperous! This was something that countless modern biologists had proved. Ancient cultivators were unaware yet understood the related key within this through ancient wisdom.

Xu Yangyi's mind began to quickly turn and swivel. A slender finger gently tapped the edge of his teacup. He mumbled to himself, not speaking.

“That's to say... this isn't only is an acceleration to cultivation progress. More importantly, it can offer not just a giant training ground for feudal powers but also an enormous logistical storehouse. All kinds of pill elixirs, talismans, a place to manufacture magik artifacts, the skin, flesh, and essence of all kinds of spirit beasts... heh...” He made a long sigh. It was no wonder, no surprise that every great clan had to carve out their own territory in Longsu Province even if a war was set off!

Cultivation cultivated wealth, scripture, companions, and land. Once a heavenly paradise was occupied, one half among the four would be immediately taken! As for scripture, were those clans lacking divine abilities? As for companions, did one still lack Dao companions with the possession of wealth, scripture, and land?

“Master.” Wei Zhongxian faintly raised his head and laughed respectfully: “It isn't confined to this.”

There was more?

Xu Yangyi raised a brow in surprise. Just these present benefits were enough to cause those cultivation clans to struggle their utmost. There was actually more?

“Yes, Master... because a Spirit Point continuously gushes with qi, and that qi goes through plants and is breathed in by animals, it enters the underground again. Everywhere underground, there are all kinds of incredibly strong ores. Honored Celestial Master Zhang calculated that in twenty years or at most thirty years, the Spirit Point's surroundings would form...”

“A spirit stone mine?” Xu Yangyi set down his teacup. His expression had become truly solemn.

If said that the prior spirit plants were reserve goods, and spirit beasts were semi-strategic supplies, then a spirit stone mine... was a true strategic good and hard currency! Sitting on and owning a spirit stone mine was the same as sitting on a gold mountain! Furthermore... according to what he knew, when he was originally studying at Heavens Law, China’s sole five amalgamations of science, technology, and cultivation, the transcendent Slaughter Weapons, and cultivation machines all used the most supreme spirit stones!

Not to mention a power, this was wealth that a nation wouldn’t let slip by!

“What grade of mine vein?” He asked lowly.

Although Wei Zhongxian was unaware of modern Cultivation Civilization’s rank division in spirit objects, he understood the meaning of Xu Yangyi’s question. Contemplating for several seconds, he said: “Master... have you heard of Harpmoon Colored Glass?”

“No.”

Wei Zhongxian’s voice carried a wisp of ardor: “I... once saw a small palm-sized piece in His Majesty’s collection... just that little bit. Once night arrived, the moon welcomed and dazzling, a dark-green light screen like muslin caused the slumber palace to be brightly lit. Touching it was like a flitting ice float... All bodily ailments vanished, truly a realm-inheritance treasure. This colored glass came from one paradise from among the ten great paradises. His Majesty treasured it dearly...”

Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed, and his fists clenched tightly without warning. Harpmoon Colored Glass. He hadn’t heard of this name before. However, the strange condition that Wei Zhongxian spoke of was exactly the same as another kind of heavenly treasure that

he knew about!

Moonjasper Stone! SSS-rank heavenly treasure! Any magik treasure added with a gram would possibly bring about a strange organism—an artifact spirit!!!

On the black market, Moonjasper Stone could be said to truly be a priceless item! Transaction partners were all Great Circle Foundation Establishment or above! At most, it approached the Core Formation crowd! Ming Guangzong actually had a palm-sized piece? In the modern day, there were ones the size of a fingernail! If he took a piece out, he wouldn't even be able to think about taking it back!

Book of Changes is a real Daoist Text. Harmony of the Trium is name I made up for what is usually translated as The Oneness of Three/The Seal of the Unity of Three/etc. Harmony of the Trium is otherwise known as “Eternal Alchemy Canon”.

This “We” that Xu Yangyi is using is the royal “we”. The exact Chinese for “Akin to his royal arrival is: “如朕驾临”. Literally “like I esteemed presence”. I had to modify this a little bit so it makes more sense.

Chapter 265: Determination

Silent, Xu Yangyi said nothing. THIS was a heavenly paradise! As expected... like what Senior brother Jadesun had previously told him, this was enough to serve as a clan or power's hundred-year foundation! Worthy because when the possessor swung the butcher's blade again, those who were not loyal would all be killed!

No wonder... No wonder such a thing wasn't recorded in cultivation history. If clans or powers of insufficient status dared to join this battlefield, perhaps those true first-rate clans would exterminate them until nothing was left! And those who dared not enter this battlefield furthermore didn't have the qualifications to know of this matter.

In this instant, Xu Yangyi understood what he was on the verge of confronting... It wasn't a kind of thing that stopped each person in their tracks like in Danxia Temple. Instead, even a low-grade power simply didn't have the qualifications to know. The cultivation world's true high society were all aware, yet this was an absolute secret they sealed their mouths for.

A single factor among these many reasons was deserving of one struggling with their utmost. And as several kinds of advantages merged...

He lit a cigarette and took a deep drap. Even at this moment, he could imagine six months from now that the land set foot on by the clans was bound to flow with rivers of blood!

It also wasn't surprising that several first-rate clans joined hands. Otherwise, a cultivator's assassination occurring in the Capital was almost an unimaginable matter. A Core Formation ancestor's spiritual sense could cover several thousand meters as they pleased! As long as they wanted to, the Capital could be under their surveillance at any time!

"Ten Greater Heavenly Lands?" Xu Yangyi set aside the thoughts

on his mind. Now still wasn't the time to think freely. Above all, he first wanted to understand all the secrets of a heavenly paradise.

“Master, you probably don't understand it clearly. Heavenly paradise is only a collective term. Starting from ancient China to modern China, there are altogether 72 Paradises, and 36 Heavenly Lands. However, these 36 Heavenly Lands are only Lesser Heavenly Lands. Above the 36 Lesser Heavenly Lands, it is said there are also Ten Greater Heavenly Lands.”

Xu Yangyi flicked his cigarette ash and said lowly: “What're the specifics?”

“I don't understand very well... but in these few days, I've come to have somewhat of an appreciate for the modern cultivation system. It is unknown why qi is so frighteningly weak. Under such qi, I'm afraid that the number of heavenly lands that can exist can only be counted on one's fingers. Perhaps... it's no more than a five finger count. Even if they do exist, they should be controlled by a great cultivator clan in the present age.”

“Concerning that piece of Harpmoon Colored Glass, I only know that it came from the Dragon-God Desolace Heavenly Land among the [Ten Greater Heavenly Lands](#). This Heavenly Land seems to be at the side of Dongting Lake. I really do not know much more.”

Xu Yangyi nodded and said no more. He was thinking it over. Did the Xingtian Legion require a Heavenly Land?

Time slowly passed minute after minute. Even now, the cigarette in his hand hadn't been dragged on. The butt had accumulated over an inch of ash. It wasn't until after the tenth minute did he finally laugh. From his previous doubt, his expression had already become firm and resolved.

It was needed... The Xingtian Legion... required it even more than those great clans and powers!

In any case, the opponents had backgrounds that were centuries long or even a thousand years long. But he had nothing.

“Speaking of power, I got nothing at all...” Xu Yangyi watched the cigarette butt brighten and fade. “Only the Xingtian Legion is my private land, the location of my foundation... If I want to cultivate to Core Formation without my own team, there’s basically no way.”

If he didn’t have any true devoted brothers, what he would be on guard against during any secret realm journey wouldn’t be the secret realm. He would be more on the watch for things... coming from behind. How great would the danger factor be?

If he didn’t have his personnel, who would handle his finances? Without wealth, how would he buy fitting divine abilities, arcane efforts, and magik treasures? Without divine abilities, arcane efforts, and magik treasures, how was he to seek destiny and explore secret realms?

“A cycle of death, eh.” This component dawned on him, and he faced upwards and started to laugh: “The strong get stronger, and the weak get weaker. There’s no way around it.”

Did everyone join the Xingtian Legion just to follow him?

No! Absolutely not! If there wasn’t generous treatment or a shining future ahead, who would join him? How long would those who joined be able to stay? If he wasn’t the “master of the Pill Dao’s one-way liaison”, would the Xingtian Legion be able to recruit people?

If he hadn’t left Danxia Temple, would a senior like Grandmaster Gao Muya treat him amicably? Would he help him mend his left arm? Would Jadesun specifically remind him about a heavenly paradise’s connection with a hundred-year foundation?

No one had the obligation to treat others well. If he wanted to make others deaden their hearts and dig their feet in the ground

for him, he needed to let them see that his qualifications were worthy of such unflagging drive.

And a heavenly paradise... was his qualification!

“Master-Ancestor, you underestimate me.” He gently extinguished the cigarette butt between his fingers. His voice seemed to mumble himself, yet it was incomparably staunch. Standing up, he looked at the blue talismans of the Spirit Focusing Formation that covered the room and suddenly laughed: “How can I, Xu Yangyi, be a timid coward?”

“I walked out from Danxia Temple. A heavenly paradise and the struggle of a couple first-rate lineages... How could I be afraid?” His hand waved, and two keys floated in his hand. “Why didn’t you say anything and just let me go? Did you think I would be scared?”

“If you clearly told me, I would’ve definitely taken the lead to volunteer myself for service. I’ve never thought about resigning myself to living my entire life in the Qi Condensation realm, and I haven’t even thought about hesitating in the Foundation Establishment realm...” He smiled, his smile laid-back and easy, but it carried an unspeakable resolve. “Master-Ancestor... you really don’t get me...”

His finger lightly flicked, and the two keys echoed softly in the air. He took a deep breath: “I still have six months. Just six months.”

“Grandpa Wei.” His hand hooked around the keys, and he laughed: “Can I trouble you with something?”

“Master, what are you saying? If you have a request just speak. What is there to discuss about trouble...”

Xu Yangyi raised his hand and interrupted him. The knot in his heart was completely gone. At this moment, he felt transparent from head to toe. “Take a cell phone and television, and make

another trip to Danxia Temple.”

“Yes.” Wei Zhongxian finally stood up, laughing as he cupped his hands: “I too want to know very much what objects the so-called television and cell phone are.”

“Hehehe...” Xu Yangyi laughed: “Bring Peony. She’ll handle the electricity and signal questions. After this matter is complete, you’ll probably hurry over to the Thirteen Tombs, right?”

“An enlightened sage is no more than his master.” Wei Zhongxian laughed respectfully: “I still hope to see Master one day in the future.”

Xu Yangyi smiled and calmly eyed him. “Maybe I will.”

How bright was Wei Zhongxian? He immediately sensed Xu Yangyi’s wish to be alone for a while. He cupped his hands and said: “Master, take care of yourself. Then, shall I leave to take care of business posthaste?”

Xu Yangyi nodded noncommittally, and Wei Zhongxian’s figure slowly disappeared. The faint smile on his face vanished in the end.

“No doubt we’ll meet...”

“Ming Guangzong... if this is how you’re hinting me to go, how can I betray your good intentions?”

Turning around, he opened the cultivation room’s door and headed straight to the statistics department. His pace was quite fast. He simply couldn’t repress his present mood. The doubts of his heart were all gone. The matter that he had waited so long for... At long last, perhaps there would be a clue.

Bang. A door was pushed open without the slightest hesitation. The movement wasn’t quiet at all. Inside, four young cultivators were surrounding a computer. They seemed to be working, but someone had unexpectedly barged in without warning. They wanted to turn something off at once, yet a noise that was heard

from the sound system quickly sold them out.

“Meet with [Zhongyuan Yidianhong](#).”

“Who?! Don’t you know to knock... knock... B-Branchmaster Xu?!” His face flushed red in anger, a man stood up and shouted at the door. Before he even finished speaking, he immediately gasped and loudly cried out in surprise.

Upon hearing these words, the sounds of chairs rang out in the office. In less than three seconds, all the workers were standing up, cold sweat dripping straight from their foreheads. They clasped a fist and bowed. “We didn’t know that we would be honored by Branchmaster Xu’s presence. P-Please forgive us...”

“Pole, steel-wire bed.” “That’s crazy.”

In an instant, everyone’s faces became explosively red again. They lowered their heads and mumbled, not daring to speak.

Xu Yangyi didn’t pay heed to them. Instead, he sized up the room.

It had been over five years... but this was still the first time he had set foot here.

The room was the same as an ordinary office. There were computers, office desks, and a person-tall potted plant was set in the corner. The only thing somewhat different from a mortal company was the humanoid machine puppet inside the office. It was monkey-shaped and in charge of serving everyone tea, pouring water, and sweeping trash off the floor. In addition, there were four tap-like devices. They were emergency spiritual force installations that took precautions against the occurrence of urgent situations.

“Who’s in charge?” Stowing his gaze, Xu Yangyi suppressed the hatred and expectation in his heart and asked with all the calmness he could muster.

“I...” A middle-aged man walked out and said nervously: “Branch

Master, we...”

“It’s nothing. Besides, I’m not your branch master.” Xu Yangyi brushed an eye the man. Nothing more than an initial-stage Qi Condensation. He nodded: “Look up my account merits.”

In their hearts, the four people released a collective sigh of relief and immediately turned off the computer. They used the fastest speed to look up Xu Yangyi’s account.

Click Clack Click Clack... Following the light sound of a keyboard, the middle-aged man said five seconds later: “Alright, Branchmaster Xu. Your merit value is... is...”

His mouth suddenly stopped, and he looked at the number on the screen incredulously!

38,000 points!

He almost thought he saw incorrectly! Even Branchmaster Thousandedge’s merit value was no more than 13,000 points! And this was stored up after so many years! Furthermore, that wasn’t to mention that a Qi Condensation cultivator obtained merits counted in the double digits. This was a jump to five figures! Branchmaster Xu’s Danxia Temple journey had actually given him 38,000 merit points!

“3-38,000 points...” He glanced at Xu Yangyi in astonishment. Just as his voice fell, the several people to the side gasped in concert. Their gazes swooshed over to look at Xu Yangyi. Their mouths were opened so wide that a chicken egg could be squeezed in.

“Is that a lot?” This was Xu Yangyi’s first time accessing the merit system. Upon seeing their expressions, he couldn’t help but ask.

“Yeah... No! It’s a lot! It’s really a lot!” The middle-aged calmed his nerves and immediately said: “Ordinarily, after a legion completes a mission, A-rank and below is thirty points. A-rank is

sixty points. Specially appointed missions are a hundred... but a mission's length might be a month or two years. If an A-rank mission is taken each month, a year will get you 1,200 points... 30,000 points..." He gulped: "is approximately... over twenty years..."

It seemed that it really was a lot... Xu Yangyi nodded and said without room for question: "Look up my merits in the Featherwood Guard's privileges access."

"Yes!" The middle-aged man pounded the keyboard. He read swiftly and said: "Sir, you can... look up all data marked at the Featherwood Guard's 'classified' level. Furthermore, every five years, you have the opportunity to go to Daomaster Ancientpine's Heavenraiser Palace to listen to his teachings. At the same time, you can also choose take advance studies overseas..."

Xu Yangyi raised his hand somewhat jitterily: "Search demonbeast-rank privileges."

"Yes." The middle-aged man moved his fingers as if they were flying. A few seconds later, he laughed: "Congratulations, Branch Master. You can now look up all demons at SSS-rank and below. I'll activate this for you."

The concept of "Ten Greater Heavenly Lands" seems to originate from a Tang dynasty Daoist priest and fiction writer named Du Guanting (850-933 CE). The specific name of "Dragon-God Desolace Heavenly Land" come from him as well. His most famous work, *The Man with the Curly Beard*, is sometimes considered the earliest Wuxia novel.

"Zhongyuan Yidianhong" Not a very normal name. It literally means "One Red Dot in the Central Plains". This name comes from Gu Long's *Chu Liuxiang* series. Zhongyuan Yidianhong is a powerful swordsman and hitman. He is known as "One Red Dot" because he kills people by stabbing them once in their forehead.

Chapter 266: Godseal Spark

A step-by-step process of examination and approval, form filling, and application. After an hour, a beeping sound followed. The middle-aged man respectfully stood up and bowed: “Branch Master, your privileges have already been approved by headquarters and activated. From here on out, you can look up all demons... Branch Master? Branch Master?”

When he lifted his head, Xu Yangyi was no longer in sight, gone without a trace. The three other people looked at each other in dismay.

“When... did Branch Master leave?” The middle-aged man was stunned: “I-I didn’t see...”

The other three people shook their heads one after another. They hadn’t seen as well.

In the instant that the application had been filed, Xu Yangyi had left the office. His hand was slightly trembling as he clutched his chest. Since he was eight to now... How many years had it been... a wait of almost twenty years. One step at a time, he had found the murderer from that day. His blood was somewhat boiling.

His pulse hastened by a fair bit. After he quickly stepped into his office, he immediately turned on his computer.

A cigarette was lit, but he didn’t smoke it at all. Instead, his gaze watched it serenely, almost approaching callousness.

The Featherwood Guard’s database was already loaded on his computer. However, after his account login, there was no display opened. Like so, he quietly gazed at his computer. He knew that after the application, the activation would still need several tens of minutes.

“Branch Master.” Peony considerately brought in a cup of coffee. “I’ll leave and wait on you.”

Xu Yangyi nodded, no expression on his face. Peony wanted to say something, yet she said nothing in the end. She merely closed the door, the sound so faint that it couldn't be heard. Just as the door closed, she felt her pant leg being bitten.

"Is Spud alright?" Mao Ba'er extended his tongue and said. At some unknown time, he had moseyed on over.

Peony hesitated for a moment but nevertheless nodded.

"That's good." Mao Ba'er sighed in relief. He faced down towards his neck and made a meaningful glance. Peony took a glimpse and discovered that he was wearing a telescope on his neck.

"This is?" Peony asked in confusion, yet she was brought over to the side of a window by Mao Ba'er. Just as she looked outside, she was dazed: "This... is a solar eclipse?"

"A natural wonder..." Mao Ba'er said with emotion: "We'll watch this here and wait for Spud to come out, alright? Relax, he'll tune himself. It's been so many years. If he didn't rest, he would've drowned in his hatred a long time ago."

Peony glanced at the room with some worry and nodded. She turned her head to look at the solar eclipse in the sky.

"That's strange... there wasn't a report for a solar eclipse today..."

The room was quiet and calm like death. The clock on the wall ticked and tocked. After no less than thirty minutes, a soft chime followed and rang out. A row of small golden characters had at long last appeared in Xu Yangyi's account.

You are permitted to search the national demon database.

He wasn't worried. On the contrary, his movements were slow, but if one looked carefully they could see that his hand was fairly shaky. He lifted his mouse and clicked on the SS-rank demonbeast list that he could only examine in the past. Below... an outline with the appearance of a book finally emerged.

A black book followed his mouse click, and a swishing noise in the quiet room caused one's skin to crawl. Soon afterwards, a total of seventeen pictures showed up on his computer.

“The complete God Ming record.” His gaze flitted across the first photo. “130 years ago, in the Ming Clan mausoleum...”

In the opened window, the sun's rays darkened somewhat. On the street outside, it seemed that there were many people that were crying out in surprise and exclaiming. He didn't turn on the lights, and he moreover didn't turn his head back to look. Like a stone, he only watched his computer.

Without the slightest care to read the complete record, Xu Yangyi immediately continued to browse.

[“The Ba Serpent. 212 years ago, the last time it appeared...”](#)

[“Pseunix. 99 years ago...”](#)

Nothing, nothing! Still nothing!

At some unknown time, his teeth were already tightly biting his lip. His hand movements shook even more. And yet... there wasn't a single trace of information in the first ten-odd photos!

The sky was getting darker and darker... Sunlight was passing at a visible rate. The lightless room quickly spilled into a shadowy domain. All that remained was computer light and the cigarette butt that Xu Yangyi had put in an ashtray.

Fourteen photos... Fifteen photos... Sixteen photos! It wasn't until... he saw the last photo! His gaze suddenly ignited into two blazing orbs of vengeance.

It... was a pebble. A pebble so ordinary that it couldn't be even more normal. Nonetheless, there was an imprint on this pebble. An imprint in the style of an eye! Gold in color!

“This is It...” Xu Yangyi pulled his hand back. His clenched fists made a cracking noise. This wasn't that crow... but this imprint

had emerged countless times in his nightmares! He absolutely wouldn't forget!

"It's you... that's right..." He stood up and breathed in and out heavily, sensing the taste of burning blood and fire. "Even if you aren't It... You... should have a clue to It... Isn't that right?"

He closed his eyes. Under his eyelids, his eyes were softly trembling.

Darkness, very black... In this moment, because all his thoughts and feelings rose up in his heart once more, his long-buried killing intent was felt with terrible distinction. He could feel the darkness in the sky. He could furthermore hear the crowd's shrieks outside. Right now, they reached a climax.

The Earth still hadn't completely darkened. Outside, Peony looked at the sky, likewise drawn in by the natural wonder.

In the sky, all that was left was black. The darkness approaching the regions with remaining sunlight were dyed an expanse of golden sunlit clouds. In at most several minutes, this solar eclipse would finish.

Inside the room, Xu Yangyi opened his eyes. This time, his voice wasn't choked with emotions like the last time he had met Su Lianyue. Instead, it was calm. A calm that reached grimness.

Somethings didn't require a mouth to be said. Action was the best proof. He carefully continued to read.

Godseal Spark.

Rank: at least SSS. (note: SSS is only the present division of the highest-ranking demons. Among power there is possibly a difference of heaven and earth. SSS and above already surpass the present world's spiritual force system's range)

Spiritual force intensity: unable to be projected, fluctuations are extremely great. Nature: unknown, fluctuations are extremely great. Mass: around the fist size of an adult male. (note:

approximately 20 cm long and 13 cm wide)

It can transform into all demons that have appeared in the past, but any demon's body will bear its characteristics. Form and structure are unable to be forecasted.

This sentence caused his breathing to almost stop. This was It...

This was definitely It!

Transforming into other demons... Yes, something like this was able to explain why that crow had come. The characteristics were right as well... Each feather on that crow's body beared a golden eye.

Finally, its roams...

Swish... At this time, the last remnant ray of the sun in the sky vanished. The world sunk into temporary darkness. But at this same moment, behind that tremendous door with the giant character of "sky" carved into at the Cultivation Court, a terrible aura suddenly began to rise and fall!

"This is..." An aged voice echoed incredulously: "an alteration in heaven and earth?"

In this fleeting moment, apart from aged voice... not a single one of the Core Formation Dao Masters' gazes looked towards Mingshui Province.

Swoosh... In the wake of the remaining sun hiding away, strangely... all of Mingshui Province's lights unexpectedly died out!

Beep beep beep... In an electricity station, an employee who was eating and drinking was wolfing down his meal. In front of him, there was a row of cabinet-styled apparatuses. Complicated and precise, all of them were originally displaying green lights, but now, a red light suddenly shone!

"Fuck..." The employee glanced in dissatisfaction. An ear-

piercing cry echoed throughout the room. In a flurry, he picked up a napkin at the side and wiped his mouth. “Where’s the problem? Doesn’t the government know to dish out some cash and fix things? Can’t this wait for me to finish eating?”

His voice yet to fall... all the cabinet-styled apparatuses in front of him surprisingly began to echo with screeching beeps in ten seconds!

He looked at everything, dumbfounded. In the next second, he suddenly rushed out of the room. Because his speed was too fast and hurried, he knocked down his chair! Even the food he hadn’t finish eating scattered onto the ground, but he didn’t care at all!

This was Mingshui’s master electricity station...

All the red lights shining... represented that Mingshui Province’s electrical grid was paralyzed!

“Which Fellow Daoist is it that I have the honor of being graced with your arcane chariot?” None were any the wiser at this moment that in the Upper Court of the Capital’s Cultivation Court, a physical manifestation was watching the sky with both hands slowly cupped in respect: “This Dao Lord is Skybearer. I make my salutations.”

No one responded. The place where the manifestation was standing was 4,000 meters in the sky! At his side, gales of celestial wind floated past, yet underneath him, one could see that the clouds... actually formed a tremendous black arm. It pulled all the clouds at the side and forcibly concealed the sun!

“According to what I know... at most, only one Fellow Daoist is alive in this world. Fellow Daoist’s divine ability is poles apart from his...”

Still, no one spoke. Skybearer’s manifestation uttered: “Not speaking, eh... Nevermind, if the two of us engage in arcane combat, we will collapse the heavens and shatter the earth...

Would it not be better for you to leave?”

In the sky, light laughter was finally heard. Although it was light, it seemed like rolling thunder: “Zhang Sanfeng... you’re actually still alive... To my surprise, you also entered our realm... Where is your good disciple Zhang Wuji... and the Heaven Reliance Sword, setting the true law in the imperial court, and the Dragonslayer Saber, taking reins over the world with great virtue... Skybearer? Hehehe... Fellow Daoist really would pick this name... Be assured, This Lord is making nothing more than a greeting to a junior... [I will immediately take my leave...](#)”

The gaze of Skybearer’s manifestation slightly flickered: “Was it you that killed Jadewave?”

There was no further answer. Skybearer coldly snorted and disappeared, no longer to be seen.

Swoosh... Only he could see the enormous pitch-black hand. Just as he turned around, the hand seemed to press down from the clouds like a god, formless and shadowless, windless and waveless. And yet, the hand rang out with a soundless magnificence, seemingly with great intention but none! Below the cloudbank, it was simply invisible. Only upon reaching Skybearer’s altitude could this giant hand of black clouds be seen! It slowly pressed down!

The target was the Mingshui Province’s Featherwood Guard branch!

Pow pow pow! Outside the branch room, Mao Ba’er and Peony focused their attention and watched the solar eclipse in the sky. Countless pedestrians on the street had already entered a state of excitement. However, they suddenly heard consecutive explosions coming from inside Xu Yangyi’s room!

“What’s going on?!” The human and dog almost rushed into the room at the same time. Xu Yangyi was standing in the darkness, but in front of him, the computer had already been grounded down

into fine dust.

He stood in his original position, his chest heaving up and down somewhat violently. However, his expression was still placid like a lake.

“Why.” After ages, he finally spoke. His voice was like sawdust, damned terrible.

He didn’t see...

At the same time he was on the verge of reading, all of Mingshui Province had turned pitch-black! At such a pivotal moment, everything completely stopped!

“Peony. Xiao Mao.” He lifted his head and smiled, yet a cold shiver worked its way through Peony’s entire body. “I’ll have to trouble you now to please leave first.”

“Yes...” Peony pursed her lips and left. In the instant the door shut, she whispered: “Branch Master... take care of yourself...”

She was only met with Xu Yangyi’s silent nod.

巴蛇 - based on a real myth. The Ba Serpent is said to be large enough to swallow an elephant.

Seems to be some sort of quasi-phoenix like creature.

You finally get some confirmations in this passage, but also some confusing things. Skybearer is confirmed as Zhang Sanfeng, a legendary Daoist from the 12th century claimed to have created Taiji and closely associated with the Wudang Mountains. Zhang Wuji is a character from one of Jin Yong’s books, The Heaven Sword and Dragon Saber (these swords are also the swords being mentioned). He is unofficially Zhang Sanfeng’s student. This unnamed character here kinda pokes fun at Zhang Sanfeng’s new Daoist title (Zhang Sanfeng in itself is a Daoist title), which isn’t really apparent if you’re not aware of the background or Chinese. I will try to explain it concisely. The specific characters for “imperial court” is 天庭, also translated as heavenly court, In

ancient China, there was a strong connection between the emperor's court and the heavens. The specific character for "setting" in this paragraph and "bearer" in Skybearer (天载) are somewhat similar (装 vs 载) and a play on Zhang Sanfeng's righteous character. Fitting since he is the Upper President of the Cultivation Court. One of the main themes in this other novel behind these two swords are that they are allusions to killing the tyrannical emperor. (Dragonslayer Saber - emperor is thought of as a dragon, hence slaying the dragon. Heaven Reliance Sword - the emperor is referred to as "The Son of Heaven" not the heavens itself. It is ultimately heaven that decides the emperor)

Chapter 267: Coincidence?

Swish... The sun shined with brilliant rays once more. The surrounding clouds had been dyed snow-white. There was no predicted solar eclipse for today, igniting a majority of people's curiosity.

"This is pretty weird..." In Mingshui Province, the owner of a small shop near the branch and a customer who was rocking their fan back and forth and buying items both sighed with emotion: "I've been alive for over sixty years, and I still haven't really seen a solar eclipse... Ah, 33 bucks, thanks for your patronage."

His finger customarily pressed the cash register, yet he discovered that the drawer simply wouldn't open.

"Power's out?" He surveyed the lightless shop in astonishment. "What's going on...?"

In a school, the ending bell stopped. An unknown number of teachers and students looked at the bell in surprise. Afterwards, they all happened to sigh.

A power outage... They were too accustomed to such an occurrence.

At this moment, an untold number of angry shouts came from net cafes throughout the entire city. Nonetheless, as they asked other places, they shockingly discovered that all of of Mingshui Province... was without power!

Concealed in the city, nobody at all would've been able to expect that this provincial-wide power outage was nothing more than a cover-up to cut off one computer among all of them.

After no less than three hours passed in the branch, the office door slowly opened.

"Are you alright?" Mao Ba'er took the initiative to rush in and check the office. Mhm... good, not a single thing broke. This kid's

skill in qi cultivation is his specialty...

Xu Yangyi actually laughed: "Fine."

"I think you should go to the spa now and loosen up. How about I go have your mortal apprentice... Lin something come? Take you to a bathhouse?"

"Branch Master." Peony glared fiercely at Mao Ba'er and asked with deep concern: "Did you... find it?"

Xu Yangyi shook his head, his face without a ripple like a dried well.

"It's nothing..." Peony pursed her lips: "just a power outage... It'll be a day at most. Mingshui is the provincial capital. The chief of the Electricity Bureau will patch things up."

"I hope so." Xu Yangyi walked to his cultivation room: "Call me when the power's back."

Thirty minutes later, the branch's lights came back on. He immediately started his computer yet discovered...

The database that you want to search does not exist.

Crack... The teacup in his hand unwittingly made a soft noise. Several fine cracks spread forth. His gaze was calmly trained on the computer, faintly wavering.

Jingle... At this time, a telephone rang out in the room. Xu Yangyi slowly picked it up. "Hello?"

"Greetings, Branch Master." A man's voice echoed from the telephone and said with a little caution: "We're the Featherwood Guard headquarter's database. We are hereby informing you that the Featherwood Guard has turned off search for demons above A-rank. Please..."

"Why?" Xu Yangyi asked dimly, yet his voice was ice-cold like a knife: "Give me a reason."

The other side of the telephone paused: "Branchmaster Xu..."

there's nothing that can be done... The Capital is extremely close to Mingshui Province, and headquarters's position is at the Capital's edge... The sudden power outage just now... Our databases at A-rank and above... were all destroyed..."

Silence. Ten-odd seconds passed; the other side of the telephone evidently dared not hang up. The man tried and called out: "Branchmaster Xu?"

"I'm here." Xu Yangyi's voice was somewhat rough, and he softly coughed and answered.

"Branchmaster Xu, please understand. We recently found out as well. Deputy Branchmaster Jadesun had us immediately notify you."

Xu Yangyi nodded and said indifferently: "Thanks. How long will it approximately take to restore?"

"I can't say for sure..." The man answered: "These resources don't all exist in the Featherwood Guard. At least half of them are with other powers. We'll still have to get in touch again. I'm afraid that even a couple months won't get things fixed. After all, the user rate for the A-plus demon databases ordinarily isn't much."

A couple months... Xu Yangyi took the crack-covered teacup and tossed it in the trash: "Once it's fixed, immediately notify me. No matter if it's the middle of the night or I'm in death seclusion."

"Yes!"

Xu Yangyi hung up the phone, his gaze looking deeply outside the room.

A coincidence... It really was a coincidence... that there would be an unpredicted solar eclipse, and after this eclipse, all of Mingshui Province experienced a power outage. It had even spread to a Featherwood Guard branch at the fringes of the Capital. The resources all ruined. This...

Was this truly a coincidence? Or... was this event indeed a matter

of happenstance?

He didn't want to investigate this matter. If it wasn't a coincidence, then it only represented one thing! The Godseal Spark... This thing perhaps involved a few other reasons that someone didn't want him to search for.

“Someone able to completely cut off power to Mingshui Province and even destroy the Featherwood Guard's database isn't someone I can afford to offend.” He puffed out a long trail of smoke: “But this is only the worst speculation... If the opposing party doesn't want me to investigate, they could've totally annihilated the current me with their strength.”

He took a deep drag. His great victory over Danxia Temple didn't drive him rampant with arrogance. This was because he clearly understood that his present battle stood in the Qi Condensation realm. Were it not for the united efforts of all geniuses in the great war against the Foundation Establishment corpse Wei Zhongxian, he simply wouldn't have survived until now.

If any Foundation Establishment cultivator became dead-set in heart and wished to exterminate him, he wouldn't even have margin to struggle. He was still only one person among a million cultivators, not one among 20,000.

“But they didn't have to do things like this.” He flicked cigarette ash, and his eyes narrowed. “From this angle, is it that I still haven't touched their bottom line as of now? Do they believe that they don't have to do anything to me?”

“But if this really was a coincidence, I'll just have to keep on waiting. In other words, no matter what, I can't look at the Godseal Spark's data in the next couple months...” He lifted his head and looked at the ceiling: “And after these months, I must head to Longsu Province.”

In his heart, a warning omen suddenly arose!

It would be for best that it wasn't human calamity; a natural disaster was better...

If it was human calamity, this was the worst speculation. In that case... his actions could be said to be playing out in the palm of this person's hand! Yet were it not for this occasion being too coincidental, he simply wouldn't have the theory that a pair of eyes in the darkness were watching him!

Taking a few deep breaths, he forced down the thirst and longing in his heart, commanding himself not to continue thinking. He stubbornly placed his trip to the treasuries and the Longsu Province war ahead.

His finger played with a lighter. The compact Zippo lighter was like a silver knife turning and flying at his fingertips. After ages, he set the lighter on the table.

"First, my left arm has to be restored." He mumbled to himself certainly: "In the Capital, the opponent dared to assassinate me. But in the Capital... the Cultivation Court's upper and lower presidents, and Ancestor Hiddenscent is keeping watching, but they haven't spoken. They took action at Grand Artificer Gao Muya's door, but Senior Gao just acted as if he didn't see. The opponent's strength... is honestly very shocking."

"Demons. First-rate clans. Spider forms. If I wanted to find them, it wouldn't be hard to. They're also openly telling me without fear that they're not scared at all about us finding out. This time, it was a lone assassin. Next time, how many will it be?"

Xu Yangyi inhaled deeply and looked at the spacious office. The shadows seemed to be hiding malicious reflections. He laughed grimly and tightly clenched his fists. "Recovering strength is my first choice."

Time passed quickly. In the blink of an eye, two days went by. On the third day, Xu Yangyi put on a tailored suit and bid farewell to everyone. He stepped onto an airplane flying straight to the

Capital.

As he appeared in front of Gao Muya again, Gao Muya carried a faint smile in his old somewhat muddy eyes. “I knew that you wouldn’t die so easily.”

“Thanks for the lucky words, Senior.” Xu Yangyi laughed as he cupped his hands. He was without the slightest fraction of resentment that Gao Muya was unconcerned as the opponent had sprung into action while he had been at his doorstep.

Why would Gao Muya care about him? Just because of his first-time Danxia Temple journey?

Support and investment were fine but personally taking action was the same as tearing up the honor and respect of the clan who tried to assassinate him. Presently, he was one out of a million cultivators. He didn’t even hold such great esteem.

If he didn’t enter Foundation Establishment, he would end up as a yellow soil.

“Come.” Gao Muya’s eyes already carried a wisp of excitement. “Let’s create the strongest magik prosthesis together... I... am already itching to do so!”

“Yes.” Xu Yangyi smiled and bowed. “But before this, junior still has a few words that I want to say.”

Gao Muya raised his chint, hinting for him to continue.

“In the Qi Condensation realm, which cultivation weapon is the best?”

“The Spirit Accumulation Cannon.” Gao Muya said without even thinking: “Solely discussing might, the Spirit Accumulation Cannon is first, but this cannon is used for attacking sects. Its power is absolutely great, but the charging time needs over a dozen minutes. It basically can’t be used for handling cultivators, but used for attacking sects and mountain-protector grand arrays, it’s number one in valor.”

Xu Yangyi nodded: “Dare I ask senior what the second is?”

“The Spirit Chart Armor.” Gao Muya said certainly: “The function of all cultivation weapons isn’t strong at the start. Instead, it’s amplification, amplifying a cultivator’s ability in one field. The Spirit Chart Armor is the finest among them. A 5% increase still can’t be seen in one person, but all weapons are used in war. A cultivator war... has thousands of cultivators participating. This time, you’ll be able to see the strong point of cultivation weaponry.”

“So that’s how it is.” Xu Yangyi laughed as he nodded: “When Senior and I start forging the Ketu-Rahu Sword, we’re definitely going to spend a couple months in the artificing room. Before this, I’d like to place an order of fifty Spirit Accumulation Cannons, fifty Spirit Chart Armors, and a Flamedragon Master Cannon.”

The light of Gao Muya’s eyes suddenly flashed, and he said meaningfully: “Young fellow... you’re the accepted pushover this time. What the heck do you still want the Flamedragon Master Cannon in the most disadvantaged position? Who’s going to defend it during its half-an-hour-long charging time?”

Xu Yangyi smiled yet didn’t speak.

Gao Muya raised a brow and studied him heavily. A couple seconds later, he inhaled deeply. “You still want to assault those major lineages?”

He looked at Xu Yangyi for ages like he didn’t recognize the latter and jeered: “Kid... do you understand how to frickin’ write the two characters for ‘lineage’?”

“I don’t.” Xu Yangyi cupped his fist respectfully. “So, I want to learn.”

“Courting death.” Gao Muya chuckled grimly: “Just by relying on two or three of your tom cats and kittens? Doesn’t the Xingtian Legion just have ten people? Is your choice by ordering so many

magik artifacts to prepare funeral clothes?”

Gao Muya shot his mouth off, but Xu Yangyi wasn't angry at all and laughed. He said nothing more.

You've got a good strategy, and I've got a ladder to get over the wall. Do you really think my Xingtian Legion is so easily trumped? Do you really think that the Xingtian Legion is going into battle all alone?

Before my final two cards haven't been revealed, it's still a mystery as to whom the deer falls!

Chapter 268: The Body as an Artifact (1)

“This old man shouldn’t reject business coming to my door, but...” Gao Muya swept an eye over Xu Yangyi. “it’s altogether 600,000 medium-grade spirit stones. Forgive me, but our Ironforge Stronghold’s artificing workshop doesn’t sell on credit.”

“[Ironforge Stronghold?](#)” Xu Yangyi couldn’t help but laugh. Why was this name so familiar...

“People always have some fun to spend time away.” Gao Muya laughed: “So how about it? If you can’t afford, it’s not that I can’t sell to you, but...”

“No need to be troubled, Senior.” Xu Yangyi bowed. His coffers held a million spirit stones from the last auction. The mounting of the Ketu-Rahu Sword, the hundred magik artifacts, and the master cannon would wipe out his cash dry and clean. The Danxia Temple gains were quite rich. There was the Rootless Nine Bends Aqua, the ambergris, the livyatan corpse, the Heavenmend Stone, the unspeakable secret of the Dao Scripture, and also... the two most important and unused keys.

And yet?

It still wasn’t time for the aqua to be refined. The ambergris was planned for his own use. The Heavenmend Stone was for his left arm, and it was furthermore impossible to speak of the Dao Scripture. After this campaign, he really was headed back to financial liberation.

Gao Muya eyed Xu Yangyi in surprise. This tremendous sum of money couldn’t even be fished out by deep-pocketed Foundation Establishment cultivators, yet Xu Yangyi, a Qi Condensation cultivator, was actually able to. It seemed... that this young fellow’s Danxia Temple harvest was quite rich...

His smile vanished: “In the end... I’ll remind you again. Your

situation is special. The Ketu-Rahu Sword's original copy grew into your body, so this refinement process will be very... mhm, painful. But once it starts, I absolutely can't stop. Even if you pass out from the pain."

Xu Yangyi's smile disappeared as well, and he bowed deeply. "Junior only asks for a perfect and flawless left arm. As for everything else, bring it on."

"Good! Hahaha!" After Gao Muya reared his head back and laughed heartily, he studied Xu Yangyi intensely. "In that case, rest up. We'll officially begin tomorrow."

On this night, Xu Yangyi did something that he hadn't done for a long time.

Sleep.

After a cultivator reached the middle stage, one could fast and abstain from food. Naturally, sleep could also be left out. It was a feeling that he hadn't experienced for ages. He slept rather soundly.

On the morning of the next day, he bathed and changed clothes. Around ten o'clock, a paper crane flew to his window sill. It only spoke one line: Grandmaster invites you to come.

Xu Yangyi quickly met with Gao Muya. Not only was it him, there was another old man who seemed not far from death. However, the old man's mental cognition was frighteningly robust. On his hands, veins were furthermore exposed. At a glance, they were hands that worked year round. It was just that his spiritual pressure caused the surrounding atmosphere to faintly tremble.

Half-step Core Formation!

"Greetings, Se..."

"Se?" What se?" Before Xu Yangyi even finished speaking, the old man waved his hand impatiently, his gaze ardently measuring

him. “We of the crafts are different from the cultivation system. Those of attainment are masters. Don’t say ‘Senior, Senior’; it’s annoying to listen to. Do you take knee and welcome Teacher Gao when you see him? Don’t leave your body crooked! Let this old man see!”

The old man hadn’t even said these words before hurrying to separate clothes and pinch Xu Yangyi’s arm. Xu Yangyi moved the bone arm, and the color of spring rippled across the man’s old face. It seemed as if he was gently stroking and caressing the nude body of a supreme beauty who was separated by a thin bed sheet.

No one was willing to continue waiting. To an artificer, this was their finest masterpiece! To Xu Yangyi, this was the loss of an arm and then the gain of an even stronger one!

The old man rubbed the arm down with Crepe Jasmine flowers and pulled his hand back with extreme reluctance. Soon afterwards, not caring at all whether Xu Yangyi consented or not, he took him with a bundle of spiritual force. He turned around and started to fly down towards the underground.

Gao Muya uttered not a single word and followed from behind. His face seemed tranquil, but in truth, a fiery expectation had already revealed itself on his face.

This time, they were walking a path that Xu Yangyi didn’t have knowledge of. On the path, there were no less than five great doors that were about a meter thick, and their surfaces were covered with runes. Following their arrival, the doors boomed and rumbled as if they were responding. Twenty minutes later, the trio finally stopped in front of a door.

Xu Yangyi stretched his neck, making a cracking sound. Once they reached this area, he was finally set down. Before him was a roughly two-meter-sized door. Compared with ordinary doors, it was somewhat larger. The door was carved with a realistic drawing of the Fire God Zhurong.

“Pleaser, Teacher.” The old man bowed respectfully towards Gao Muya. It was half-step Core Formation bowing towards late-stage Foundation Establishment, yet Gao Muya nodded as if it was an expected matter of course. Gao Muya struck out with a strange talisman in his hand and pushed the door.

Crack crack crack... The great door slowly opened, but at this moment, Xu Yangyi keenly saw... an endless amount of white smoke surprisingly rising from Gao Muya’s hand!

This is... high heat? No, that’s not right, the surrounding temperature isn’t high. Then this is... Xu Yangyi’s gaze flashed and he looked at the door with some surprise. This is ice?

As if he guessed what Xu Yangyi was thinking, Gao Muya said lowly: “This is Millennium Profound Ice. In the cultivation world, there are no more than five pieces of Profound Ice that are this large. Young fellow, I think highly of you. This is the greatest artificing room of I, Gao Muya!”

Rumble! The great door completely opened. Subsequently, a boiling heat wave suddenly rushed out! It even caused Gao Muya and old man’s beards to chaotically billow! The air appeared hazy and indistinct!

Xu Yangyi narrowed his eyes in understanding. The Profound Ice door was used to isolate the outside heat... Inside the room, there was a smelting furnace. It couldn’t be considered particularly large, roughly around five meters in size. However... this forge’s appearance was the thousand-armed Guanyin, the goddess of mercy! Each hand held a tool.

They were tongs and hammers, seemingly ordinary. And yet, even standing here, he could sense the terrible spiritual force fluctuations inside!

“These... are actually all magik treasures!” He immediately knew what this was. At the same time, he was astonished by the grand wealth of a grand craftsman! Artificing equipment that

unexpectedly used magik treasures. Merely this thousand-armed Guanyin was equal to the entire estate of many second-rate clans!

Nonetheless, what shocked Xu Yangyi the most wasn't the thousand-armed Guanyin. Instead, it was a ball of fire... a pure-white blaze! It had no temperature, at least... the surrounding air had no haziness. However... it was alive. It was a roughly foot-long nine-tailed fox. This fox was completely formed from flame! It was dozing off in front of the thousand-armed Guanyin!

“Young fellow, just seeing this place is enough for you to boast for a lifetime.” The old man's voice carried an incomparably arrogance. “Master has a total of five artificing rooms. This one... has been opened only once in thirty years! That time, it was to remodel a magik treasure for Daomaster Skybearer!”

“This flame is a post-celestial spirit blaze. Teacher has christened it as the ‘Burning Flame’, meaning that the flame can burn. At the lowest...” He glanced at Xu Yangyi sinisterly. “its temperature is above 20,000 °C! It can compare with the direct illumination of ultraviolet light!”

Xu Yangyi exhaled sharply. Presently, his Ten Cardinals Red Lotus could only reach a temperature of over 4,000 °C. This little fox... was actually five times hotter than his divine ability!

Gao Muya didn't speak. From the beginning he entered this place, his and the old man's bearings as grand masters was illustrated. They were calm, a calmness resembling a sovereign king touring his kingdom. He made several complicated hand seals, a few beads of sweat even on his head. The great door then cracked shut.

At the same time the great door closed, icy-blue veins followed and began to shine in the twenty-plus-meter-sized basement, creeping forwards and spreading. They formed incredibly profound runes. In short time, the room had completely transformed into an icy-blue sea.

In the next second, the little fox howled, and its nine tails fanned open like a peacock. In the wake of a sonorous explosion, a pure-white blaze flared with a rumble!

No one spoke. Gao Muya and the old man sat down and began to meditate. Xu Yangyi was also like this. This stage caused his frame of mind to reach a peace like the stillness of water, to be without further secondary thoughts.

After half an hour, Gao Muya opened his eyes and said indifferently: "Prepare."

Xu Yangyi shed away his clothing. His muscles didn't appear horrifically brawny, but they were very sturdy. Each muscle was like a rubber band, seemingly without strength, but once filled with power, they would form a dreadful explosive force.

The smile on the old man's face had long since ceased to be. From his hands, he made complex gestures, and a layer of dark-green light shrouded Xu Yangyi's entire body. All that remained was the left side of Xu Yangyi's chest and arm.

"No matter what, you can't budge." The old man prudently inspected several times and warned again and again. Soon afterwards, he respectfully fell back to the side.

Crack crack crack... Following Gao Muya's continuous onslaught of hand seals, a grooved desk rose up from below where Xu Yangyi stuck out his left arm. As it turned out, the desk supported Xu Yangyi's hand, yet there were three circular recesses about five centimeters in size on the surface.

"Get ready." Gao Muya's gaze was terribly solemn. With these words, a small purple foot-long hammer that was carved with exquisite ornamental designs flew into his hand. In an instant, his hand emitted a meter of white light and pierced into the bone arm that Xu Yangyi had set on the desk!

The white light thrust in rather wondrously, coincidentally in

the first recess. Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to react, a purple lightning bolt was brought forth in midair! Following this crashing cry of thunder, Gao Muya used his hammer to slam the spiritual light with all his strength!

Both of Xu Yangyi's eyes suddenly opened wide. At this time, a terrible oscillation spread to his four limbs and abdomen! It wasn't just an aftershock, it almost shook his entire being apart!

Ding! Hum... The first sound was Gao Muya using the spiritual-light nail to fix Xu Yangyi's arm and the desk together. The following noise was the long melodious cry from the spiritual-light nail.

Gao Muya raised his hand, and the old man firmly gazed at Xu Yangyi. In a twinkling, Xu Yangyi's complexion went from pale to ashen and then dark red. After approximately ten-odd minutes passed, he returned to his original condition.

Afterwards, he began to cough fiercely.

"Cough, cough, cough!"

A fit of violent hacking rang out, and the old man watched him for quite a while. Unmoved, the old man said: "Not bad, Teacher's Thirty-Six Rolling Chaos Winds actually didn't make you throw up on the spot. Your perseverance and fleshly body are pretty well tempered."

In his heart, Xu Yangyi could only smile bitterly.

Gao Muya simply didn't give him a sliver of preparation time, only having the old man set up the most precise defensive measures. The hammer almost caused his heart to quake and split open.

He was drenched in cold sweat as he panted for air. Another several minutes passed, and he raised his hand to look.

On his left arm, the spiritual-light nail was exposed by roughly a third on the surface. Already, it firmly secured him to the work

station. He then realized that Gao Muya was afraid that he wouldn't be able to endure such pain. With his arm nailed to the surface of the desk, it was impossible for him to flail about.

Without continuing, no less than half an hour had passed. Xu Yangyi's face was completely normal, and he nodded towards Gao Muya: "Senior, please."

"Are you ready?" Gao Muya looked at him seriously. "If not, there's no need to keep insisting. The several months of time that I scheduled in advance was because this arm had already bonded together with you. If you want to artifice, it can only be refined on you. Thus, my arcane effort will directly impact your body. If you don't have absolute willpower, you won't be able to bear it."

"But, I won't stop either." At this moment, his face without a shred of mercy. "The Ketu-Rahu Sword... this might be the masterpiece of my entire life among all the objects I have refined. Once I start, there's no chance that I'll stop because you can't go on. I've also said this to you."

"Relax." Xu Yangyi had already recovered his cool. "Since I chose this path, I'll walk it to the end no matter what."

"Come, I also want to see. To have a grand artificer praise it as a supreme masterpiece, what level of power will my left arm have?"

Ironforge is the name of the dwarven capital city in the MMORPG World of Warcraft

Chapter 269: The Body as an Artifact (1)

Afterwards, Xu Yangyi laughed: “Honestly, I would’ve said if I couldn’t hold on.”

There was a chance that he really wouldn’t be able to endure that terrible hammer art from just now for long.

Gao Muya looked at him for a few seconds and laughed: “Not bad, young fellow.”

Before his voice even fell, the second hammer blow suddenly slammed down, likewise without a sliver of forewarning!

This old goon!

In his heart, Xu Yangyi almost vomited blood. He pulled his attention, not wanting himself to resist and cause the hammer to go askew. However, such a sensation... was extremely agonizing...

Crack! The treasure hammer actually brought forth thunder and lightning in the sky! With a rumble, it smashed the second hole!

Boom... The shock fallout swiftly diffused over Xu Yangyi’s body. His face was like golden paper, yet his teeth were tightly clenched. He was persevering through all of this. Nonetheless... things weren’t done!

The second hole seemed to be much more difficult to smash than the first one. After the first hammer blow, there was actually second a strike!

“372!” Both of Gao Muya’s eyes went wide, and he snarled. As he extended his hand, the purple treasure hammer was no longer seen. The old man used an inconceivable speed and took a green treasure hammer from Guanyin’s 372nd hand. Gao Muya didn’t even glance and mustered all of his strength. Like a thunder god descending to the mortal world, he took aim at the second hole and smashed again!

“Urgh...” At the same time the hammer smashed down, Xu Yangyi couldn’t help but release a heavy groan at long last. Two hammer blows in the same place. Right on his body! Although his arm didn’t have the slightest feeling, the shock wave caused his internal organs and even bones to have a breaking sensation!

A thread of blood spilled out from the corner of his mouth. His right fist was already grabbing onto his thigh in a death grip, trembling fiercely. Even he hadn’t expected that the Ketu-Rahu Sword forging would be so painful.

Gao Muya finished his two hammer blows and raised his hand once more. Xu Yangyi no longer want to see how many times he was going to smash down. Gao Muya eyed him and said lowly: “Hold on, this is the last hammer.”

THUNK! The third hammer echoed loudly. A dark-green ripple emerged over the qi nail. The hammer departed, yet the qi nail was still trembling incessantly. In kind, Xu Yangyi was also trembling, his veins already drummed out of his flesh.

“Not bad.” Gao Muya wiped away at his sweat. He hadn’t spoken during these three hammers, but they had a name, the Rolling Winds Three Broadaxes. And while these three supremely intense and unswerving hammer blows seemed simple, they in fact already mobilized over 30% of his entire bodily spiritual force! If it weren’t for the defense of the old man’s light membrane, Xu Yangyi would be quaked to death by Foundation Establishment spiritual force, no chance for him to be even deader. But even with this shield, this feeling truly could be said to be a life worse than death.

Gao Muya’s “not bad” wasn’t said because Xu Yangyi was able to endure. On the contrary, it wasn’t just due to Xu Yangyi’s perseverance, but also the sole heavy groan he had made until now.

He studied Xu Yangyi whose body was already raining down with sweat. Xu Yangyi’s muscles seemed to be cramping somewhat. The

crook of Gao Muya's mouth curved imperceptibly, and he swiped the storage ring on his hand and tossed out a bottle of pill elixir. "Drink it."

Xu Yangyi didn't take the bottle. It wasn't that he didn't want to but rather his entire body and all his bones were presently incapable of budging. After no less than several minutes, he used his shaking hand to grasp the bottle and downed it in a sudden gulp.

Pure qi spread into his limbs and bones, and he felt a little bit bitter. His bloodless face finally recovered a trace of a flush.

"Twenty minutes." Xu Yangyi crowed out. Leaning on the desk, he wiped away the cold sweat that dotted his forehead.

"Good." Gao Muya also didn't spare a word. This was nothing more than the most initial procedure. If Xu Yangyi couldn't even endure this... As he had said, he wouldn't stop at all. And while Xu Yangyi certainly wouldn't be struck to death, as for whether his foundation would suffer a shock later on... that wasn't something related to him.

Twenty minutes later, Xu Yangyi wordlessly nodded. Gao Muya glanced at him and turned his head. "204."

A red hammer fell into his hand. Shortly following, a half-moon of fiery-red brilliance ignited in the room. With a thunk, that painful sensation invaded and ate away at Xu Yangyi's entire body again.

"Fuck..." He tightly gritted his teeth, his entire body numb. This time, he suddenly felt...

Movement...

Inside his body... something was moving?

Presently, something that caused him to lose attention was undoubtedly for the best. With all his might, he was sensitive to things inside his body. However, the shaking feeling actually

became weaker and weaker. After concentrating his full attention, he unexpectedly felt that Gao Muya's hammer had relaxed by a sliver.

Spiritual sense passed through his body, scanning it with Innersight bit by bit. In less than three seconds, he discovered... that the shaking wasn't something else but rather his qi sea!

Or perhaps it should be said his former qi sea.

There within, after his qi sea originally shifted, there had been nothing. Nonetheless, he still placed something there.

The silkworm.

Furthermore, he had used qi to cage It in. Even if the creature whined more, he wouldn't release It. No matter the yearning the silkworm expressed towards his three tree leaves, he still wouldn't give them to It to eat.

This silkworm had hatched from the strange stone. Even though he searched high and low in all ancient tomes and records, he still didn't know what the creature was. Xu Yangyi absolutely wouldn't allow such danger to arise.

And now... Gao Muya's qi was too tyrannical. The refining brought by a Foundation Establishment qi hammer carried a great qi shock. The prison that he had set up for the silkworm back then was jolting apart little by little!

Xu Yangyi gnashed his teeth, spiritual sense quickly drawing closing to his qi sea. As his spiritual sense hurried, he heard Gao Muya's voice ring out again: "The time has come."

"Wait..."

Before his voice even fell, a shock even more violent than before passed on with a rumble!

If the past several blows were like tides... this one was a tsunami! Frenzied spiritual force charged into each of his bones and

muscles, seemingly dragging him into the nexus of a storm!

Boom! Following this hammer, his dantian quaked sonorously. His spiritual sense saw that his qi cage had finally split open by a crack!

However, what emerged inside wasn't a silkworm but a smidgen of white.

Boom! Before he even looked carefully, the next hammer blow immediately arrived. He clenched his teeth and suddenly flung his head back. Crystalline and translucent perspiration was flashing with splendor amidst the interweaving of all kinds of qi. Gao Muya's hammer blow came too quickly. Even now, he no longer had time to say a word.

This time, the hammer blow was even more complex. In the wake of this strike, the crack on the qi cage in his dantian became progressively larger!

"Chatter, chatter, chatter..." Xu Yangyi's teeth shook following this vibration. It wasn't that he couldn't tolerate it, but such a quake seemed as if it was going to smash open his soul. His mouth was no longer able to remain shut.

"Huff..." Almost instinctively, his breathing rate accelerated. This was the fundamental law of existence that Heavens Law taught. Extremely fast breathing could decrease pain. Especially excruciating pain.

Like so, time passed on by minutes and seconds, and each second seemed to crawl onwards like a year. The booming sounds of hammer blows echoed continuously, and the proliferation of the qi cage's crack became even more intense!

BOOM!!!! Following a final echo, Gao Muya took a long sigh and wiped away the cold sweat that covered his face. Three qi nails had consumed over half of his qi. The old man handed over a qi capsule, and Gao Muya took it but didn't eat it. Instead, he glanced

at Xu Yangyi.

Xu Yangyi's face was pale, yet a sound still hadn't come out of his throat. His chest was heaving up and down fiercely, and it seemed that his heartbeat could be heard here.

"He hasn't passed out, eh..." The old man clicked his tongue: "Teacher, you're going to be lenient, right?"

Gao Muya faced upwards and popped the capsule into his mouth. He said indifferently: "How could I be lenient when it's time to artifice? Even if it's a rare precedent this time, I absolutely won't make a joke with what might be my proudest work."

The old man's gaze flashed, and he glanced seriously at Xu Yangyi for the first time. "This young fellow..."

"He's using his willpower to push himself." Gao Muya put on his clothes and barked dryly in laughter: "Worthy of being a person able to leave Danxia Temple... Fellow Daoist Di, if this child can actually get a stretch of land this time, his future prospects will be limitless."

Cultivator Di eyed Xu Yangyi and shook his head. "Difficult."

"A cultivator's individual battle strength and a collective war isn't a single-layered thing." He respectfully helped Gao Muya put his jacket on again: "The former would've destroyed a county at most. The latter... might destroy a country."

All Xu Yangyi felt was the droning of mosquitos as the side of his ears. Right now, he couldn't hear what the duo were talking about at all. As his perception returned to his body, he immediately looked towards his dantian.

There within... to his surprise, the qi cage had already crumbled apart completely! Yet what emerged was unexpectedly a cocoon!

"What the fuck is this thing..." He clenched his teeth, wanting to sit up, yet just as his body straightened, he felt his lower legs go soft. He persevered for quite a while, but he finally went weak and

collapsed, no lost to his honor.

“Young fellow.” Gao Muya sat in a chair and drank tea water that had flown in from some unknown place, laughing: “Have your legs given out? Be happy with yourself, alright. Even using protective magik artifacts, the number of Qi Condensation cultivators that can even keep on propping themselves up after my hammers can be counted on five fingers. You can even sit up straight. That’s already considered strange.”

Xu Yangyi shut his eyes and regulated his breathing for a long period. He then said: “Senior, is the artificing next?”

“That’s right.” Gao Muya waved his hand and the teacup vanished without a trace. “But... your tempering has only just begun.”

With a passing magik art, a tremendous blaze ignited in a flash! At this moment, the temperature erupted all around! It was practically just like entering a blazing hell!

In concert, all the icy-blue runes on the wall flashed and forcibly absorbed the terrible heatwave.

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath. Just now, the air in the entire room had turned vague in an instant! But now... a giant white fox head, made entirely out of flame, was fixing its eyes on him several meters away.

“One of the most important judging standards of an artificer’s quality is fire manipulation technique.” Gao Muya stood up, looked at the several-meter-sized blaze, and uttered: “Next up... you’ll welcome this 20,000 °C flame to refine the Heavenmend Stone. When it’s at its hottest, it’ll be poured into your left arm bone.”

“Don’t blame me for not reminding you.” Cultivator Di laughed, taking delight in Xu Yangyi’s misfortune: “This... might cause your blood to boil in a split second. A temperature that can even roast

[brain flower](#) to a crisp... I'm really looking forward to your screams. When that girl Quan was at this step back then—and although a Heavenmend Stone wasn't used—one could even say that her screams tore at her heart and split open her lungs. I'll probably get to hear an even more beautiful symphony this time.”

“The dead can't die. It would be better if you passed out.” Gao Muya looked at Xu Yangyi and said: “You sure you don't need something to bite into?”

“No need.” Xu Yangyi laughed and pointed at his body dripping with cold sweat. “Can I look even worse than this now?”

“That I can't say for sure.” Gao Muya chuckled heartily and gently waved his hand. In an instant, a fist-sized stone appeared in his hand.

The Heavenmend Stone.

Multicolored and gorgeous, the stone illuminated the entire room with streaming light and overflowing color.

“This is the Heavenmend Stone, eh...” At this moment, Cultivator Di was somewhat quivering in excitement. “This... can be written into modern cultivation artificing history! Such a large piece of Heavenmend Stone... We get to personally dissolve it... This level of glory... simply unimaginable!”

Gao Muya didn't speak and he pushed the Heavenmend Stone forward, his expression grave. The Heavenmend Stone immediately floated into the air.

Shortly afterwards, both of his hands began to form seals at a blinding speed. Yet as his hand seals became faster and faster, the fox fire actually emitted flame tails! In unison, they burned and scorched towards the Heavenmend Stone!

“Fire Manipulation Secret Art...” Both of Gao Muya's hands clenched forwards without warning, and he shouted: “[Heavenly Works Activation!!!](#)”

BOOM! Snow-white radiance engulfed the multicolored domain in a matter of moments! It transformed everything in the underground palace in a field of white rays!

“Brain Flower” In context, this looks weird, but the old man is talking about a Chinese dish called “Roasted Brain Flower”. It uses a pig’s brain which is roasted. The “flower” part comes from other condiments used and Sichuan pepper powder.

天工开物 - “Heavenly Works Activation” is the name I ended up coming up with. These Chinese characters are actually based on a book published in May 1637 CE by Song Yingxing. Its other translated name is The Exploitation of the Works of Nature. This name doesn’t exactly work as a “cool move”.

Chapter 270: The Body as an Artifact (2)

In Jiangnan City, there was a luxurious villa. The exterior didn't differ from other villas, but ten meters underground inside, there was a tremendous space. The ceiling and floor were all spread using white marble, shimmering with gentle radiance. It was unknown what was used to to set them. The facilities inside the room were rather simple. There was only an ancient wooden table and ten chairs. In addition, there was an enormous map of China behind the wooden table.

At this moment, all ten chairs were seated by people. Some were drooping old men, some were old women with chicken-like skin and crane-like hair, and some were middle-aged men with tiger-like gazes. Furthermore, in this fifty-meter-sized space, there were solemn-faced men dressed in suits and leather shoes who were standing at each two-meter interval.

"Nalan Yanran's image was sent." A bald old man dressed in a changpao was at the leading chair. His old face was covered in spots, but his mind was incredibly hale and hearty. He clasped his teacup, casually set aside tea powder, and said dimly: "The Xingtian Legion's Commander is very cautious. He didn't see anything."

"It's outside our forecast but within reason." An old woman at the side looked at the jade walking stick in her hand, somewhat lost thought. "If the foundation of a cultivator able to leave Danxia Temple was explored by us so quickly, This Palace would've suspected whether or not he came out due to dogshit luck."

"The Linghu Clan's alliance letter has arrived..." The bald old man's expression was motionless, and he set down his teacup. From his sleeve, he drew out a black paper crane and played with it as he pondered and said: "Longsu Province isn't large... and Nanzhou City is even smaller. But 'four minor clans', the closest among first-rate clans approaching the apex clan level, will

converge in this small region. Humanity's Lou Clan of Shuangqing and Nanhuai Province's Zhao Clan of Jingling... all of them have gathered. This time... Nanzhou can be said to be surging like a gathering storm..."

"It's not that the fierce dragons can't cross the river." The next was a scholarly middle-aged man who lightly sipped his tea: "In fifty years, China will only look to Longsu. In fifty years, Longsu will only look to Nanzhou. Clan Elder..."

The man said meaningfully: "It's four great clans and then some."

The old man smiled. "Have you taken a look at the map?"

"Of course."

"No... I'm talking about an even more detailed map." The old man narrowed his eyes: "You know, the Featherwood Guard's Longsu Province branch at the side of the heavenbound door?"

"Oh?" An old woman laughed dryly. A gorgeous multicolored spider crept onto her finger, crawling back and forth. She laughed coldly: "Won't that be the cemetery of our Danxia hero?"

"Clan Elder, I'm saying why does there have to be so much trouble! Slap that kid to his death and be done with everything!" A burly man said in annoyance: "Our Foundation Establishment cultivators are keeping watch in place. How about letting Yanran and the children charge through the enemy lines? How much strength is that going to waste?"

"Silly." The old man laughed as he brushed over the man with an eye. "Indeed, it's no question that we can send anyone to go slap the Featherwood Guard branch. But haven't you thought about Ancestor Ancientpine's level of respect? He could say the word if he wanted to right now and demand this place. The branch was originally there; who dares to speak against him?"

"His Honor hasn't but has instead placed Xu Yangyi there, the

man of the hour as of late. This is a suggestion to us that we can fight, but this is just his measuring pole. If it surpasses the Qi Condensation realm, and we go and slap this Danxia hero, we'll be welcoming the fiery wrath and the overturning seas of the palace in the sky... or are you saying that you've already advanced to Core Formation, Old Seven, and dare to speak to the Ancestor?"

"This..."

The old man said faintly: "This hand of Ancestor Ancientpine's can already be considered the utmost benevolence. To make even greater demands, could it be that you truly believe that a Core Formation ancestor's might is a boast? Which one of them doesn't have hundreds of lives at their command?"

"Ancestor, why is this?" An old woman mumbled: "To have his youngest disciple come to struggle for a territory and not make an explicit statement regarding his life or death... Could it be that His Honor really thinks we dare not kill this boy?"

"Kill." The old man's expression finally turned grave, cold like icy frost: "We must kill him."

"This time, anyone who dares to block us, except for Core Formation ancestors, must be slain!"

It was silent for a period of time, and he followed up and said: "This is a rearing of Gu."

"Ancestor Ancientpine favors this disciple a lot... If he can truly defend this territory, This Throne dares to bet that on the day of his Foundation Establishment, this place will become his fiefdom. Everyone..." He stood up, his gaze appearing to look down at a crowd below. "I have no wish to say more. There's no use at all in me saying more about the word 'heavenly paradise'. This matter is related to the clan's hundred-year foundation. We cannot lower our guard!"

"Those who block the path, kill! Those who obstruct, kill! Those

who fear battle, kill! Those who retreat, kill!”

“The Nalan Clan’s flag HAS to be inserted below the heavenbound door! Where Longsu Province’s Featherwood Guard branch is located!” His gaze had already turned somewhat crimson. As he began to speak about the clan’s grand stratagem, his murderous aura exploded without the slightest concealment. “Six months from now... two demon clans, two human clans, and the reckless Featherwood Guard... even if Longsu Province’s ground is dyed red, the Nalan Clan’s banner still must wave there! Nalan Rong!”

A middle-aged woman stood up and clasped her hands. “Please give me instruction, Clan Elder.”

“You... go together with Nalan Yanran.” The old man grinded his teeth and took a deep breath: “This time, there’s a chance of instability. I want you to personally supervise and direct the war... If anyone retreats, kill them. No mercy. No matter who it is that doesn’t obey command, don’t hesitate to kill them. I’ll take responsibility for you.”

“Yes!”

“Nalan Chong.”

“Present.”

“You...” The old man mumbled to himself for a few seconds: “bring the Nalan Clan’s Heavenly Net Legion...”

“Clan Elder, are we really mobilizing them?”

“Clan Elder, don’t tell me that the clan grounds won’t be defended?”

“If we mobilize the Heavenly Net Legion, the front door of the clan grounds will be completely open!”

“Shut up.” The old man sneered: “A lion fighting a rabbit still uses all of its strength. Do you all really think that if the

Featherwood Guard dares to place Branchmaster Xu here, he's a bone so easily chewed?"

"I..." His eyes narrowed. "want to exterminate him right away... He... is the best pillar for the Nalan Clan to establish its power! We'll use his head to plainly tell the world that the Nalan Clan is determined to win the soon-to-form heavenly paradise!"

The burly man furrowed his brows: "The Nalan Clan's 500-plus Dao defenders are already stationed in Xichuan. Although the Nalan Clan only has fifteen people, they're all the Nalan Clan's true elite. Any single one of them have the absolute certainty to advance to Foundation Establishment. Isn't using them to kill an insignificant Qi Condensation too much work for a little problem?"

"You're wrong." The old man uttered: "It's absolutely not just our clan who wants to use him to establish power. Even the human clans want to take his head to do so. The Heavenly Net Legion is to intercept the other clans. To be capable of leaving Danxia Temple, this Commander Xu is definitely familiar with single combat and small-scale conflicts. But..."

His gaze chilled. "This time... I want to give him a real war of thousands of people! I want to see if this attack by hundreds of cultivators can compare to a strike from Danxia Temple's giant demon! If it can decapitate him!"

"Even if he is a Core Formation disciple, whoever obstructs us will die for the Nalan Clan to rise to an apex clan!"

"Ugh..." At the same time, far away in the Capital, an extremely pained groan came from Xu Yangyi's mouth.

His entire body was shaking. The blue talismans that covered the entire room absorbed endless heat. At the moment, it could be said to be cool and refreshing, but he was still covered in cold sweat!

The Burning Flame had already transformed into fox form. In the

wake of Gao Muya's and Cultivator Di's ceaseless hand seals, the nine-tailed fox's tails extended several meters in length. Like hands, the tails roasted his left arm bone.

Yes, these tails weren't touching his body, and this strange Burning Flame's temperature hadn't spread, but the horrific heat scorching his arm bone caused all his blood to boil! Inside his body a furnace-cauldron seemed to activate, vapor desperately rising into the air. Sweat fell like rain, but these droplets didn't hit the ground. They completely evaporated.

"Hold on." Gao Muya was expressionless. Presently, it was extremely challenging for him to even say a word. Cultivator Di was even more terribly solemn. The duo's hand seals even brought forth mirages. With perfect command as an arm moving a finger, Gao Muya commanded the nine tails to separate into nine places and burn the arm bone.

And yet these nine places were distinguished by nine remnant pieces of the Heavenmend Stone. Half a month had already passed. In these ten-odd days, the trio hadn't rested. All the time was spent melting the Heavenmend Stone through day and night.

At this point, the Heavenmend Stone had already become nine gelatinous pieces. At any time, there was a chance that they would all melt and pour into Xu Yangyi's arm.

Xu Yangyi's eyes were somewhat red, and he bit his lip and drew blood. Nonetheless, he didn't scream because he understood very well that in the moment the Heavenmend Stone melted, that horrific temperature would spread to his internal organs from his arm in a flash! He was mobilizing his scant spiritual force to guard against the arrival of that moment with his utmost might!

If he made a mistake, he was doomed to suffer grievous and immediate injury. A serious injury didn't matter, but following the Danxia Temple journey... the Xingtian Legion could no longer tolerate the slightest disadvantage.

“Teacher!” At this time, Cultivator Di shouted in excitement. He only saw that the Heavenmend Stone on the shoulder section of the arm finally congeal into a multicolored droplet!

“Stand your ground, kid!” Gao Muya roared furiously. Immediately, the gorgeously colored droplet precisely covered Xu Yangyi’s shoulder with a clanking sound!

“URRAGGHH!!!” At this moment, Xu Yangyi drew his head back and snarled madly! It wasn’t pain. Perhaps it could be said what caused him to rave in fury was pain, but not truly the primary factor. On the contrary... it was the instantaneous combustion within his body! Wild and violent steam rushed out from his seven apertures, rendering him incapable of shutting his mouth any longer!

Following his scream, a fierce white column of gas suddenly gushed out of his mouth! This was the manifestation of a terribly high temperature, over 20,000 °C, directly spreading to his internal organs! Even if Cultivator Di’s qi membrane withstood a majority of it, the remainder was still enough to bless him with a life worse than death!

“FUCK!” His mind was a scarlet expanse. It was like his brain was boiling. In an instant, his complexion had become flushed red. Because of the high temperature, even his spiritual sense was somewhat chaotic. Following the sudden clenching of his teeth, he used his hand, long since powerless, to wave with all his strength. A meter-sized jade toad appeared in the room!

“Am... ber... gris...” His voice was somewhat raspy. Gao Muya immediately understood and a flame flew into the toad’s mouth with a wave of his hand. Three seconds later, a mild yet distant fragrance quietly pervaded the air.

“Huff...” Xu Yangyi bit his lip and wiped away at his cold sweat. Under this fragrance, he soon felt his mind become relaxed. The pain within his body still existed, but he was able to cling onto his

mind with a trace of sobriety. He was unlikely to lose consciousness.

However, not waiting for him to become clear-headed, an even more terrible heat wave attacked in the next second!

This time... the sixth remnant of the Heavenmend Stone... had melted!

Total dissolution! In the white fireball formed by the Burning Flame's sixth tail, it wasn't a droplet but rather a strand... a prismatic aqua, bearing a heart-shaking high temperature, completely poured into Xu Yangyi's left arm!

Chapter 271: The Body as an Artifact (3)

These rainbow aquas were extremely strange. They were evidently water, yet they seemed to be living creatures. Just a drop was like gelatin, actually dyeing the black arm bone with various colors!

And for the first time, the black arm bone actually displayed indications of softening!

“[Nine Dragons Pearl Delight!](#)” Both of Gao Muya’s eyes were crimson. At this moment, he didn’t have the effort to care about Xu Yangyi. He had spoken correctly; when such a time arrived, a grand artificer’s desire would finally seize the rising wind. No matter what, he would continue working! As for Xu Yangyi, Gao Muya no longer had the time to concern himself. He only wished that the other could hold on! Perhaps... it would be better for Xu Yangyi to black out!

Boom! Following Gao Muya’s shout, nine tails shortly united into one and transformed into an enormous fire orb. Along with Gao Muya’s gesture, it seemed like water, casting and forging back and forth on Xu Yangyi’s left arm bone!

“FUCK!!!” Xu Yangyi roared angrily, his voice hoarse. Such an all-terrible temperature made him truly wish that he had now passed out.

No good... now still isn’t the the most crucial moment... His eyes were also reddened, looking towards the fireball. Within it, there were an additional eight pieces of the Heavenmend Stone that hadn’t melted. Once they melted, the unconscious him wouldn’t be able to protect himself, and his meridians would possible be burned down!

Even if he had to force himself despite the pain... he had to make it through this phase!

In his mind, he recalled the words that Gao Muya had said to him. Among all materials, the Heavenmend Stone was the hardest and most heat-resistant material. Moreover, it was one of the primary materials for transforming the bone arm into a magik treasure embryo! This was the hardest step! And also Xu Yangyi's most painful step! After this step, there were still few procedures like this step that melted materials and used them directly on his arm. Nonetheless, this degree of pain couldn't be mentioned in the same breath let alone the same day with the Heavenmend Stone.

His body almost instinctively mobilized spiritual force. He knew of his own state. He clearly understood that his arcane effort was vastly different from others. After his left arm had been severed, there was still a moderate amount of mired spiritual force inside his meridians. This spiritual force... He presently dared not use it to cover the pain amidst his state of confusion. He could only wait for the time that all nine Heavenmend Stone pieces transformed into a blazing tide!

"This is..." However, just as he mobilized his spiritual force, preparing to completely draw it on standby over his left arm, he shocking discovered...

His internal spiritual force... actually started to revolve by itself!

What's going on?! Instant shock, to the extent that it overrode his arm pain in a flash. His spiritual sense immediately performed Innersight, yet he discovered that although he was unable to cycle a greater or lesser qi cycle because his left arm was missing, a cycle actually started to revolve on its own!

Why?

He looked within his body in shock, a hundred ideas running amok in his mind, but he was unable to solve this mystery!

This was the warning sign that the Eternal Alchemy Canon's Foundation Establishment realm would appear!

In Qi Condensation, concocting pills was the same as cultivating. In Foundation Establishment, one was self-cultivating all the time. At the moment, he hadn't reached Foundation Establishment, but his arcane effort began showing an omen of the Foundation Establishment realm!

No! In his mind, he sobered. Probably the bodhi seed at work, his thought process suddenly became faster: No... that's not saying... that one can only self-cycle at Foundation Establishment, rather... this is fire!

That's right, the Vermilion Bird Fire! I'm late-stage Qi Condensation; I still don't have the full picture on where it is now, but most of it has been displayed. This might be a demonstration only at Foundation Establishment. And with this flame, my internal pill-furnace meridians can be considered truly perfect! I can then actually activate it. It's not that Foundation Establishment can only start it, but only Foundation Establishment has the chance to get the Vermilion Bird Fire and make it activate... but it's starting up now... Could it be...

His spiritual sense immediately rushed into his qi sea. Soon afterwards, he saw... a pulsing flame in his qi sea! It... was white fox fire!

The Burning Flame!

So that's how it is... He quickly realized what was going on. Over the course of the artificing on his body—the body as an artifact—the Heavenmend Stone's high temperature carried the Burning Flame's fire. Sliver by sliver, it actually formed a bean-sized piece of the Burning Flame!

Although it was small, how great was it to the current Qi Condensation Xu Yangyi's meridians? This flame caused a late-stage Foundation Establishment senior and half-step Core Formation senior to both manipulate it with full power. Although it was small, it was already enough to activate the Eternal Alchemy

Canon's complete state!

Such a change didn't permit the lack of any factor. Because of the loss of his left arm, he was unable to continue cultivating. And yet the Eternal Alchemy Canon unexpectedly patched his entire body up for the time being. His pill furnace-shaped meridians within his body simply didn't need his control. They absorbed spiritual force on their own. But as this spiritual force cycled to his left arm, they didn't find a drain. To Xu Yangyi's surprise, it gave rise to minor resistance with the heat wave that battered his insides and allowed his deep pain to be greatly reduced.

If it weren't for the artificing, I wouldn't be able to absorb this flame. If I didn't cultivate the Eternal Alchemy Canon, I might've passed out from pain now... It really is... He shut his eyes, his heartbeat already normalizing: the Heaven's Will... Fortune makes fools out of men...

This was a golden opportunity bestowed by the heavens.

This kind of chance was too difficult to obtain. It really was thought as a destined opportunity. This early realization and appreciation of the Eternal Alchemy Canon's profundities caused him to understand a fraction more. He still wasn't aware how long it would be until he reached Foundation Establishment. Perhaps it would be soon or maybe... several decades. But he could use this time to think over, ponder, and reflect on this sensation, so his body could find the most suitable path for this arcane effort!

The pain was already in a controllable scope that he could bear by gritting his teeth, and it wasn't like just now where he couldn't help but to scream. After all, after his left arm had been severed, he was unable to cultivate. He was making use of the dredged-up spiritual force in his meridians. It could only be consumed, not replenished. Nonetheless, an army of new life force suddenly joined. Although it wasn't much, it was already enough to alleviate his pain by a level.

Outside, the tremendous Burning Flame took drops of rainbow liquid into the black arm bone. A little less than half of the black arm bone had already become kaleidoscopic. Within himself, Xu Yangyi was embracing and guarding his three energies of essence, qi, and spirit, and pushing extremely tiny slivers of qi to cycle with the bean-sized flame. Unintentionally, Old Man Di took a glimpse at Xu Yangyi, almost not believing his eyes!

Cultivation?!

How could this kid cultivate now?!

Cultivation required a meditative state. This so-called meditative state was the elimination of distracting thoughts, a process of a mind without rampant diversions. A high temperature of 20,000 °C melted the Heavenmend Stone, and the black arm bone directly accessed Xu Yangyi's left arm. Xu Yangyi... He was actually able to free his heart from distraction?!

Was this a joke?!

“Fellow Daoist Di!” Following Gao Muya's angry shout, Old Man Di immediately regained his wits. Gao Muya glanced at him in discontent. The meaning in his eyes was obvious. In such an important time and the inducement of so many heavenly treasures, you can still actually divide your attention?

Nevertheless, as Gao Muya followed Old Man Di's glance, he couldn't help but abruptly cry out in alarm: “Is this a fucking a joke?!”

Gao Muya exhaled and immediately felt his internal spiritual force fall to discord. The cold sweat on his forehead exuded out, dense and packed, and he used all his strength to stabilize his mind at once, but... it was somewhat late!

The enormous blaze... because of this momentary pause of hand seals, they began to sway in an instant. But in the flame... an arm's thickness of Heavenmend Stone, bearing slivers and strands of

fire, poured into Xu Yangyi's left black arm bone with a rumble!

SIZZLE!!! An explosion rang out! With great worry in his heart, Gao Muya immediately controlled the flame and continuously struck out with several magik arts. The flame then stabilized, but the prismatic aqua melted down from the Heavenmend Stone had already dyed Xu Yangyi's entire arm bone with vibrant hues in this twinkling!

This state of discord had on the contrary completed a matter that needed several days to finish.

Gao Muya coldly gasped. Not only was he in foul spirits, he instead promptly turned his head to look at Xu Yangyi. At the start, he only dared to control the drops to fall in trace by trace, but now, a strip with the thickness of an arm fell in! Would Xu Yangyi be able to accept it?

This was related to his name as a grand artificer. If he had smelted someone to death as he was artificing, his reputation was done for. Despite that, with a glance, he and Old Man Di were completely stunned.

Xu Yangyi was still cultivating! He still hadn't awaken!

"Where did this monster come from..." Several seconds later, shock and awe colored Gao Muya's face. "I've really seen a living ghost..."

They were simply none the wiser that in the instant just now... Xu Yangyi had suddenly felt countless enormous heat waves wildly rush towards his left arm wound!

The qi defense he had started to weave moments ago collapsed with a rumble. But subsequently, several hundred starry motes of white flame were all sucked into his qi sea! The bean-sized flame unexpectedly... began to strengthen bit by bit!

Bean sized... Fingertip sized... A finger thick... In the end, the flame awesomely reached the size of a palm!

Crackle crackle crackle... Following the white flame's combustion, not only did the meridians within his body not feel pain, they released a coziness and rejuvenation to his soul!

Xu Yangyi's meridians were like a long drought coming across sweet rain, suddenly expanding and absorbing spiritual force from the outside world at a lightning speed. Such speed rendered him flabbergasted.

This... The fire seed has been taken... Is this the Eternal Alchemy Canon's cultivation speed after complete activation? He looked towards his dantian in astonishment: This is so speechlessly... fast...

No, this isn't the fastest! His eyes stirred. That's right... This is the 'source engine', and I'm... still missing fuel!

Yes, the Eternal Alchemy Canon was claimed to require a country to nurture one person. The source engine existed, but there was zero fuel. This was merely his Qi Condensation meridians finally meeting this fire seed. His pill furnace had been ignited, causing a bottleneck-style eruption. It would soon calm down.

Nonetheless, he was bereft of the slightest disappointment. Instead, joy ran through his entire heart!

There was no fuel, but at such a speed... if he offered adequate spirit stones... what level of freakishness would his qi-revolution speed reach?

Not just this... The bodhi seed caused his thought process to be incredibly fast, and he divined three from one: This is the revolution speed... but what is revolution? Without any hesitation, he answered himself: The outside world's qi!

With a fire seed and fuel, I still need... He took a deep breath and repressed his heart that was wildly beating because of expectation: a real place... with super dense qi! Paired up with a supreme Spirit Focusing Formation!

Like... Danxia Temple... Under the heavenbound door... a heavenly paradise!

In this transient moment, he completely firmed his resolve towards the struggle over the heavenly paradise.

If said before, it was Ancestor Ancientpine's rearing of Gu. Afterwards, Xu Yangyi decided to because his future compelled him to go into battle. Now, it had transformed—he was compelled towards victory! If not him, who else would he give up the heavenbound door's surroundings to!

The Eternal Alchemy Canon's cultivation speed... If this “paired set” was completed, to say the least about other cultivators, his cultivation speed would be a fold higher than same-stage cultivators, including the apex clans!

And this was still a rough assessment!

Any “paired-set installation” that reached perfection would bring a qualitative leap!

Vermilion Bird Fire... the strongest fire seed... He bit his lip. The two words of “Foundation Establishment” weren't distant from him, but they still weren't an approaching word. Xu Yangyi rose up with an unprecedented thirst.

“Nine Dragons Pearl Delight!” More along the lines of “Nine Dragons Play Pearl”. The imagery of nine dragons playing with a pearl is very iconic in Chinese culture.

Chapter 272: The Body as an Artifact (4)

After an unknown period of time cultivating, Xu Yangyi finally opened his eyes. Seemingly sensing the opening of his eyes, Gao Muya and Old Man Di in front of him opened their eyes at the same time and looked at Xu Yangyi with terrible complication.

“Seniors?” Xu Yangyi was somewhat confused, unable to make sense of the situation. What? Had the process been finished? Was there something wrong with him?

Could it be that there was a problem with the arm bone?

In his state of alarm, he immediately looked at his left arm yet discovered that it had now already transformed into a spectrum of color with a sliver of toughness. Nonetheless, his intuition told him that this arm... had long since transcended the hardness that he had previously saw!

“Don’t worry... It’s good and done...” Gao Muya’s complicated voice was heard at his side, and he used an even more complicated gaze to look at Xu Yangyi with. “Do you know how long it’s been now?”

Xu Yangyi shook his head.

“A month.” Gao Muya raised a finger. “Since we’ve entered here, it’s already been a month.”

“Right now, I really want to know. Why can you actually meditate while subjected to the high temperature of the melted Heavenmend Stone?” Old Man Di followed up and said: “Alongside Teacher Gao, I’ve taken part in the transformation of magik prostheses. This isn’t the first. Before that girl Quan, there were three others. On top of that, you’re the fifth.”

“The last three were all Foundation Establishment cultivators, but even they screamed like slaughtered pigs here... yet you can actually meditate?”

Xu Yangyi laughed. The three half-meter-long qi nails had already been removed from his left arm. He tested out the prosthetic; it was flexible and spirited, unconstrained and with ease. But inside his dantian, the palm-sized flame had vanished without a trace.

This was because the meridians brought forth by the Eternal Alchemy Canon had lost a power source once more. Only then did he have no choice but to wake up from his meditation.

“A fortunate coincidence.” Xu Yangyi clasped his hands and laughed.

His dismissal indicated that he wouldn’t provide an explanation. Gao Muya raised a brow and replied: “It’s fine if you don’t say. Everyone has their own secrets... Presently, the hardest step is already done. The rest will all be completed in four months.

Xu Yangyi nodded. Four months... added with this month, that was five months.

Once things were finished here... he was bound to throw himself straight to Tianzi Mountain and Jinshan Temple. In all likelihood, the other major lineages were already in Chengdu, the closest strategic city in the southwest to Longsu Province. Shuangqing City was properly readied, and he had handed it over to Fang Cheng before he had left. Jadesun probably wouldn’t stint in mentioning this issue as well. In addition to Peony and Mao Ba’er’s assistance, that would be the time... as the storm raged, winds rising and clouds surging.

“Many thanks, Senior.”

“There’s no trace of him?” At the same time, in a five-star hotel in Chengdu, a youth surveyed the endless traffic of cars on the street below from several tens of stories above. He furrowed his brows and said: “That’s not to say... that our Danxia hero has left Grandmaster Gao’s Ironforge Stronghold?”

“Yes.” Behind him, a man styled as a steward bowed. “But he hasn’t left since the beginning.”

“He hasn’t come out, or he left from some other place?”

“To answer the Young Master, we are uncertain.”

“I know.” The youth sat down on a soft sofa. He was thin and there was a long scar on his cheek. He lit a cigarette and said apathetically: “What about over in Nanzhou?”

“To answer the Young Master.” The man’s voice lowered a little: “You’ve just arrived in Chengdu... turn on the television and look... you’ll understand.”

The youth’s brows slightly knitted together, and the television flashed on. It just happened to be reporting the news.

A gentle and elegant female broadcaster reported solemnly: “Due to the developments of Nanzhou’s virus break out, the Central Committee has decided to distribute all of Nanzhou’s citizens to other city districts. Nanzhou’s three surrounding districts will be split into Chengdu and Shuangqing City as situation control is waited upon...”

“The Chinese government has evacuated Nanzhou’s residents.” Youth’s gaze flashed. “It seems... that they also understand what’s going to happen with Nanzhou...”

“This news has only been broadcasted to Gansu Province, Xichuan Province, and Shuangqing City.” The man said lowly: “It is unknown to other media and the internet.”

The youth didn’t speak but instead stood up and walked in front of a window. He pulled open the window drape.

“Do you know what I see...?” His finger gently hooked around the window drape. “A great blood-dyed curtain is on the verge of being pulled into play.”

“Even China has prepared a dueling stage for our decisive, mortal

struggle... How can our Shuangqing's Lou Clan disappoint the cultivation world..."

At this time, the sky darkened.

The youth abruptly raised his head, his gaze like lightning as he stared straight at the sky.

"What's going on? What's happening?" A youth who had just been let out of school with his classmate looked towards his feet in shock. "Another earthquake?!"

Astonished, a woman who was picking out groceries in a supermarket saw that all the supermarket's bottles and cans were making clanging noises! A sales associate looked at the shelves, dumbfounded. Three seconds later, he suddenly cried out, shouting himself hoarse, and cradled his head as he squatted down!

"Earthquake! Earthquake!"

"Heavens! Another earthquake! It's so intense!"

"We're not in the earthquake's epicenter, right?!"

Following these shrieks, all the pedestrians on the street ran off to secure locations with great speed. Green lights flickered incessantly, and countless bikes and mopeds rolled up into a singular mass in a state of confusion. Every car had almost opened all of their doors, drivers scurrying away with ashen faces. Even the traffic police looked at the ground below them in shock, their lips quivering non-stop.

This earthquake was too fierce! Akin to an earth dragon turning over!

"Emergency notice, emergency notice." A broadcast rang out with an announcer's anxious voice: "A rank 5.7 earthquake has suddenly erupted in Chengdu. Everyone, please make preparations... I repeat, a rank 5.7 earthquake has suddenly erupted in Chengdu. Everyone, please make preparations..."

No one heard. The street was a throng of chaos. Like hornets, groups of people ran out from hotels. Some were draped in bathing towels. However, at this moment, there were a few other people who were tens as many times more solemn than the common masses as they looked at the sky.

“Second Blackie, run! It’s an earthquake, what are you still gawking at!” At the side of a basketball court, a group of kids forcefully pulled at a tall, strong, dark-skinned youth. And yet, the young man simply didn’t budge. He lightly shivered, and everyone fell to the ground.

“My god...” The young man looked at the sky sluggishly: “What... What is this...”

In a villa, there was an old man with a full head of grizzled hair and two middle-aged men. With an arrow’s stride forward, they ran to a courtyard. The shadows on the ground were getting bigger and bigger, and in the sky, an enormous colossus was slowly rising!

“This really is... a fight to the death, eh...”

In a hotel, a young man’s expression was terribly grave. He gazed straight at the sky, unable to take his eyes away. As far as his gaze reached, there was a mechanical white tiger that was no less than ten kilometers in size at Chengdu’s border. On its back, there was an unbroken chain of palace halls. Over yonder, the behemoth slowly ascended!

Streaks of pure-white spiritual light rushed out from the ground, and streams of water trickled down the white tiger’s body. It was as if the machine had just flew out from a waterfall. It ascended higher and higher and charged straight into the skies. Shrouded in the cloud bank, the white tiger soared over clouds and sailed mists. Its tremendous body left a shadow on the ground that mortals simply couldn’t see and faced the region where Xichuan Province and Longsu Province interlinked. The machine walked forward as it swallowed the world with each step.

At its side, there were over ten palace halls that were several hundred meters in size. Like a constellation of stars cupping the moon, they surrounded the tiger.

Truly a roaming of dragons and marching of tigers, a grand and imperious might!

“This...” Already, a clan steward gasped coldly from behind the young man: “The Linghu Clan... The White Tiger Palace... and the Linghu Clan’s second-rate vassal clans... They... They...”

Their lair was making an offensive!

This was a magnificent sight that could only be seen in a cultivator war!

“This is their resolve to tell everyone.” The youth gritted his teeth and said quietly: “For the struggle this time over the heavenly paradise, they’ve mobilized all their forces and activated the White Tiger Palace to inform all that their Linghu Clan won’t spare any hard-earned capital or asset in this battle. For any who blocks them... there’s only a path to death.”

“Young Master!” The steward cried out in alarm.

“What’s there to panic about!” The young man shouted angrily: “There’s still a couple months... Our Lou Clan’s Sky Universe Palace... will also arrive at the border of the two provinces! This time, everyone has to advance; there’s no backing off!”

“Anyone who blocks us... Regardless of whether he’s a Core Formation disciple... as long as the Core Formation ancestors stay silent, the Lou Clan and our vassal clans will tear him into pieces!”

“Lou Wushuang!”

“Your subordinate is here!”

“Contact father at once. The Sky Universe Palace... is ready to start operations!” He laughed grimly: “We should expose our fangs as well... to all of China’s cultivators.”

“Notify the seven major vassal clans under the Lou Clan that if they don’t come...” His expression chilled. “to just wait for the Lou Clan’s wrath.”

“Yes!”

The third month after the Danxia Temple affair, The Linghu Clan’s White Tiger Palace of Xichuan’s Bottomless Pit stormed the interlinking border of Xichuan and Longsu and garrisoned their forces there!

Several hundred Dao defenders and twelve vassal clans bided their time as they prepared for battle, resting their heads on spears as they waited for the crack of dawn! Altogether... they totaled 842 combatants!

In the fourth month, the Sky Universe Palace of Shuangqing’s Lou Clan graced the two provinces’ border with their presence. A white mechanical crane over ten kilometers in size flew in with shining wings. No longer was this only a palace, but instead their clan’s war machine! The strongest logistical supply!

In the white crane’s surroundings, there were seven mechanical birds that were several hundred meters in size. Hawks and swallows followed behind. The crown of each flying bird was seated with a Foundation Establishment cultivator!

The Lou Clan of Shuangqing’s Sky Universe Palace and their Crying Crane Legion were all spurred into action. With their seven major vassal clans... they numbered 789 people!

There were still two months left... so far, the Bluedawn Winding Corridor of the Nalan Clan’s Coilingsilk Cave had yet to be seen. Likewise, the Kindling Mulberry Wall of Jinling’s Zhao Clan hadn’t made an appearance.

Xu Yangyi was ignorant to all of this because at this moment, he had already reached the final juncture of operation! In the underground artificing room, Gao Muya and Old Man Di were

already absorbed in work with full attention. Before their eyes, Xu Yangyi's left arm had long since become an image of when it was in good condition. One couldn't even see whatsoever that it was a man-made object.

There existed blood and flesh, to the extent that even Xu Yangyi gasped in surprise! It was actually a carbon copy of his left arm. He could flex and stretch it smoothly and easily. Furthermore, these muscles were as good as real!

He exercised his strength and his muscles tightened and condensed with explosive strength. Besides the lack of pain and blood when he was wounded, one simply couldn't tell that this was an artificial object.

Gao Muya and Old Man Di weren't as free and easy as they were before. Instead their eye sockets were deep and recessed with heavy dark circles. Both of them had become thin, dropping down in stature. However, their minds were surging up at an incomparable high!

They were on the verge of project completion... Presently, the duo used all kinds of implements, as if they dissecting like doctors, to pull open Xu Xu Yangyi's left forearm. Inside, there was a layer of dark-green muscle-like material. This was the usefulness of the three God Tree leaves. They had used these leaves and the veins on the leaves to establish an even more superior flexibility and explosive power than Xu Yangyi's previous left arm!

Under the green muscle was a groove. This groove was on the arm bone, and it... was in the shape of a sword!

Xu Yangyi took a deep breath. The project was just about to be finished... The final step only required the black short sword that transformed from the Animus Armament on his chest to be inserted. His left arm would be successfully finished!

Consuming a Heavenmend Stone, God Tree Leaves, and the black remnant bone of a 2,000-year-old Greater Demon, this left arm had

forced two Foundation Establishment grand masters to consume more than four months of work, while exhausting their thoughts and genius. Praised by Gao Muya to be the most supreme masterpiece of a left arm in artificing history, this endeavor was finally near completion!

Chapter 273: Project Completion

Swoosh... After a pair of tweezers glimmering with white light pulled out the last line, Gao Muya and Old Man Di took a long sigh.

Done... Finally completed... The project had taken a period of four months. With Grandmaster Gao Muya undertaking the operation and a half-step Core Formation cultivator serving as the assistant, the project was finally over.

The duo's faces were run haggard by exhaustion but likewise carried an unconcealable excitement. This never-before crafted magik prosthesis... It wasn't that the medium's qualifications weren't enough, but the craftsman's skill was inadequate. Now, the plan really wasn't according to the blueprint but instead a direct fusion of raw materials. The medium hadn't been tested as well, but its natural endowments were first-class. They were already itching to see the might of this arm!

"So this is the Ketu-Rahu Sword, huh..." Xu Yangyi stroked and caressed his left arm with complex feelings. There wasn't any difference with his right arm, and the sword-shaped groove on the forearm was still reminding him that the last step lied here.

If a sword-shaped magik artifact was inserted, this would be the true Ketu-Rahu Sword!

"Young fellow..." Gao Muya's voice was shaking: "I know... you confirmed that you had more than that sword tip, right?"

"Come... put your sword in. Let us see the true complete form... This old man can no longer wait patiently!" He sucked in deeply and steadied his mind. "Fellow Daoist Di, escort young friend Xu to the weaponry forging grounds. I... will come posthaste!"

He clearly understood that Xu Yangyi had originally just taken out a sword point. This represented that the other didn't want them to see the sword itself. Presently, the young commander

absolutely wouldn't produce this sword in front of them.

He further understood... that the reason why the Ketu-Rahu Sword took the word "sword" in its name was this essential, final step!

The greater the sword treasure's might, the more powerful this magik prosthesis's power. Xu Yangyi's sword point that he had saw before caused him to feel somewhat apprehensive. As the creator of this masterpiece, he wanted to lay eyes upon the ultimate power of this magik artifact more than anyone else.

"You only have five minutes in the weaponry forging ground." Gao Muya forcibly pushed down his emotions to watch immediately, and his figure disappeared. "In five minutes, I and Fellow Daoist Di will come in at once."

At the same time his silhouette vanished, Xu Yangyi had already completely rose up as if he was soaring across clouds and sailing mists!

Old Man Di's mood was even more impatient than Gao Muya's! Just as Gao Muya's voice subsided, Old Man Di had already cast out a ray of yellow spiritual light, sweeping Xu Yangyi into it. Like electricity, his figure charged outside!

Swish swish swish! Both sides of the surrounding landscape were blurry. In less than a minute, Xu Yangyi already stood in front of a stone door.

"Open!" Old Man Di bellowed and both of his hands pushed. The stone door slowly opened, and Xu Yangyi looked inside. To his awe, the inside contained a roughly thousand-meter martial ground.

"Five minutes!" Old Man Di's voice was hoarse, and his eyes were somewhat reddened. Such a feeling was just like he had won a special award, the reward being a Bentley. However, it was like he couldn't redeem it. In his mind, it could even be said that a

hundred claws scratched at his heart. He clenched his teeth and said: “After five minutes, This Throne doesn’t care whether or not you’re done! I’ll definitely come in!”

Xu Yangyi clasped his hands and entered the empty martial ground. Behind him, the stone door rumbled shut, and he didn’t say another word. The first thing he did was activate the strongest seal that he could use to isolate all outside visual and hearing. He then made several jumps on the stage and shut his eyes. Taking a few good deep breaths, he carefully and cautiously took out the short sword on his neck.

Ruffle... In the wake of soft fumbling noises, the black short sword answered and was taken out. Its entire body was pitch-black, any outline or border of it unseen. His gaze intensely studied the short sword, and he quickly pushed it into the open groove on his left arm!

Click... The short sword fell into the sword groove. In an instant, the sword joined seamlessly and then several cracking noises, the sounds of a machine closing, rang out. Several mechanical enclosures marked with talismans completely took the short sword into the groove with a crack. Shortly afterwards...

The opening on his left arm started to automatically fuse.

“Flawless.” His gaze twinkled, and he immediately breathed in deeply. Both of his hands began to form seals at flying speed.

These were the Ketu-Rahu Sword’s activation seals. They would incite all the magik artifact’s internal constructs to life. Along with the start of his hand-seals accelerating, he distinctly sensed the qi in his body begin to rush towards his left arm at a feverish speed.

Buzz... A dot of white light glimmered below the skin of his shoulder blade. This was the Heavenmend Stone’s quintessence representing the arm bone. Following the shining of this white light, he suddenly sensed his shoulder lighten. The comfortable sensation of spiritual force passing through caused his body to

become flexible.

Swoosh... White light brightened, making his arm seem transparent. In the wake of this rise below, a droning noise echoed from his joint. A dot of red brilliance shined at the elbow.

This component was personally crafted by Grandmaster Gao Muya, employing several kinds of S-rank heavenly treasures to cover the elbow. The white light at the shoulder blade was almost without hindrance and quickly turned red, extending over the forearm.

Buzz... The third low cry rang out. On the forearm, a dot of moss-green light shined in the vicinity of veins and arteries. This was the three God Tree Leaves crafted into the left arm's skin and muscle.

As the three light dots all shone, there was another feeling in his left arm, not enigmatic at all! Moreover, there wasn't the slightest bit of aversity!

The effortless and free sensation of an arm following a finger returned once more. Xu Yangyi forced down the excitement in his heart and looked at his once-lost-yet-returned left arm. He didn't wave it with great strength but instead stretched it out in front of his eyes and gently exercised his five fingers.

Exceptionally agile!

A wisp of a smile finally appeared at the crook of his mouth, and his left arm easily formed seals. Without warning, his five fingers all opened, yet his fingertips were already thick with cold light!

Xu Yangyi suddenly clawed downwards. At the same time in his left arm, qi passed through, qi that he hadn't met for a long time. In the next second, five snow-white rays of spiritual light drew forth a meter-plus-long tail of light at his fingertips! Crack crack crack! Discord echoed, and five marks that were over a meter long and ten-odd centimeters deep appeared on the ground in a flash!

“Compared to my previous strength, it’s around 20% stronger!” He licked his lips in excitement. This was the power of a magik prosthesis? No... it wasn’t limited like this. This was nothing more than his passing claw! Simply without experiencing divine ability amplification!

If such a method was placed in the mortal world, a battalion would be needed to defend it.

Without a wasted word, his right hand was already starting to form a complex seal. This... was the hand seal for activating his left arm’s divine ability! He wanted to see what kind of power the Animus Armament hidden in his left arm would possess.

Nonetheless, in this instant, he felt... all his bodily spiritual force come to an abrupt stop. In less than half a second... all his spiritual force was actually like the breaching waters of the Yangtze and Yellow Rivers! Spiritual force madly flooded his left arm!

Beep... Beep... Beep... At this moment, all his spiritual force, late-stage Qi Condensation qi, was now being drawn in until there wasn’t a sliver remaining! As spiritual force rushed his shoulder blade, it promptly issued an ear-piercing alarm. After the white light dot twinkled several times, it actually died out!

However... at the same time it was extinguished, a black spiritual ray flowed down along his shoulder—just as Xu Yangyi simply couldn’t react—and charged to the red light dot at his elbow!

SWOOSH!!! The brilliance at his elbow dimmed in a flash! Subsequently, the black spirit rays all surged towards his forearm!

This time, nothing caused the dot of light at his forearm to extinguish. This was because... all of Xu Yangyi’s bodily qi was now condensed there! His arm was pitch-black like ink, but... a crimson short-sword talisman was slowly coalescing behind his forearm!

This short-sword talisman was virtually identical to the Animus

Armament, but right now... it resembled a dot of cinnabar in the darkness, spreading out to over ten red talismans. These talismans caused Xu Yangyi's hand to appear not as a humans but more like a devil's edged claw!

"This is..." Xu Yangyi's gaze suddenly flickered. This kind of situation was absolutely not normal. This was the strange form brought on by the Animus Armament.

Gao Muya was taking a bath in his room. This room was completely different from the rough artificing basement, astonishingly refined. He was lying down in a ten-meter-long bathing ground built with white marble, groaning at ease.

Cultivators didn't need to bathe. A Cleansing Talisman and the matter was done. Nonetheless, this was a kind of pleasure. After being cooped up in the basement for a few months, he found quite the pleasure in such a mortal enjoyment.

However, at this instant, he stood up with with a splash and looked to the four walls of the room incredulously.

"Great Circle Qi Condensation... Half-step Foundation Establishment... Foundation Establishment... Foundation Establishment?! A breakthrough to Foundation Establishment?!" He gasped coldly. He dared to confirm that this was the omen of a high-level magik artifact activating. Yet for such an omen to happen now...

"Magik artifacts that aren't at the Core Formation realm can be called high level depending on the artificing techniques... The Ketu-Rahu Sword unquestionably surpasses a majority of magik treasures! No... initial-stage Foundation Establishment... 20% of the initial stage... 40%... 60%... and it's still rising! That's right, definitely! There's no doubt that this is the Ketu-Rahu Sword!"

BOOM! Water droplets splashed everywhere. In the next second, a movement shockingly appeared in the luxurious room. Grandmaster Gao Muya had already vanished to parts unknown.

Meanwhile, outside the door, Old Man Di's brows suddenly jumped.

“The Ketu-Rahu Sword has started up?!” He looked at the door with both extreme pleasure and surprise, but his expression became terribly grave in the next second!

“Foundation Establishment?!” He looked at the stone door in disbelief. “It's actually broken through the Foundation Establishment mark?!”

Foundation Establishment... was absolutely considered the first great barrier in cultivation history! As a matter of fact, the number of cultivators below Foundation Establishment was far beyond in the hundreds of thousands to a million!

And yet... a magik artifact had now actually broken through to the Foundation Establishment realm?

“No good!” His face quickly went from pleasant surprise to deep worry. “Foundation Establishment spiritual pressure... Will the medium be able to take it?!”

He immediately extended his hand and slammed towards the stone door without the slightest hesitation. If Xu Yangyi died... the Ketu-Rahu Sword would be scrapped! Xu Yangyi's death had no connection to him, but if his masterpiece was ruined before he even glanced at it, he would be unable to tolerate this on any grounds!

Nevertheless, in the instant, he slammed the stone door and a loud rumble rang out! The stone door unexpectedly exploded apart into pieces!

Old Man Di raised an eye to look at the martial training ground. At long last, his expression fell to utter solemnity.

There, Xu Yangyi was drenched in sweat, and the region of his left elbow and under was pitch-black like ink. Rays of bewitching red light twisted around it, and endless black qi flared in his

surroundings by ten-somewhat meters! In a radius of four to five meters!

This was indeed initial-stage Foundation Establishment spiritual pressure, but... this was a spiritual pressure that he never actually encountered, a spiritual pressure imbued with a murderous aura!

Spiritual pressure only had one kind of attribute and that was oppressive might, to shock and awe the minds of others. He had cultivated to half-step Core Formation, but he never knew... that spiritual pressure could actually bear murderous aura!

“No, not just murderous aura...” His silhouette flashed, he was already charging forward at a dizzying pace. “This is actually... murderous aura with a valorous spirit? Absolute valor... [The supreme bravery of armies...](#) this kid!”

He glared tenaciously at Xu Yangyi, truly alarmed and delighted in his heart. “What the hell did he put in!”

However, he simply couldn’t finish his thought. All his bodily qi was already mobilized, as if it smelled danger!

Old Man Di felt the transference of qi within his body in shock. Danger... this was the scent of danger? An initial-stage Foundation Establishment qi strike truly caused him, half-step Core Formation, to feel traces of danger?

Yes, a single blow. Just as he charged in, black qi and red spiritual light seemed to react to prey. Essentially beyond Xu Yangyi’s control, these forces collectively took aim at Old Man Di!

勇冠三军 - “The supreme bravery of armies”. In a stricter sense, this points out that valor/bravery is number one for all armies.

Chapter 274: Swoosh

“Come...” Old Man Di neither retreated nor advanced. From head to toe, his clothing and gown moved freely of the wind, and he faced upwards and laughed earnestly: “I want to see what kind of power you can show in your hands with the Ketu-Rahu Sword that I myself forged!”

His doubts didn’t last for a second. In the next, he quickly stood dazed in place because he saw... in the rolling black qi, all that remained was a nebulous manifestation of a tall man from ancient times. This wasn’t a cultivator, but rather a man who was clad in a mortal soldier’s armor.

Black mist ascended. In his hand, he carried a map. In the following instant, this map unfurled with crashing sounds. In the end, a dagger unexpectedly appeared! [The map discarded and the blade in sight](#), a black dagger was revealed!

Swoosh. This sound didn’t come from Xu Yangyi’s mouth but instead from the resonance among endless black qi. It seemed to step across countless years and moons to descend upon the year 2021.

Swoosh, one simple word. Nameless; this wasn’t a divine ability, but at this moment, all qi abruptly surged and billowed. In the air, a tremendous ten-meter-wide sword, curled upon by black qi, awesomely condensed and rushed towards Old Man Di!

“Flowers yet not flowers... mists yet not mists.” Old Man Di’s gaze was like fire, yet his voice was exceptionally unperturbed: “[Mirror Flower, Water Moon!](#)”

Boom! In the moment the tremendous sword arrived, the old man’s figure suddenly transformed into ripples. Xu Yangyi gritted his teeth as he looked ahead at everything. All current matters had broken away from his control, and his body suffered waves of sharp pain. Yet oddly, he didn’t collapse, as if this strike was

maintaining the peak limit that he could endure by itself.

He saw Old Man Di's figure scatter apart and the astonishing blow of the great black sword... He immediately understood that by this strike... all below Foundation Establishment would die!

Regardless of half-step Foundation Establishment or Great Circle Qi Condensation, there was absolutely no chance for a miraculous escape!

Soon afterwards, he also saw that Old Man Di's surroundings seemed to loudly shatter like glass. Old Man Di's silhouette cried out in alarm as he flew back from the hollow of where he had originally stood!

Xu Yangyi took everything into his eyes rather clearly. Along the way, whatever object that had blocked for Old Man Di had been pierced and entirely transformed into flying smithereens. Old Man Di wore an incredulous expression on his face.

Rumble! He had flown back several tens of meters! The martial training ground was a room of scarred and destroyed tiles and bricks!

Hum... At this time, the command of this sword has caused all the silted spiritual force in Xu Yangyi's bodily to fade away at last.

"This sword... consumed all my spiritual force as the price..." He sensed a kind of sudden emptiness within his body, an aching feeling, yet in his heart, he was incredibly excited. "This is my killing move! An ultimate trump just for me!"

"It doesn't have a name. Swoosh? No, I'll call it the Ketu-Rahu Sword!"

"Hahaha!" Before his thoughts even fell away, an extremely excited and hearty laughter suddenly echoed. Even now, Old Man Di had a crazed expression on his face, and his figure flashed and flew over in front of him. The Foundation Establishment senior clutched onto his arm.

“The peak of initial-stage Foundation Establishment... this is really the peak of initial-stage Foundation Establishment!” Old Man Di’s current mien was without a trace of depression. On the contrary, he couldn’t be more excited!

“A masterpiece! The finest masterpiece!!! Hahaha!” His face was rosy, and he clutched onto Xu Yangyi’s arm as if he was exhausting all of his strength. Nonetheless, he dared not use too much strength. “This rank... I worked on a secret treasure of this rank! I made it! Hahaha! Ha...”

His laughter seemed to stop with an abrupt grunt because in the next second... at the positions of his dantian, heart, and upper back, three heavy booms rang out. These regions on his clothes exploded with bowl-sized holes!

The smile on Old Man Di’s face froze. He was rendered in a state of disbelief as he looked at his chest and dantian. In other words... if a cultivator who could pierce into his body was substituted in just now... he would’ve already died?

“Young fellow...” He studied Xu Yangyi deeply. “What the heck did you put inside?”

Xu Yangyi didn’t answer, merely smiling and cupping his hands. Besides, he couldn’t answer and furthermore allow Gao Muya and Old Man Di to see what he had inserted.

“My realm is higher by two minor boundaries in comparison to the Ketu-Rahu Sword, but... the attack was actually able to punch through my protective spiritual light?” He patted and stroked his chest in astonishment. “This item... is very much terrible.”

“What’s very much terrible!” Before his voice even fell, Gao Muya frantically rushed over, simply not caring for anything along the way. In an instant, he stood in front of Xu Yangyi, gazing at the latter’s left arm. The grand master questioned Old Man Di with certainty: “How did it go?! Was the activation fine?”

“More than fine.” Old Man Di glanced at Xu Yangyi with terrible complication. “The item was responsible for the three damaged areas on my body.”

“Mhm, that’s good... WHAT?!” Gao Muya answered without thinking, but in the next second, he whipped his head and looked towards Old Man Di as if he wanted to eat him. However, Old Man Di didn’t hide in the slightest and moreover pointed at his chest and dantian for Gao Muya to see.

“It’s... actually capable of breaking through your protective spiritual light?” In the same vein, Gao Muya dared not accept this as the truth. After inspecting for no less than several minutes, he then shut his eyes and inhaled deeply. When he opened them, there was no longer a half-sliver of shock. All that remained was ecstasy!

“A masterpiece. THIS has to be my proudest masterpiece this year... No, maybe in twenty years. I dare not say that there are items that might surpass it...” He likewise picked up Xu Yangyi’s arm and observed it while prattling on endlessly: “Young fellow... you don’t know how proud I am that this can penetrate half-step Core Formation protective qi... I can tell you that there are absolutely no magik artifacts whatsoever that a Qi Condensation cultivator can use that can produce Foundation Establishment might. Artificing is a Dao as high as the heavens and as broad as the earth, but magik artifacts like this are unconditionally few!”

“But the Ketu-Rahu Sword and those dregs... fundamentally aren’t the same!” In the heat of passion, he stroked and caressed Xu Yangyi’s left arm. “This... is a true artificing masterpiece. The internal structure can compare to a Core Formation magik treasure. It’s different from those single-use magik artifacts... This can be upgraded! That girl Quan likely told you this bit as well. Any bodily magik artifact, a brilliant magik prosthesis, so long as your realm reaches it... will only have one name in the end.”

He used his somewhat reddened eyes to look at Xu Yangyi. “A

bodily... magik treasure!”

“No...” His chest heaved up and down fiercely. “That was the Ketu-Rahu Sword in my project... Yours...”

“It’s different! It’s not the same!” Old Man Di’s face was flushed red, and he said excitedly: “Your arm used a Heavenmend Stone... and those three leaves. Although the leaves are inferior to the Heavenmend Stone, they’re not off by too much! Your Ketu-Rahu Sword... has a sliver’s chance to morph into a spirit treasure!”

Spirit treasure!

At this moment, in his heart, even Xu Yangyi couldn’t stop himself from being excited. Spirit treasure... He didn’t even have few a magik artifacts. The status of this arm was relevant to his own life, yet there was a remote chance that it could transform into a spirit treasure!

He hadn’t emptied out his assets in vain to forge this left arm!

“I’ll borrow Senior’s lucky words, but it’s still early.” He forced down the thirst in his heart and cupped his fist.

Gao Muya guffawed in high spirits: “Early? Yes, it’s still early, but do you know how many cultivators would be willing to lose their family fortunes for this sliver’s chance? I’ll only tell you one thing.”

He gazed at Xu Yangyi and said: “For this chance... Daomaster Earthcleaver wasted three supreme magik treasures. Each one took him decades to gather with great effort. He didn’t find a marvelous object like the Heavenmend Stone, but the presented item still wasn’t off by much. It wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that it was almost on par. But even so, Ancestor Earthcleaver still had no regrets or complaints!”

“Hehe, he’s already scheduled a fourth one for Teacher in ten years.” Old Man Di laughed heartily.

Xu Yangyi didn’t think himself to be lucky, but he also didn’t

value himself a gambling chip more because of this.

The Heavenmend Stone was a freebie from Danxia Temple. Yet the price of this treat was the lives of a thousand Qi Condensation cultivators! A couple people from his legion had died! His left arm was lost! Ultimately, all of them had almost been wiped out at the bottom of Danxia Temple!

He had taken this freebie with all right, devoid of any reservation.

“Young fellow.” Upon seeing Xu Yangyi’s expression, Gao Muya finally pushed down his fervent heart. “After Foundation Establishment, come visit this old man again.”

Not waiting for Xu Yangyi to raise a question, Gao Muya waved his hand. “The fame of any magik artifact requires a cultivator’s strength in themselves. If you don’t entered the upper noble circle of the 20,000 after Foundation Establishment, it’ll naturally leave a stigma on my artificing hall. If your reputation is impressive someday, everyone will know that this masterpiece was by my methods.”

“Yes.” Xu Yangyi clasped his hands, his heart set free at long last. Business here was finished. He finally had one more ace!

Although he was laughing, his heart was already starting to become ice-cold. He had to win the contest over the heavenly paradise. His master-ancestor was watching him and with the cultivation world watching this region as well, he was even more determined to triumph!

Only with his own foundation and only through occupying the heavenly paradise would his future cultivation be able to make blazing progress, a journey of a thousand miles in a single day! Only with great handfuls and handfuls of time could he knock on the great door of Core Formation!

That strike just now... In his heart, a faint sneer emerged in his

heart. Come, this so-called cultivator war. Although he was still a noob with these kind of things, that didn't represent that he didn't have the resolution to kill the clans that coveted his territory in one fell swoop!

From beginning to end, Nanzhou City's position would use blood to be dyed red and would use power to speak!

"Things here are set... Next is going to Tianzi Mountain and Jinshan Temple." The uneasy feeling in his heart finally settled a bit. "I don't believe... that Xiaoqing and Fahai dared to bet that there weren't any enemies in the outside world to hunt down while they were imprisoned. They likely didn't give me the two back-ups they left behind!"

"One thing, just one, and in this Nanzhou City heavenly paradise struggle... I'll have one more fraction of assurance!"

The next three days were focused on testing his left arm. After three days, Xu Yangyi didn't stay one moment more and immediately bid farewell to Gao Muya.

Just as he left, he ran into an unexpected person.

"Branch Master." Peony's face was covered with anxiety. "We need to head back now; major business has occurred!"

Xu Yangyi shook his head and the duo walked over to a car. With anxiety on her face, Peony didn't wait for Xu Yangyi to reply and immediately said: "Long Su Province's A-rank Legion, [the Black Armor Legion...](#) has a-applied..."

Xu Yangyi neared the car. Li Zongyuan was driving. He glanced at the other, his complexion seemingly alright. He said dully afterwards: "Applied to separate from Longsu Province? An organizational revision?"

"Yes... Branch Master, how did you know?" Peony tightly pursed her red lips. This matter couldn't be said to be a big deal, but to Xu Yangyi's reputation, it was a fatal strike. The enemies had yet to

come, but an A-rank Legion was about to leave. How would this allow Xu Yangyi to continue staying in Longsu Province?

Xu Yangyi didn't speak, but his eyes flashed with a wisp of a killing intent.

Heavenly paradise...

These simple words. Even he only came to know of their true meaning from Wei Zhongxian's mouth. It was pardonable that these A-rank Legions under his command weren't listening to him but to make an application to leave his establishment wasn't so simple.

A group escape wasn't so straightforward. Not only was merit value cut in half, but more importantly, the various connections, marketing, and production that a legion formed with regional clans would be severed! If it wasn't that someone had said something to them, then maybe... they were being forced or threatened. Xu Yangyi wasn't convinced that these people would abandon their merits and connections in search for another establishment!

I may have mentioned this in earlier reference notes, but the specific term for “map discarded and dagger in sight” originates from the attempted assassination of the first emperor of China by the assassin Jing Ke.

Author has a tendency sometimes to turn specific phrases in Chinese into moves. “Mirror Flower, Water Moon” is “镜花水月”, based on the idea of flowers in a mirror or the moon reflected on water.

“Black Armor Legion” - this legion name is more on the traditional side. In ancient China, the forces that wore black armor were the cavalry. They are listed as one of the great ten cavalry forces in Chinese history. I believe this specific cavalry dates back to the early Tang dynasty (618 CE).

Table of Contents

[Archfiend](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 201: Danxia Temple \(20\)](#)

[Chapter 202: Danxia Temple \(21\)](#)

[Chapter 203: Danxia Temple \(22\)](#)

[Chapter 204: Danxia Temple \(23\)](#)

[Chapter 205: Danxia Temple \(24\)](#)

[Chapter 206: Danxia Temple \(25\)](#)

[Chapter 207: Danxia Temple \(26\)](#)

[Chapter 208: Danxia Temple \(27\)](#)

[Chapter 209: Danxia Temple \(28\)](#)

[Chapter 210: Danxia Temple \(29\)](#)

[Chapter 211: Danxia Temple \(30\)](#)

[Chapter 212: Danxia Temple \(31\)](#)

[Chapter 212: Danxia Temple \(32\)](#)

[Chapter 213: Danxia Temple \(33\)](#)

[Chapter 214: Danxia Temple \(34\)](#)

[Chapter 215: Danxia Temple \(34\)](#)

[Chapter 216: Danxia Temple \(35\)](#)

[Chapter 217: Danxia Temple \(36\)](#)

[Chapter 218: Danxia Temple \(37\)](#)

[Chapter 219: Danxia Temple \(38\)](#)

[Chapter 220: Danxia Temple \(39\)](#)

[Chapter 221: Danxia Temple \(40\)](#)

[Chapter 222: Danxia Temple \(41\)](#)

[Chapter 223: Danxia Temple \(42\)](#)

[Chapter 224: Danxia Temple \(43\)](#)

[Chapter 225: Danxia Temple \(44\)](#)

[Chapter 226: Danxia Temple \(45\)](#)

[Chapter 227: Danxia Temple \(46\)](#)

[Chapter 228: Danxia Temple \(47\)](#)

[Chapter 229: Danxia Temple \(48\)](#)

[Chapter 230: Danxia Temple \(49\)](#)

[Chapter 231: Danxia Temple \(50\)](#)

[Chapter 232: Danxia Temple \(51\)](#)

[Chapter 233: Danxia Temple \(52\)](#)
[Chapter 234: Danxia Temple \(53\)](#)
[Chapter 235: Danxia Temple \(54\)](#)
[Chapter 236: Danxia Temple \(55\)](#)
[Chapter 237: Danxia Temple \(56\)](#)
[Chapter 238: Danxia Temple \(57\)](#)
[Chapter 239: Danxia Temple \(Finale\)](#)
[Chapter 240: Severed Arm](#)
[Chapter 241: Immortality Everlasting](#)
[Chapter 242: Foundation Establishment Descends](#)
[Chapter 243: Final Resolution \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 244: Final Resolution \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 245: Final Resolution \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 246: Leaving the Temple](#)
[Chapter 247: Survivors](#)
[Chapter 248: Danxias Aftermath](#)
[Chapter 249: Branch Master](#)
[Chapter 250: Test](#)
[Chapter 251: Treasures](#)
[Chapter 252: Mountain-Protector Grand Array](#)
[Chapter 253: The Cultivation Worlds Shock](#)
[Chapter 254: The Passion of Exploration](#)
[Chapter 255: White Tiger Linghu](#)
[Chapter 256: The Ketu-Rahu Sword \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 257: The Ketu-Rahu Sword \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 258: The Ketu-Rahu Sword \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 259: The Ketu-Rahu Sword \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 260: The Ketu-Rahu Sword \(4\)](#)
[Chapter 261: Doraemon](#)
[Chapter 262: Assassination and Warning](#)
[Chapter 263: The Nalan Clan](#)
[Chapter 264: Heavenly Paradise](#)
[Chapter 265: Determination](#)
[Chapter 266: Godseal Spark](#)
[Chapter 267: Coincidence?](#)
[Chapter 268: The Body as an Artifact \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 269: The Body as an Artifact \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 270: The Body as an Artifact \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 271: The Body as an Artifact \(3\)](#)

[Chapter 272: The Body as an Artifact \(4\)](#)

[Chapter 273: Project Completion](#)

[Chapter 274: Swoosh](#)